

萬大編

STANDARD  
ENGLISH CLASSICS

# 林肯傳

華英對照 詳細註釋



上海三民圖書公司印行

民國29年5月  
三民圖書公司

華英對照

詳細註釋

書目 16 冊(5)  
春江書局

# 標準英文文學讀本

## Standard English Classics

莎氏樂府本事 Tales From Shakespeare	平裝本 2.00 普及本 2.50 精裝本 3.20	泰西五十軼事 Fifty Famous Stories Retold	平裝本 0.80 普及本 1.30 精裝本 2.00 註釋本 0.70
天方夜譚 Arabian Nights	平裝本 1.00 普及本 1.60 精裝本 2.50	泰西三十軼事 Thirty More Famous Stories Retold	平裝本 1.00 普及本 1.50 精裝本 2.20 註釋本 0.85
魯濱孫飄流記 The Life and Adventures of Robinson Crusoe	平裝本 1.80 普及本 2.40 精裝本 3.00	伊索寓言(全集) Æsop's Fables	平裝本 0.80 普及本 1.30 精裝本 2.00 註釋本 0.50
伊爾文見聞雜記 W. Irving: Sketch Book	平裝本 1.20 普及本 1.60 精裝本 2.50	金河王 The King of the Golden River	平裝本 0.30 普及本 0.80 精裝本 1.00 註釋本 0.40
海外軒渠錄 J. Swift: Gulivers Travels	平裝本 1.00 普及本 1.60 精裝本 2.50	英文古文選止 The Best English And American Essays	平裝本 1.50 普及本 2.00 精裝本 2.50
古史鉤奇錄 N. Hawthoane: A Wender Book	平裝本 1.20 普及本 1.60 精裝本 2.50 註釋本 0.80	高中英文名人文選 Selected English and American Essays	平裝本 1.50 普及本 2.00 精裝本 2.50 註釋本 1.20
金銀島 R. L. Setevenson: Treasure Island	平裝本 1.60 普及本 2.40 精裝本 3.00 註釋本 1.00	約翰生行述 Macaulay: Samuel Johnson	平裝本 0.40 普及本 0.85 註釋本 0.45
阿狄生文報摺華 The Sir Roger De Coverley Papers	平裝本 1.00 普及本 1.60 精裝本 2.50 註釋本 0.80	威克麥牧師傳 O. Goldsmith: Vicar of Wakefield	平裝本 1.40 普及本 2.00 精裝本 2.50 註釋本 0.80
鐘城記 Charles Dickens: A Tale of Two Cities	平裝本 3.20 普及本 3.80 精裝本 4.20 註釋本 1.60	撒克遜劫後英雄傳 Sir Walter Scott: Ivanhoe	平裝本 3.20 普及本 3.80 精裝本 4.20 註釋本 1.60
中國故事一百篇 One Hundred Chinese Stories Retold	平裝本 0.80 普及本 1.30 精裝本 2.00 註釋本 0.60	仁愛的教育 Edmondo De Amicis: Heart	平裝本 2.50 普及本 3.20 精裝本 3.80 註釋本 1.20
茵夢湖 Theodor W. Storm: IMMENSEE	平裝本 0.35 普及本 0.80 精裝本 1.00	林肯傳 James Baldwin: Abraham Lincoln	平裝本 1.00 普及本 2.00 精裝本 3.00 註釋本 1.00
白雪公主 Walt Disney: Snow White	平裝本 0.30 普及本 0.80 精裝本 1.00		

萬大學

原 文

林 肯 傳

附 譯 文 註 釋

ABRAHAM LINCOLN

By

Baldwin James

With Chinese Notes And Translations

By

J. R. Shyu

PUBLISHED BY

SAN MIN BOOK COMPANY

SHANGHAI

## 華英對照的意義

——寫給教師學生及自修者——

英語讀本爲什麼要‘華英對照’之後，又加‘詳細註譯’呢？這在最初，曾經有許多人發生一種誤解，以爲這是看透了一般懶惰學生怕翻字典的心理，借此迎合他們，使他們踴躍爭購，那末出版人便可利市百倍；所以認爲純粹是屬於‘生意眼’性質。可是幾年以來，事實終於戰勝了雄辨。不僅每一家發行教科書的大書店，都陸續出版了許多種‘華英對照’的英語讀本，而據各學校英文教師的統計，自從改用此種讀本以後，學生對於英文這種外國語的興趣，便增加了許多，進步也快了幾倍；所謂不翻字典的流弊，只有極少數頑劣的學生。——並且在以前他們原來就是這樣的。

本公司發行‘華英對照’英語讀本，亦已十數年于茲，承學界紛紛採用，殊以爲幸；但在同人等的私意，卻也存着若干苦心，可以給教師學生以及自修的人說一說：

第一，我們認爲僅僅識了許多生字，而不知道每個生字的用法，和中英文語句構造的不同，還是無用的；但要同時達到這三種目的，那末僅僅在讀本上用背讀或默寫的功夫仍嫌不夠，同時必須致力於翻譯的學習，才可以收效。因此，我們就愈覺華英對照的值得提倡。

第二，講到翻譯，真是談何容易！普通都分爲‘直譯’和‘意

譯’兩種，然而直譯則譯文易趨‘英語’化，意譯又易失卻本意，實在都不合翻譯的理想標準；最合理的譯法，必須與原意完全不背，而譯文又全像中國人所寫的中文，才可以算得是上乘。

例如下面這一句英文：

But the idiot found that he did not have such a large sum of money in his pocket.

如其每個字直譯，可以譯成：

‘可是這個呆子發覺他並沒有這麼大數目的錢在他的衣袋裏’

而用意譯法則可譯為：

‘可是這呆子伸手往袋裏一摸，才知道自己沒有這麼許多的錢。’

直譯法所譯的句子，既覺太長，又完全不像是中國的筆法；意譯法所譯成的句子，雖然跟原意並無十分差別，但終覺有些‘加油加醬。’所以最好還是這樣譯：

‘可是這呆子卻發覺自己的衣袋裏沒有這麼多的錢。’

第三，中英文的語氣也很有許多不同的地方，譬如很簡單的一句“My young friend”或是“My son”英國人往往這樣說，這樣寫，可是中國人就不是這樣了。路上看見了一個孩子，總是只叫他‘小朋友，’從來不說‘我的小朋友；’對於兒子，大家多叫名字，（只有京戲裏有‘我兒’的叫法）如其有人稱他的兒子為‘我的兒子，’就不免教人聽了好笑。諸如此類很多，全在多，多比較！

第四，英文和中文的構造不同之處甚多，實在不祇次序上的顛倒而已。譬如英文中用 Who, what, which, where 等代

名詞的地方很多，這在中文裏，就很少見；而且 Who, what, which 等之後，往往還加上一長段形容詞，這在翻譯的時候，就絕對不能再用直譯法。

例如：The procession began to move through the streets, which were soon filled with people praising the beauty and the bearing of the slaves.

如其死板板的譯成：

‘這一個行列，就向街道進行上去了，這些街上，就立刻充滿了人民，稱贊這些僕人們的美麗和動作。’

非但文句十分拙劣，而且意義也不明白，所以最好能夠在字句上補充一下，可以比較好些：

‘隊伍便開始在各處街道上經過了，街的兩旁，立刻都擠滿了人，紛紛稱贊着那些僕人的服飾的美麗和動作的齊整。’

**第五**，在華英對照的讀本裏，我們爲着要使讀者溫習生字和自加研摩起見，除非萬不得已，都用直譯法；所以讀過之後，教師最好囑咐學生，重新再抽出一段或兩段來譯成中文，以資比較。

**第六**，有時候，我們譯的華文，和我們在生字上註的解釋也難免有不同之處；這就是告訴讀者說：‘生字’是可以活用的，而它的解釋，也不一定須受字典的拘束。

總之，我們發行‘華英對照’英語讀本的原意，決不是耍省讀者的手脚，而且還要給讀者加些工作出來；所以教師，讀者，和自修者，如其採用這種讀本的話，萬萬不可忽略三事，便是：(一)比較，(二)訂正，(三)複習，那末學業的進步，自可一日千里了！

民國29年5月  
三民書局

華英對照 詳細註釋

書目16期(6)  
春江書局

## 英文基本叢書 Fundamental English Classics

初級英語模範作文讀本.....	0.60
Model English Composition for Junior Middle School	
高級英語模範作文讀本.....	0.70
Model English Composition for Senior Middle School	
英文基本作文法.....	0.80
Fundamental Rules for Writing English	
英文基本作文法問題詳解.....	0.30
The Answers of Fundamental Rules for Writing English	
英文基本造句法.....	0.65
Fundamental Syntax of English	
英文基本圖解法.....	0.25
Fundamental Rules of English Diagram	
模範英語書信讀本.....	0.75
Standard English Letter-Writing	
英語模範會話讀本.....	0.30
Model English Conversational Reader	
英語正音課本.....	0.20
English Phonetics	
英文考試指導.....	0.35
The Guide of English Examination	
袖珍標準英漢新字典.....	平裝本0.50 精裝本1.00
Standard English-Chinese Gem Dictionary	
學生模範漢英字典.....	0.95
A Student's Model Chinese-English Dictionary	
英文三民主義問答一百條.....	0.30
100 Questions & 100 Answers of San Min Chu I	
孫中山革命潮譯註.....	0.30
The true solution of the Chinese Question translation & explained	

# CONTENTS

## 目 次

	Page
PRELUDE (引言).....	2
<b>BOOK THE FIRST—PREPARATION</b>	
(第一卷——準備時期)	
I. A Humble Home (卑陋的家).....	34
II. Boy Life in the Backwoods (林子裏的童年生活).....	46
III. Restless Thomas Lincoln goes to Indiana (不息的湯姆斯林肯到印第安拿).....	60
IV. A Winter in a Half-faced Camp (一個半露的帳幕下的冬天).....	66
V. How the Howed-log House was built (怎樣造成木砍的屋子).....	72
VI. A Great Sorrow (重大的慘傷).....	78
VII. "My Angel Mother" ("我天仙的母親").....	84
VIII. Lonely Days at Pigeon Creek (在披奇盎灣的寂寞日子).....	92
IX. Improved Conditions (較佳的景況).....	96
X. Not much Schooling, and yet a Little (不多的學校教育,但是還有一些).....	106
XI. Conning Books by the Firelight (在火光中誦讀).....	112
XII. Oratory at a Country Court (在鄉村法庭上的演說).....	118
XIII. Lincoln the Boatman (林肯當舟子).....	122
XIV. New Orleans and the Mississippi (紐奧爾連斯和密士失必).....	130



XV.	A Trial of New Fortunes (新命運的嘗試)	138
XVI.	The Winter of the Deep Snow (大雪的冬季) .....	146
XVII.	Running a Village Store (村店經商) ...	154
XVIII.	Up in Black Hawk's Country (上黑好克的家鄉) .....	162
XIX.	Election—but not of Abraham Lincoln (選舉——但不是林肯當選) .....	174
XX.	“Law, Sir, Law!” (“法律,先生,法律”)...	180
XXI.	In the Postal Service (在郵局裏面) .....	184
XXII.	Following the Surveyor's Chain (跟隨測量員的鏈子) .....	190
XXIII.	Entering Politics in Earnest (熱情中踏進政黨之爭) .....	196

### BOOK THE SECOND—PROBATION

(第二卷——見習時期)

I.	A Member of the Legislature (議會議員)	212
II.	Between Vandalia and New Salem (在文台利亞和紐賽綸間) .....	220
III.	Rag Barons vs. Sons of Toil (襤褸貴族對抗勞動子民) .....	222
IV.	An Attorney at Law (律師) .....	230
V.	How Lincoln rode the Circuit (林肯怎樣周歷裁判區內法定巡行路線) .....	238
VI.	A Stirring Campaign (動人的選舉競爭)	246
VII.	Master and Slave (主和奴) .....	254
VIII.	Love and Poverty (愛和貧窮) .....	270
IX.	In Relation to Texas (對得撒斯的關係)	272
X.	National Politics in 1844 (1844年的國家政治) .....	276

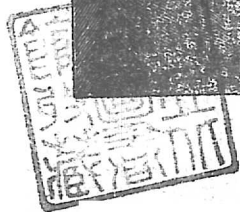
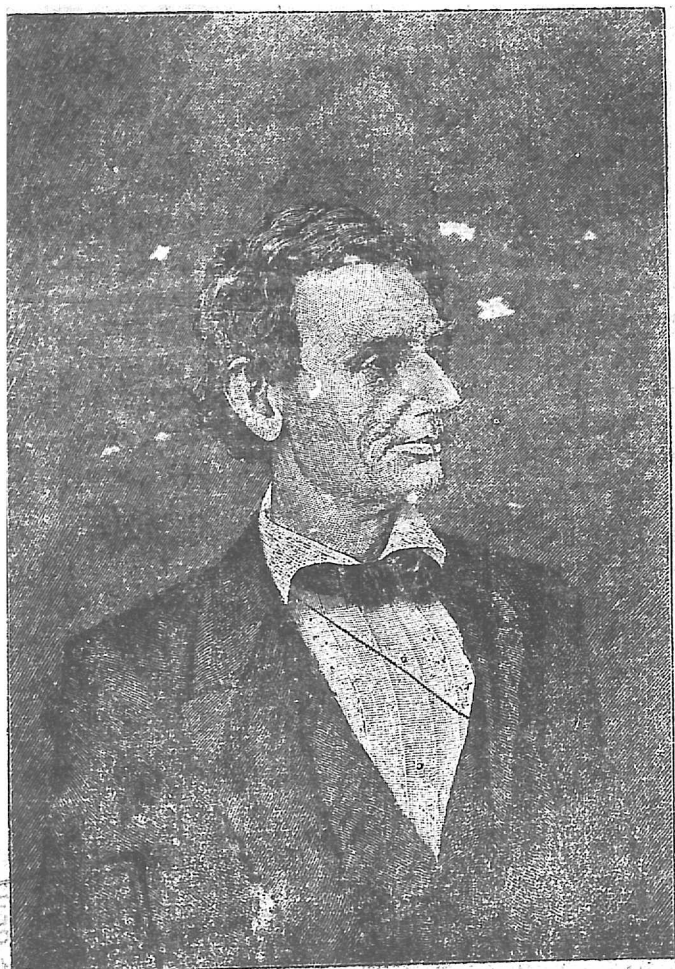
XI. Contention with Mexico (與墨西哥的爭執).....	278
XII. One Term in Congress (在議會中的一時期).....	282
XIII. Lincoln returns to Private Life (林肯回返私生活).....	296
XIV. New Phases of the Slavery Question (蓄奴問題的新現象).....	302
XV. A Bill that proved to be a Firebrand (證明爲煽動者的議案).....	312
XVI. The War in Kansas (在堪薩斯的戰爭) ...	326
XVII. Rule or Ruin (治理或紊亂).....	334
XVIII. Under Buchanan's Administration (在布却能的管理之下).....	342
XIX. Estrangement between North and South (南北二部的分離).....	358
XX. Lincoln and Douglas (林肯和道格拉斯)...	366
XXI. In Friendly Debate (在友誼的辯論中)...	372
XXII. Fanatical John Brown (狂熱的約翰勃朗)	382
XXIII. Eloquence at Cooper Union (古班聯會的雄辯).....	392

### BOOK THE THIRD—PERFORMANCE

(第三卷——成功時期)

I. "Abraham Lincoln, the Rail Candidate" (亞伯拉罕林肯欄樵候選人).....	398
II. Balloting at Chicago (在芝加哥的投票)...	402
III. Revolt at Charleston (卻爾斯登的叛變)...	410
IV. A Gloomy Prospect (昏暗的前途).....	418
V. Heart and Head (胸懷和頭腦).....	428
VI. Abraham Lincoln, President (亞伯拉罕林	

肯大總統).....	432
VII. Men of the Cabinet (內閣的人物).....	438
V.II. Lincoln's First Call to Arms (林肯的第一次下動員令).....	442
IX. In Sight of the Capitol (國會議事廳所見).....	454
X. Never too Busy to help Others (不因幫助別人而過忙).....	460
XI. "Contraband of War" (戰時違禁品).....	470
XII. "One War at a Time" (同時只一個戰事).....	474
XIII. Listening to Advice (諦聽忠告).....	478
XIV. Nearing the Great Issue (將近偉大的佈告).....	488
XV. Antietam and Emancipation (安鐵打和解放).....	492
XVI. The Tide Turns (轉機).....	500
XVII. Renominated (重行推選).....	510
XVIII. Union or Disunion? (團結呢,還是分裂?)	516
XIX. Elected Again (再當選).....	518
XX. "Let us strive on to finish the Work" (讓我們努力完成工作).....	522
XXI. In Richmond (在里却蒙).....	530
XXII. Friday, the Fourteenth of April (星期五,四月十四日).....	536
XXIII. Elegy (輓歌).....	540



## PRELUDE<sup>1</sup>

**T**HE Fourth of July in America is a time of *national rejoicing*<sup>2</sup>. It is also a time of national remembrance. On that day we are *reminded*<sup>3</sup>, in one way or another, that we are Americans, and that we have a country to which we should be *loyal and true*<sup>4</sup>. We are reminded, also, that this is the land of freedom and that it was made so by the *toils and sufferings*<sup>5</sup> of brave and wise men who lived and died *amid scenes*<sup>6</sup> and *circumstances*<sup>7</sup> to which we are strangers. It is fitting that we should think of all these things on the Fourth of July, for that day is the birthday of our nation.

There was once a time, however, when the people living in America could not *boast*<sup>8</sup> that they had a country of their own; for they were ruled by the king and *parliament*<sup>9</sup> of Great Britain who made laws for their government without asking their *consent*<sup>10</sup>. The American *colonists*<sup>11</sup>, as the people were then called, could not say that this was a land of freedom; for they were made to *pay taxes*<sup>12</sup> to the king, and *were denied many of the rights*<sup>13</sup> which free men hold *dear*<sup>14</sup>. Then the 4th of July came and went without more notice than any other day: no flags were raised, no great guns were fired, no glad bells were rung; for the nation had not yet been born.

---

1. 引言 (Pr&P&ud; pr&P&ud); 2. 慶祝; 3. 提醒; —reminder, n.; 4. 忠誠; 5. 辛勞和受苦; 6. 在出事地中; 7. 環境; 8. 誇張, 吹法螺; 9. 議院, 國會; 10. 同意, 許可; 11. 殖民; 12. 納稅; 13. 我拒絕一切權利; 14. 貴重。

## 引 言

在美利堅，七月四日是國慶日，也是紀念日。這一天，我們在各方面被提醒，我們是美利堅國民，同時我們有着一個應當對它矢忠矢誠的國家。我們更被提醒，這裏是一塊自由的樂土，由往昔的聖哲勇烈所艱辛締造，他們這些人生長的環境和埋骨的地土，我們新近移殖到的。這應該教我們懷想七月四日的一切事物，因為這是我們國家誕生的一天。

從前有一個時候，雖然，住在美利堅的人們不能自誇他們有一個自己的國家；因為他們受不列顛的帝王和議會所管轄，這個統治者替人民製造的法律是沒有得到人民的同意的。當初所稱美利堅的殖民，（照當時被稱的）不能承認這是一塊自由的土地；因為他們須要向王帝納稅，而自由的人民引以為重的一切權利卻都被拒絕。到了七月四日這一天，也同平常的日子一樣，沒有引人注意的情形；國徽不昇，鞭炮不響，號鐘不鳴；因為國家還沒有誕生呀；

But at length there came a day when the people would no longer be deprived<sup>1</sup> of their rights. Then certain wise and brave men declared: “The king of England  
 1776 is a *tyrant*<sup>2</sup>, and he is unfit to rule this land. The people shall make their own laws and choose their own rulers, for this is their right. These states, in which we live, are and ought to be free and *independent*<sup>3</sup>.”

The day on which that *declaration*<sup>4</sup> was made was the 4th of July, 1776; and since that time, as the years go by, it is remembered with great rejoicing as the day when the American nation had its beginning. But real independence was not won merely by a declaration. There followed a long war with England—the *war of the Revolution*<sup>5</sup>—which lasted till the British king and parliament were forced to say that the country might be free. In this way the people won the right to be their own rulers and to make their own laws; in this way they gained for themselves and for us the freedom which all men so dearly *prize*<sup>6</sup>.

It must not be thought that when our nation began its life it was rich and great as it now is. It was small and weak. Its *possessions*<sup>7</sup> did not reach from ocean to ocean, as they do now, but only from the *Atlantic coast*<sup>8</sup> to the *Mississippi River*<sup>9</sup>. There were but thirteen states, and they were thinly settled. Nearly all the people lived in that part of the country which is east of the Alleghany Mountains, and the different sections had but little to do with one another. The largest and richest of the states was Virginia, which *claimed*<sup>10</sup> the land westward as far as to the Mississippi.

1. 不再剝奪； 2. 暴君； 3. 獨立； 4. 宣言； 5. 革命戰爭； 6. 人類爭取的自由的物； 7. 領土； 8. 大西洋岸； 9. 密士失必河； 10. 要求，需要。

但是後來有一個日子來臨，人民的權利不再要被剝奪了。於是幾個聖哲和勇烈宣布道：“英吉利王是一個暴君，他不配統治這塊地土。人民應當要制定他們自己的法律，選舉自己的統治者，因為這是他們的權利。這幾個我們住居的州郡，應該自由而獨立的。”

這一個宣言提出的一天，就是一千七百七十六年七月四日；自從那時候起，一年一年過去，人民舉行盛大慶祝，視為美利堅國家肇端的日子。但是真正的獨立並不是一個宣言取得的。接着就是對英格蘭的長期戰爭——革命的戰爭——一直到不列顛的皇帝和議會被迫說出這個國可以自由了。在這樣情形之下，人民取得了統治自己和制定自己的法律的權利；在這種情形之下，他們替自己和替我們爭得了人類重視的自由。

不要以為我們國家一開始就像現在這樣的富饒廣大。它是狹小而柔弱的，它佔有的領域，限於從大西洋沿岸到密士失必河，並不像現在這樣兩邊都以大洋為疆界。州邑只有十三，人口稀疏地散播着，人民差不多都住在愛來梗山一帶的國土上，各地方間很少發生關係。最大而最富的州是喀吉尼亞，地域西以密士失必河為界。



The broad region between the Alleghanies and the Mississippi was, for the most part, an unknown land. It was covered for hundreds of miles by a dense, wild forest, where savage beasts lurked<sup>1</sup> and warlike<sup>2</sup> Indians roamed. There was no way of getting into it except by pushing through the tangled<sup>3</sup> woods, or by floating in small boats down the Ohio River, or by coasting along the shores of the Great Lakes which bordered it on the north. The only roads were the water courses or the winding paths<sup>4</sup> made through the forests and prairies<sup>5</sup> by wild deer and wandering herds of bisons<sup>6</sup>.

Here and there, on the bank of some river, hidden far away in the forest, there was a little fort<sup>7</sup> or a trading post<sup>8</sup>, scarcely known or even heard of by the rest of the world. Now and then, a hunter, after months of roving<sup>9</sup> in these wilds, would go back to his friends in the East, and tell wonderful stories of the fertility<sup>10</sup> and beauty of that Western country. Now and then, some traders would return from the Ohio region with loads of skins and furs and with many a tale of danger and escape in the savage wilderness<sup>11</sup>.

No person could have dreamed that within less than a century, this unknown region would become, as it is to-day, covered with countless farms and dotted<sup>12</sup> with busy towns—the home of millions of happy people. Indeed, there were thoughtful men who said that, for ages to come, there would be plenty of room in the states east of the Alleghany Mountains for all the inhabitants of our country, and that the territory to the west would

---

1. 藏匿； 2. 好鬪； 3. 纏結； 4. 曲徑； 5. 草原； 6. 野牛； 7. 堡壘；  
8. 買賣場所； 9. 漂泊； 10. 育肢； 11. 蠻荒； 12. 點綴。

在愛來梗山脈和密士失必河中間的大部份地土，是沒人知道的地方。數百里間爲一片濃密荒野的森林所蔭蔽，猛獸所潛藏，野人所遨遊，沒有進裏邊去的路，除非披榛莽，或浮小舟下俄亥俄河，或沿北邊的大湖航行。其間僅有的路徑，就是在樹木和草原當中，經野鹿和羣牛踐踏而成的曲徑和水道罷了。

在有幾條河岸上，樹端林隙，微露一二鮮有人知或世上所罕聞的堡壘或買賣場所。間有一二獵者，在原野間作了數月的漫遊，再回到東方來，向朋輩談述，就能舉出西土的情形，描摹它的膏腴和美麗，又或有商人，不時背負了皮革獸毛，從俄亥俄區域回來，也能說出不少在蠻荒異域冒險的故事來。

沒有人能夢想到不過一世紀的時間，這無人過問的區域會變成現在這樣阡陌縱橫，市廛密佈——千百萬愉快的民衆的家庭。當初深謀遠慮的人總想，雖經過相當的時間，在愛來梗山脈以東的州邑，要住着本國大量的人口，而在西邊的領土內，依舊要荒蕪着，而且恐怕永遠如此了。

remain a wild, unsettled hunting ground, perhaps forever.

\*                     \*                     \*

But there were a few men who believed otherwise. They had listened to the stories that were told of the *extent and the hidden wealth of the lands*<sup>1</sup> in the Ohio Valley, and they believed that new states would soon be formed there. A year or more before the declaration of independence two companies of settlers, from Virginia and North Carolina, *established*<sup>2</sup> themselves in the beautiful region south of the Ohio. One, *composed*<sup>3</sup> at first of men alone, built a *stockade*<sup>4</sup> at the place now called Harrodsburg. The other, among which were women and children, was led by the hunter, Daniel Boone, and the *settlement*<sup>5</sup> which he founded was named Boonesborough.

The country in which these *daring pioneers*<sup>6</sup> made their homes was an *uninhabited*<sup>7</sup> land and was known by its Indian name, Kentucky. It was in the very heart of the untraveled wilderness—two hundred miles from the nearest settlement in Virginia. But it was one of the fairest regions in the world. Eastward, back to the *crest of the mountains*<sup>8</sup>, the forest *stretched unbroken*<sup>9</sup>; but westward, there were *grassy openings*<sup>10</sup> between *groves*<sup>11</sup> of woodland, and treeless meadows covered with *rank herbage*<sup>12</sup>. Here were the hunting grounds of the Indians. Herds of bisons, or buffaloes, *grazed*<sup>13</sup> on the wild meadows or roamed among the trees. *Large elks*<sup>14</sup>, with branching horns, *browsed*<sup>15</sup> in

---

1. 廣袤甚大蘊藏極富之地； 2. 建立，開闢，如 to establish a colony 開闢殖民地； 3. 組織； 4. 木柵； 5. 殖民地； 6. 勇敢的開拓者； 7. 無人住； 8. 山頂，(crest 本作冠字解)； 9. 不斷地展開； 10. 綠草的空處； 11. 小農林； 12. 繁茂的牧草； 13. 放牧； 14. 大羆； 15. 食草。

但是有少數人不這麼想。他們聽到俄亥俄流域豐富的寶藏，他們相信不久新的州邑就要在那邊成立起來。在宣佈獨立之前一二年，從味吉尼亞和北卡羅來納去的二隊殖民，在俄亥俄河以南美麗的區域內移殖。有一隊，在先祇由男人組織的，在哈羅斯勃地方樹立木柵，還有一隊，有婦人小孩的，由一個獵者談納爾蓬率領着，建設的殖民地叫做蓬斯包羅。

一羣勇敢的拓荒者移殖的無人跡的地域，叫做墾塔啓，照



着印第安的語言。這是深入至蠻荒的中心，離味吉尼亞殖民地二百英里。但這是世界上最美麗的地域之一。向東，在山巔的後面，林木連綿；但向西，有在森林中間的草地，還有繁茂的草原，這裏是許多印第安人的遊獵地。成羣的野牛啊，水牛啊，在荒野的草原間放

牧，或在樹林中徘徊。巨大的麋，長着分披的角，啣草於林際；

the forest openings; and timid deer *nipped*<sup>1</sup> the herbage in *secluded places*<sup>2</sup> and sought shelter from the sun and rain in the shady woods. And there were other animals less harmless than these—bears in great plenty, packs of wolves, prowling panthers, not a few, and many smaller and more timid beasts. Thousands of squirrels *played unscared*<sup>3</sup> among the branches of the trees; and the forests and meadows seemed alive with birds of every kind.

No Indians had their dwellings there. But the *tribes*<sup>4</sup> beyond the Ohio, as well as those to the east, the south, and the west, sent their brave men there every year. It was common ground for them all—to hunt in, but not to live in—and many and fierce were the battles that were fought when the paths of hostile parties crossed each other.

It was a daring thing for Boone and his friends to settle in that country, for every red man would be their foe. But they had come to stay, and stay they did. They built at Boonesborough a fort of *round logs*<sup>5</sup>; and under its shadow they raised their log *cabins*<sup>6</sup>, one for each family. Then around all they *erected*<sup>7</sup> a *stout*<sup>8</sup> stockade—a high fence made of heavy squared timbers, set *upright*<sup>9</sup> in the ground and very close together. This being done, they felt themselves safe from any attacks the Indians might make; and they began to clear away the forest trees and to make fields and plant corn.

Very soon other people in Virginia and North Carolina heard of their success and *ventured*<sup>10</sup> to follow them. Other settlements were made and other forts were built; and before the war of the Revolution was quite ended many

---

1. 咬; 2. 隱僻處; 3. 不驚恐地跳着; 4. 北美印第安人某重要部落中的人; 5. 四周木頭; 6. 小屋; 7. 豎起, 建造; 8. 堅固; 9. 直立; 10. 冒險。

怯弱的鹿，刈嚼幽僻的草原，從陰涼的樹下找蔭蔽，還有許多比較大量的熊、狼、豹，不很會傷人的動物和其他較小弱的野獸。成千的松鼠在樹枝中不驚地跳着；樹林和草地好像都棲息着各種鳥類。

印第安人沒有住在那邊的。但是遠在俄亥俄河東西南的各部落，每年派遣他們的勇士過去。這是他們公有的地方——狩獵在裏面，但不住在裏面——當敵視的種族相遇的時候，許多可怕的鬥爭就發生了。

蓬和他的伴侶移殖到這種鄉土來是很冒險的事，因為每一個紅人可以做他們的敵人。但是他們竟住下來了。他們在蓬斯包羅築起四周木頭的堡壘；在堡壘掩護下面，蓋造他們的木屋，每一個家族住一所。在木屋的周圍又豎起堅固的木柵——高高的圍牆，用笨重方形的木頭造成的，一根根直立在地上，密切地連着。這個工作做成以後，他們覺得對於印第安人的攻擊是安全了；於是開始斬伐樹木，開闢阡陌，種植五穀。

不久在味吉尼亞和北卡羅來納的人民聽到了他們的成功，也就冒險跟着來了。另外的殖民地成立，堡壘又建築起來了；在革命戰爭尚未完全停止以前，許多人的眼光轉向

eyes were turned toward Kentucky as the new land of promise in the far, far West. But it was like a fair island in the midst of a dangerous sea. The way to it was *laced with perils*<sup>1</sup>; and *notwithstanding*<sup>2</sup> all the beauty and the richness of its land, it had little to promise its settlers but labor and *privation*<sup>3</sup>. And so the most of those who ventured to go *thither*<sup>4</sup> in search of homes were men careless of danger and used to all kinds of hardship.

\* \* \*

At about this time there was living in Virginia a farmer whose name was Abraham Lincoln. He was a friend of Daniel Boone's, and had heard often of the wonderful country in the heart of the Western woods. He longed to go there himself, for he was something of a hunter as well as farmer; and Boone had sent him *glowing accounts*<sup>5</sup> of the *abundance of game*<sup>6</sup> and the richness of the soil. The state of Virginia, to which Kentucky then belonged, was selling land in the new *territory*<sup>7</sup> very cheap. There would never be a better time to buy.

And so, while the *great war for independence*<sup>8</sup> was still going on, he sold his farm in Virginia and went to Kentucky to look for a new home. On Floyd's Fork, near  
 1780 where the city of Louisville now stands, he bought four hundred *acres*<sup>9</sup> of rich bottom land. In another place he bought eight hundred acres of woodland, and in another five hundred. Then he returned to Virginia for his family.

The next year, with his wife and children, he was safely settled on the land near Floyd's Fork, and was clearing a farm in the midst of the woods.

---

1. 危險環繞着； 2. 雖然； 3. 艱苦； 4. 彼處； 5. 熱烈記述； 6. 獵得物； 7. 領土； 8. 獨立戰爭； 9. 英畝。

聖塔啓來，稱許它是遠西的新土。但是它是像驚險的海洋中的寶島，去路都被險阻環繞着；雖然有豐富和優美的寶藏，但是給與殖民的不多，祇有工作和艱苦纔能獲得，而大多數到那邊去尋家宅的人都是肯冒險能吃苦的人。

在這個時候，在味吉尼亞住着一個農夫，他的名字叫做亞伯拉罕林肯。他是談納爾蓬的一個朋友，所以常聽到西部森林中奇異的鄉土情形。他希望到那邊去，因為他自己是一個農夫，也是一個獵人；而蓬曾寄給他那邊土壤肥沃和野獸衆多的熱烈的記述。味吉尼亞州，當時所屬的聖塔啓，當時正在出賣新領士的地皮，價錢很賤。買地沒有比較再好的機會了。

於是，正在獨立戰爭依舊進行的當兒，林肯就賣去了他的在味吉尼亞的農場，到聖塔啓去尋找新家庭去。在福羅愛特的叉路上，現在的路易斯維爾城地方，他買了四百畝肥沃的低田，在另一個地方，他買了八百畝樹林，此外他又買了五百畝。於是他重新回到味吉尼亞接家眷去。

次年，他帶了妻子，平安地在福羅愛特叉路附近住着，在樹林中開闢了一個農場。



The Indians had begun to be troublesome, and were very dangerous. They were angry because their hunting grounds had been *invaded*<sup>1</sup>, and because the wild game was being driven away. They had made up their minds to drive the white people out of Kentucky. And so, as a matter of *precaution*<sup>2</sup>, Mr. Lincoln built his cabin within half a mile of a fort—Fort Beargrass, near the falls of the Ohio River. He did not believe that the Indians would dare to trouble him there.

\* \* \*

Thus three years passed. In the meanwhile, peace had been made with England, and it had been agreed that the Mississippi River should be the western *boundary*<sup>3</sup> of the United States. Great numbers of people began at once to cross the Alleghany Mountains to seek new fortunes in the fertile valley of the Ohio. Several settlements were made in the Kentucky country. Men were busy cutting down the trees, making roads through the woods, clearing farms, building for themselves homes in the new land. Soon there were more than six hundred people in the town of Louisville; and other towns had *sprung up*<sup>4</sup>, as if by magic, in places where lately the buffalo and the deer had roamed unharmed.

\* \* \*

One morning in summer, Farmer Lincoln went out into a cornfield near his cabin to do some work. His little son Thomas, who was only six years old, went with him. The two big boys, Mordecai and Josiah, were burning logs in a other field close by. There were still so many dead trees and *blackened stumps*<sup>5</sup> in the *clearing*<sup>6</sup> that the corn

---

1. 侵略; 2. 預防; 3. 疆界; 4. 變起, 發生; 5. 污黑的殘幹樹樁; 6. 開拓地。

印第安人開始作梗了，情形很危險。因為他們的狩獵地被白種人侵入，野獸被趕跑了，他們就很忿怒。他們決心把白種人逐出壘塔啓。因此爲防患於未然起見，林肯先生把他的木屋築在靠近俄亥俄河的佩愛格拉斯堡壘半英里以內。他不信印第安人敢在那邊搗亂他。

這樣三年過去了。正這個時候同英國成立和約，雙方同意，以密士失必河爲美利堅聯邦西邊的疆界。隨着有大量的人民開始越過愛來梗山脈在俄亥俄流域找尋新的富源。幾個殖民地在壘塔啓鄉區成立了。男人都忙着斬伐樹木，開闢道路，整治田疇，在新土上建築起他們的家庭來了。立刻有六百多個人住在路易斯維爾鎮上；另外有好幾個市鎮兀立着，像施了魔術一樣，在從前水牛和麋鹿徘徊無礙的地方。

一個夏天的早晨，農夫林肯出去到他小屋旁的穀田裏工作，帶着他的六歲的小兒子湯姆斯同去。二個大的孩子，莫特克和喬西爾，正在近旁的田裏燒木頭。還有這麼多的殘枝斷椿在那裏，使穀物在其中少餘地可以生長。

had *scarcely* room<sup>1</sup> to grow among them. On one side there was an open space through which one could see Fort Beargrass and the houses of other settlers nearly a mile away; on the other side were green woods with dense thickets of *briers*<sup>2</sup> and *underbrush*<sup>3</sup> where birds sang and squirrels played and fierce beasts found lurking places.

As the two big boys were busy with their smoking log heaps, they were suddenly alarmed by the sound of a gun. They looked across the clearing. They saw that their father had fallen to the ground. Their little brother was standing over him and *screaming with fright*<sup>4</sup>. A *faint*<sup>5</sup> cloud of smoke was rising from the bushes at the edge of the woods.

"Indians!" cried Josiah; and he was off *with a bound*<sup>6</sup> running like a wild deer toward the fort.

Mordecai ran to the house, calling to little Thomas to follow him. But the child stood by his father's side, crying pitifully and not knowing what to do. A minute later the painted face of an Indian *peered out*<sup>7</sup> from among the bushes. The child screamed louder than before, and turned to run. But the Indian was after him. Little Thomas heard the savage leaping over the fallen trees; he heard his swift feet: he ran very fast, but his *pursuer*<sup>8</sup> ran much faster. At the top of a little hill the child fell. The house was in plain sight, and Mordecai and his mother and sisters were safe inside. Thomas *scrambled*<sup>9</sup> to his feet; but as he did so, the Indian's arm was about him. Then he heard the sharp *crack of a rifle*<sup>10</sup> from the house, and the Indian, letting go of him, *tumbled*<sup>11</sup> to the ground.

The child did not stop to see more, but ran faster than

---

1. 少餘地； 2. 荆棘； 3. 矮叢林； 4. 驚惶叫喊； 5. 模糊； 6. 一跳； 7. 出現，窺視； 8. 追趕者； 9. 爬，匍匐； 10. 來歷鎗響聲； 11. 跌倒。

在一邊，有一塊空地可以望見一英里外的佩愛格拉斯堡壘，和殖民的房屋；另一邊有翠綠的叢林矮樹，小鳥啁啾，松鼠跳躍，猛獸潛跡的地方。

二個大孩子正在忙着薰木堆的時候，忽然聽到一聲鎗響，他們向空地看去。他們的父親倒在地上了。他們的小兄弟站在那裏驚慌地喊着。一片模糊的烟塵在茂林邊上升。

“印第安人，”喬西爾喊着；於是他離開像一頭野鹿般連躡帶跳地向堡壘方面直跑。

莫特克向房屋內跑，喚小湯姆斯跟着他。但是這小孩站在他父親身旁，悲慘地哭着，不知怎麼樣好。一分鐘後印第安人的花臉在叢林中出现。這孩子喊得更響，轉身就跑。但是印第安人跟在他的後邊。小湯姆斯聽見這野人從跳過倒下的樹，他聽見他迅疾的腳步；他跑得很快，但是追逐他的人跑得更快得多，在一個小山巔上孩子跌倒了。房屋已清楚地在眼前，莫特克和他的母親姐姐平安地在裏面。湯姆斯匍匐着；正在這樣，印第安人的胳膊已到他旁邊了。他聽見屋子裏來福鎗尖銳的聲響，印第安人讓他走了，應聲而倒在地下了。

這孩子不再停着去看，但是跑得更快。另一分鐘後他已平

ever. In another minute he was safe inside the cabin and in his mother's arms.

Mordecai was standing guard by the window, with one rifle in his hands and two others leaning near him against the wall. *Now and then*<sup>1</sup> he would take aim and fire; and savage *yells*<sup>2</sup> could be heard from the Indians who were lurking in the edge of the woods. Then quite soon another kind of shout was heard in the clearing, on the farther side of the cabin. Josiah had come with a number of men from the fort.

"They have killed father," said Mordecai, opening the door, "but the fellow who was trying to catch Thomas is lying dead in the field. Let us after them, and not leave one of them alive!"

But the savages were already *skulking*<sup>3</sup> away through the thick woods, and there was no use trying to *overtake*<sup>4</sup> them. "I will have *vengeance*<sup>5</sup> upon them," said Mordecai; and from that time till the end of his life, he was a *bitter foe*<sup>6</sup> to all Indians.

Thus the *pioneer*<sup>7</sup>, Abraham Lincoln, like many another brave settler in the wilderness, found an *untimely*<sup>8</sup> *grave*<sup>9</sup> in the land where he had hopped to make a home for himself and his children.

\* \* \*

After the death of his father, hard times were in store for Thomas Lincoln; but they were perhaps no harder than those that came to other pioneer children in Kentucky. His mother thought it would be better to live in a more thickly settled neighborhood; and so the family soon moved some forty miles southeastward, and settled upon

---

1. 時常; 2. 呼聲; 3. 隱匿; 4. 襲擊; 5. 報仇; 6. 勁敵; 7. 先鋒, 開拓者; 8. 不合宜的, 時機未熟的; 9. 墳墓。

安地在屋子裏他母親的懷抱中了。

莫特克在窗戶旁站立看守着，手裏拿着一支槍，還有二支在他近旁的牆上靠着，時常他要瞄準了放；從潛伏在森林邊際的印第安人那裏還可以聽見蠻子的呼嘯。一會兒又在屋子遠處空場上聽見狂呼的聲音。喬西爾領了堡壘邊的許多人來了。

“他們已經殺了父親”莫特克敞開門說，“但是那要擒捉湯姆斯的那個人死在田地裏面了。讓我們跟上前去，不要留一個生還！”

但是蠻人們早已穿過茂林叢莽中遠颺了，追襲他們是無用的。“我要向他們報仇雪恨”。莫特克說着；自從這時候起他終身就是一切印第安人的勁敵了。

這樣開拓邊陲的先鋒亞伯拉罕林肯就像其他的勇敢的蠻荒墾殖者一樣，在熱望爲他的妻子建設新家庭的土地上爲埋骨之所了。

\* \* \*

他的父親死後，湯姆斯林肯的艱苦日子來了，但是墾塔啓移民的孩子也都是苦的。他的母親想還是在人口稠密的鄰近區域內住好些；這樣這個家族立即搬到向東南十四英里，他們的父親所有的土地上去了。

a *large tract of land*<sup>1</sup> which their father had owned there.

It was the law in Kentucky that when a man died, his eldest son should be heir to his whole *estate*<sup>2</sup>. And so, when Mordecai Lincoln grew to be of age, he became the owner of all the property; and Josiah and the two sisters and young Thomas were left without anything. But Josiah was *steady and industrious*<sup>3</sup> and found plenty of work, so that he was soon *well-to-do*<sup>4</sup> in the world; the girls were already married and settled in homes of their own; and the only one who really felt the *pinch of poverty*<sup>5</sup> was little Thomas.

He was allowed to grow up in a careless way, without much knowledge of the world in which he lived. There were no schools near his home, and so he never learned to read. He became very *skillful*<sup>6</sup> in using a gun, and liked much better to be hunting in the woods than doing any kind of useful work at home. He was kind-hearted and gentle, *slow to anger*<sup>7</sup>, and a *pleasant companion*<sup>8</sup>. He was strong and brave, also, and no one dared *impose*<sup>9</sup> too far upon his good nature.

\*                     \*                     \*

While Thomas Lincoln was thus growing up, *unheard-of and unknown*<sup>10</sup>, many great things were being done in the world of which he knew so little. From the states on the east side of the mountains settlers were still pouring into the new country. They came in wagons over a road which Daniel Boone had marked out years before; they came in boats down the Ohio River. Wealthy families from Virginia came with their *slaves* and their cattle and

---

1. 一帶地方; 2. 遺產, 財產; 3. 堅毅而勤勉; 4. 富裕的; 5. 貧困; 6. 熟練的, 善於; 7. 不易發怒; 8. 和悅的友伴; 9. 欺騙; 10. 無聞和不知名。

當初在聖塔啓的法律，凡男子死後，他全部的遺產應歸妻子繼承。因此莫特克到了法定年齡時，他就做了全部財產的所有者；而喬西爾和他二個姐姐及小湯姆斯沒有得到什麼東西。但是喬西爾堅毅而勤勉，努力工作，因此不久他就成爲富有；二個姑娘嫁後各有室家；於是實在受到貧窮的痛苦，倒是小湯姆斯。

他就在無人經意的環境之下長成起來，對於世事他還是這樣不甚了解，在他家的旁邊沒有什麼學校，因此他沒有上學。他善於使鎗，喜歡行獵於林間，不喜操作家務，他性情仁慈溫良，不易發怒，和悅近人。雄健而壯勇，人不敢犯。

湯姆斯林肯這樣長成起來，默默無聞，雖未熟諳世故，卻成就了若干偉大的事業。移民依舊不斷從山東邊的各州內到新地上來。他們從談納爾達數年前劃出的路線駕了大車過來；也有乘小船往俄亥俄河來的。有錢的人家從咪吉尼亞來，帶了奴隸牲口，舉止豪華，在俄亥俄河流域廣置田產。因此聖塔啓



their fine manners to build up great estates in the Ohio Valley. So many people settled in Kentucky that, when Thomas was fourteen years old, it was separated from Virginia and became a state. It was the 1792 fifteenth state in the Union; for the thirteen which had won independence had been joined by Vermont just the year before.

Many pioneers from the Carolinas made their homes in the country south of Kentucky, and there, in 1796, the sixteenth state, Tennessee, was formed. The great territory north of the Ohio River, which had been *claimed*<sup>1</sup> by Virginia and other states, had finally been *ceded*<sup>2</sup> to the United States, and was being rapidly settled by people from all parts of the East. But it was still the home of powerful tribes of Indians who were not willing to be *deprived*<sup>3</sup> of their lands and who were determined to defend their hunting grounds; and so for many years a cruel war was *waged*<sup>4</sup> between the red men and the white. The *backwoods*<sup>5</sup> settlements were often the *scenes*<sup>6</sup> of terrible deeds. Battles were fought and *treaties were made*<sup>7</sup>, and at last the Indians, knowing themselves beaten, sold their lands and went farther west. In 1802 the easternmost part of the territory north of the Ohio River became a state and was called Ohio. All the rest of that vast region of woodland and prairie was called Indiana Territory.

It is not to be supposed that young Thomas Lincoln, growing up in the backwoods of Kentucky, knew very much about any of these things. I doubt whether at that time he had ever seen a newspaper; and, indeed, of what use would a newspaper have been to one who could not

1. 要求; 2. 讓與; 3. 放棄; 4. 進行; 5. 未開墾地; 6. 出事地; 7. 和約成立。

人烟稠密，在湯姆斯十四歲的時候，已經從味吉尼亞割出去，自成一州，這是美利堅的第十五州；恰在上年，十三州獨立告成，由津滿的合爲一國。

有許多移民從哥羅林那斯來，在墾塔啓南邊建他們的家庭，1796年，第十六個州，田納西又成立了。在俄亥俄河北的廣大領域，被味吉尼亞和他州要求的，後來都讓給聯邦，不久就從東部的移民移殖。但是它還是印第安蠻強部落的家，他們不願放棄他們的領土，決心保衛他們的狩獵地；因此劇烈的戰爭在白人和紅人中進行着。森林地帶做了屠殺場。經過了好幾次戰事，和約成立，最後印第安人知道他們是戰敗了，賣去了他們的土地，向西方去了。1802年，俄亥俄河北極東部的地方成立了俄亥俄州。其餘廣大的森林和草原都叫做印第安領土。

小湯姆斯在墾塔啓的森林地帶內長大，對於世間事物知道的並不多。我懷疑那時候他曾經看過報紙沒有；實在報紙對於不能讀它的人有什麼益處呢？

read? He probably did not know that about the time he was passing his tenth birthday, George Washington *was elected*<sup>1</sup> the first President of the United States. In 1796, when John Adams was chosen to be the second President, the boy was eighteen, and it is likely that he heard some talk concerning the election, but without understanding or caring much about it. But in 1800, when Thomas Jefferson was elected, the young *Kentuckian*<sup>2</sup> was of age and might have *voted*<sup>3</sup>; and yet we must believe that he cared far more for deer hunting in the woods than he did for election day or for *politics*<sup>4</sup>.

In 1803 a great change took place in the boundaries of our country. Until then, as has already been told, the United States reached only to the Mississippi River, and Kentucky was spoken of as being in the far, far West. But in that year President Jefferson bought from France all the country that lies between the great river and the *Rocky Mountains*<sup>5</sup>. Look at a map of the United States, and you will see that more than half of our country lies there. Count the states that have since been formed out of the Louisiana Territory, as it was then called, and they are more than equal to the original thirteen that fought for independence.

At that time, however, all that region was a wild land where few white men had ever dared to go. Just how wide it was; or how long, or where it ended, or what it contained, no one knew. By the purchase of this territory, however, the Mississippi River became all our own, and the people living in the West had now a free *outlet*<sup>6</sup> by water to the *Gulf of Mexico*<sup>7</sup>. They could send whatever

1. 被選; 2. 聖塔啓人; 3. 投票; 4. 政治; 5. 落磯山; 6. 出口; 7. 墨西哥灣。

他在第十個生日的時候，或者還不知道華盛頓被舉為大總統的事情，在 1796 年，約翰阿特斯當選為第二任大總統的時候，這孩子剛十八歲，他能聽到關於選舉的事情，但是不明瞭，也不很注意它。但是到了 1800 年，湯姆斯傑非生當選的時候，他已經到有選舉權的年齡；而我們相信他注意在林中打鹿的事情比較對政治問題更多些。

在 1803 年，國家的疆域有了重大的變遷。那時候聯邦國土祇及於密士失必河，墾塔啓稱為很遠的西方。但是在那一年上傑非生總統從法蘭西買到了落機山和大河密士失必河中間的土地。看一看地圖，你可以見到一半以上的國土位置在那邊。計算計算當初所稱的路易斯安那領土，比較原來爭獨立的十三州要大得多。

但是在當時，那個區域是荒涼寂寞的地方，很少白人敢到那邊去的。究竟有多長，多廣，那裏終了，包容些什麼，沒有人知道它。可是自從買進了這一塊地土，密士失必河全部變成我們自己的了，住在西部的人民現在到墨西哥灣，有了一個自由的水上運道。

they had to sell down the river to New Orleans, and this was of much advantage to them. Within a very few years the Mississippi became the great *highway of trade*<sup>1</sup> between the settlements in the West and the rest of the world. For you must know that there were no *railroads*<sup>2</sup> at that time, nor until many years later. Indeed there were scarcely any roads of any kind; and for the Western settlers to carry grain or goods of whatever sort to or from the states east of the mountains was a thing so difficult and costly that it was hardly to be thought of.

\* \* \*

Thomas Lincoln was now twenty-five years old. Since early boyhood he had been *obliged*<sup>3</sup> to make his own way in the world. *Easy-going*<sup>4</sup> though he was, everybody liked him; and so he was never without a home or something to do. He had been careful of his small *savings*<sup>5</sup>, and was at last able to buy a piece of wild land in Hardin County not far from Elizabethtown.

In Elizabethtown there lived a carpenter whose name was Joseph Hanks. He had known Thomas Lincoln for a long time, and he now asked him to come and live with him and help him at his *trade*<sup>6</sup>. Young Lincoln was known to be very skillful with an ax or a froe, and that was about all the skill that a good carpenter needed in those days. For the building of a house was a very simple matter. The walls were made of round logs, and the roof and floor of boards *split*<sup>7</sup> from a tree. Wooden *pegs*<sup>8</sup> were used instead of *nails*<sup>9</sup>, and often there was not a piece of iron or a *pane*<sup>10</sup> of glass in any part of the house.

---

1. 貿易大道; 2. 鐵路; 3. 強迫, 責成; 4. 從容的, 活潑的; 5. 儲蓄;  
6. 手藝, 行業; 7. 劈, 破裂; 8. 木釘; 9. 鐵釘; 10. 一格玻璃。

他們可以把要賣的東西從河內送到紐奧里斯，這對於他們有很多的利益。不幾年，密士失必河變成西方殖民地和世界各處貿易的通路。你們須要知道那時候沒有鐵路，一直到許多年以後。實在什麼樣的道路都很缺乏；西部的人民要載運糧食或貨物來往山脈以東困難萬分，運費異常昂貴。

\*     \*     \*

湯姆斯林肯現在二十五歲了。早年時他就不得不自己為生活在世上努力，他很是從容瀟灑，人都喜歡他；所以他總不致于沒有工作做，也不致于沒有家住。他儲蓄了一些小的款子，後來能夠在離依立才勃斯鎮不遠的哈定鎮內買了一塊荒地。

在依立才勃斯鎮上住着一個木匠，他的名字叫做傑索夫赫克斯他曾經認識湯姆斯林肯，他現在就來請他住在一起幫他做手藝。小林肯善用斧鑿，這正是那時候一個能幹的木匠所需要的技能。因為房屋的建築是很簡單的事情。圍牆是用圓形的木頭造成的，屋頂和地板都是從樹上鋸下來的。木釘用來代替鐵釘子，往往房屋的任何部分沒有一塊鐵和一片玻璃。

Being always careful to do his work well, Thomas Lincoln soon became known as a *first-rate*<sup>1</sup> carpenter. But *the habits of his boyhood still clung*<sup>2</sup> to him. He was contented with earning simply his food and clothing; he loved his *rifle*<sup>3</sup> better than his ax; and he would rather hunt deer than build houses.

It was while living thus in Elizabethtown that he first met Nancy Hanks, the niece of his employer. She was a fair and *delicate*<sup>4</sup> girl; but like young Lincoln she had been used to *hardships*<sup>5</sup> all her life. Her parents had been neighbors and friends of old Abraham Lincoln years before, when all lived in Virginia. They had also been friends of Daniel Boone and had been drawn to Kentucky by the glowing accounts that were given of the richness of its soil and the plentifulness of everything necessary to support li.e.

There were few girls in that neighborhood who were the equals of Nancy Hanks. She could read and write, and they could not. She had learned that somewhere outside of the Western country there was a great, busy world where people lived and thought in ways quite different from those of the *folk*<sup>6</sup> whom she knew; and she had a *vague longing*<sup>7</sup> for something better in life than what the rude settlements in the backwoods could ever give her. But her companions were content with the little world which they could see around them, and did not feel the hardships which were a part of their lives.

In the midst of *rudeness*<sup>8</sup> and *coarseness*<sup>9</sup>, Nancy Hanks was always gentle and *refined*<sup>10</sup>. We cannot wonder that when Thomas Lincoln came to live in the same town with

---

1. 上等的; 2. 不改童年習性; 3. 來福鎗; 4. 文雅; 5. 艱苦; 6. 民族; 7. 漠然的渴望; 8. 粗獷的; 9. 鄙俗的; 10. 變為文雅。

因為湯姆斯林肯很用心他的工作，他不久就成爲一個最優等的木匠，但是他還是少年時脾氣。他滿意於簡單的衣食；他喜歡他的來福鎗在他的斧頭之上；他寧願去打鹿，較勝於造房子。

這樣在依立才勃斯鎮住着，他第一次遇到他雇主的姪女，南賽赫克斯。她是一個秀美的姑娘；但是也像林肯一樣，她一生過着勞苦的生活。她的父母曾經是多年前老林肯的鄰居和朋友，當她們都住在味吉尼亞的時候。他們也都是談納爾蓬的朋友，都被土地膏腴和生活必需品豐富的熱烈的講述所吸引，而到壘塔啓來的。

在左近很少的女子能比得上南賽赫克斯的。她會讀書，會寫作，她們都不會。他知道在西方以外的地域有廣大繁忙的世界，那邊的人類思想與她所認識的人類的思想大相逕庭；她有一個漠然的渴望，得到一種比較在森林內粗陋的殖民地更好的生活。但是她的伴侶都以周圍的環境爲滿足，而對於他們生活一部份的勞苦力作不知不覺的。

在粗獷愚陋的人們中間，南賽赫克斯獨溫柔秀雅。無怪林肯一來同她住在一個鎮上，就傾心於她了。我們相信後來她



her, *he lost his heart*<sup>1</sup>. And we must believe that when she at last promised to be his wife, she had been won by his kindly nature and his *jovial*<sup>2</sup> manners rather than by any energy of character which he possessed.

It was in June, 1806, that the *wedding took place*<sup>3</sup>. The *bride*<sup>4</sup> was twenty-three years old, and the *groom*<sup>5</sup> was five years older. For a year and more they lived in Elizabethtown, and Thomas Lincoln went hunting often and *tinkered*<sup>6</sup> occasionally at his trade, thus contriving to find food for both himself and his wife. There were not many houses to be built, and there were other carpenters more energetic than he; and so there was but little work to be done, and no *prospect*<sup>7</sup> of more.

A little daughter was born to the young couple; and then it was decided to move out to the land which Thomas owned on Nolin Creek; for game was still plentiful in the woods, and corn could be raised in the clearings, and life would be easier in a home which they could call their own.

\* \* \*

And now while Thomas Lincoln is building his cabin, and before we begin the story of the great man who was born there, let us take a brief view of the condition of our country at that time.

Thirty-two years have passed since that 4th of July when independence was declared. Great changes have taken place, some of which we already know.

The country is no longer bounded on the west by the Mississippi River, but reaches all the way to the Rocky Mountains. Yet it does not include Florida or Texas, or New Mexico, or California: for these are

---

1. 傾心; 2. 愉快; 3. 舉行婚禮; 4. 新娘; 5. 新郎; 6. 修補; 7. 期望。

允以婚嫁，是爲他的溫厚的性情和愉快的態度所戰勝，在他的能力和性格之上。

在 1806 年六月，他們的婚禮成立了。新娘二十三歲，新郎比她大五歲。他們住在依立才勃斯鎮年餘，林肯仍常常行獵，間或從事舊業，以謀二人生計。沒有許多房屋要蓋造的，而別的木匠又比他會做；因此沒有多少工作可做的，前途無甚希望。

一個女孩子生下來了；於是決計遷居到湯姆斯自己所有的拿林河口的那塊土地上去；因爲在樹林內野獸依舊很多，五穀又可以在空地上種着，在自己的家裏，生活比較容易得多。

\* \* \*

現在正當湯姆斯林肯蓋造他的小屋，和在我們開始記載這屋子裏出世的偉大人物的生平以前，讓我們一敘那時候我們國勢簡單的現狀。

自從七月四日宣告獨立，到現在，已有三十二年了，很大的變動已經過了，有的我們早已知道過的。國土不限於密士失必河，但已到落機山脈的各處了。可是佛羅里達，得撒，新墨西哥，加利福尼亞還沒有包含在內；因爲這幾處還由西班牙保持

still held by *Spain*<sup>1</sup>. The region between the Alleghanies and the Mississippi is dotted in many places with little settlements; the forests are being rapidly cut away to give place to fields and *orchards*<sup>2</sup> and roads. Instead of thirteen states, there are seventeen; and three of these lie west of the mountains.

The Indians still live in the territory north of the Ohio; but they have sold a large part of their land and many of them have moved across the Mississippi; they are still feared in the Northwest, but in Kentucky they are no longer the *dreaded foes*<sup>3</sup> that they once were. James Madison has been elected the fourth President of the United States, and on the 4th of March, 1809, he will *take his seat*<sup>4</sup>. In the Eastern states men are *excited*<sup>5</sup> and troubled, for they fear that another war with England is at hand. But in the West, people hear little news of what is going on; and they are so busy, clearing the woods and *fencing*<sup>6</sup> their farms and building homes that they have little time to think about other matters.

---

1. 西班牙; 2. 果園; 3. 可怕的敵人; 4. 就職; 5. 激動; 6. 圍以籬垣或籬笆。

着。在愛來納斯和密士失必中間散佈着許多的小殖民地；森林迅速地斬伐掉改做田地，果園和道路。十三州代爲十七；其中三州位置在山脈的西部。

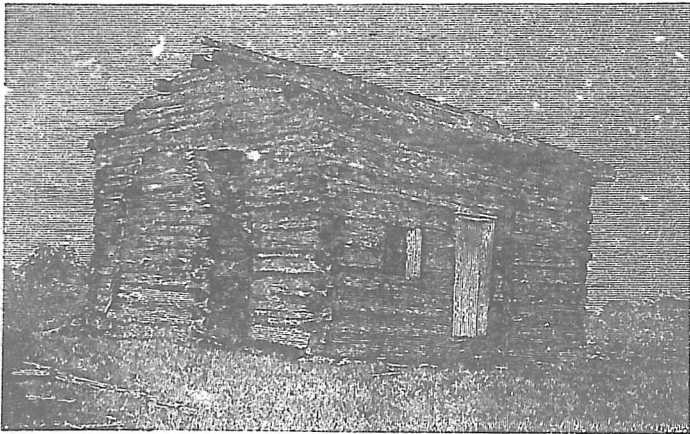
印第安人依舊住在俄亥俄北面的領土上；但是他們已經出賣了大部分的土地，多數人越過密士失必河遷移在西北邊，他們依舊是令人害怕的，但是在聖塔啓他們已經不再是可怕的敌人了。詹姆士曼狄生當選爲大總統，1809年三月四日要就職了。在東方各州的人民擔心二次對英格蘭戰爭就要降臨。但在西方，人民對於目前進行的新聞知道得很少的；他們光忙着砍伐樹木，藩籬田地，建築家室，所以沒有工夫留意別的事情了。

# ABRAHAM LINCOLN

## BOOK THE FIRST—PREPARATION

### I. A HUMBLE HOME

**N**EARLY a hundred years ago in what was then Har-  
din Country, Kentucky, a child was born who was



*destined to become*<sup>1</sup> *one of the greatest of men*<sup>2</sup>. The day was the 12th of February; the year was One **1809** Thousand Eight Hundred Nine. The parents of the child were very poor, and the house in which they lived was poorer than any you have ever seen. *Humble*<sup>3</sup> and unknown, they little dreamed that through the birth of that child they would be remembered and honored by

1. 注定； 2. 最偉大人物之一； 3. 矮小的，卑賤的，謙遜的。

# 林 肯 傳

## 第一卷——準備時期

### 一 卑陋的家

近百年前，在哈定縣，壘塔啓州，一個注定為最偉大人物的小孩出世了。這是二月十二日，一千八百零九年，孩子的父母是很貧窮的，而他們這所屋子比較你會見過的任何一所卑陋。以這樣卑賤而沒人知道，他們做夢也想不到因為生了這個孩子，自今以後就會受萬世億兆人所崇仰而牢記。

millions of people and for *unnumbered*<sup>1</sup> years *thereafter*<sup>2</sup>.

“What shall we name this baby boy of ours?” asked the gentle mother.

“Let us call him Abraham,” said the father. “The Lincoln family has always had an Abraham in it.”

The child was not at all pretty, but he was strong and grew fast. The poor log cabin where he first saw the light was not an unpleasant place to him. True, it was dark and cold, doorless and floorless, and the *chilling*<sup>3</sup> wind *whistled*<sup>4</sup> through the *crevices in the rough walls*<sup>5</sup>; but, safe from harm, the child lay in his mother's arms and was as happy as any little prince could be in the *marble chambers*<sup>6</sup> of a king's palace.

When the boy became old enough to walk and run, he spent much of the time playing with his sister Sarah, who was two years older than himself. The children had no toys,—they did not know what toys were,—but they were happy without them. On warm, fair days they were allowed to run among the trees in the *grove*<sup>7</sup> close by the house; and Abraham learned very early to love the birds, the squirrels, and all the timid, pretty things that make their homes in the woods. Sometimes, clinging to his mother's gown, he would *trudge*<sup>8</sup> with her across the fields to a neighbor's house, or to the *spring*<sup>9</sup> for a *pail of water*<sup>10</sup>, or to the meadow to see her milk the cow. Often of an evening he would run down the woodland path to meet his father coming home with an ax or a gun, or perhaps with a deer on his shoulder.

The child had no shoes for his feet; and his clothing was

---

1. 無量數的； 2. 此後，於是； 3. 寒冷的； 4. 呼嘯； 5. 不平的牆裏的裂縫； 6. 大理石的臥室； 7. 叢林； 8. 跋涉； 9. 泉水； 10. 一提桶水。

“我們替這個嬰孩取個什麼名字？”這溫柔的母親問道：

“讓我們叫他亞伯拉罕罷。林肯的家族裏面總有一個叫做亞伯拉罕的。”

這個孩子生得並不美，但是却很健硬。他第一次睜開眼看見天光的木屋子對於他不算是一個不愜意的地方。它是實在黑暗而冰冷，沒有門和地板，寒風從不平的牆隙呼呼吹入；但是嬰孩安全的在母親懷抱裏，像小王子在王宮內的大理石屋子裏面一樣快樂。

這孩子會走路以後，大部分的時間同他的長兩歲的姊姊沙拉一起嬉戲。這兩個孩子沒有什麼玩具——他們竟不知玩具為何物——可是他們沒有它也一樣快樂。在和暖晴朗的日子他們可以在屋外的叢林中跑；亞伯拉罕很早就知道愛護鳥類，松鼠和一切林子裏面怯弱好看的動物。有時候，依着他母親的外衣步行，穿過田野到鄰家，或汲水於山泉，或在草地上看着她取牛乳。在黃昏時候，他常常跑到樹林的道路上去迎接他的父親帶着斧頭和火槍回家，有時候，還有一隻鹿在肩胛的上面。



*scanty*<sup>1</sup> and poor. His father had no money to buy *flannel*<sup>2</sup> or *calico*<sup>3</sup> or cloth of any kind; and so the little that Abraham had to wear was made by his mother at home. She made him trousers of deerskin, and a shirt and *jacket*<sup>4</sup> of *coarse tow cloth*<sup>5</sup>. He had no hat; but when he grew larger she made him a *coonskin*<sup>6</sup> cap which he wore with the ringed tail of the animal hanging down his back. And he was well pleased with his clothing; for his father was dressed no better, and his little sister hardly as well.

There was only one room in the log cabin. It served as *parlor*<sup>7</sup>, sitting room, bedroom, and kitchen, all at the same time. There was no floor, but only the *bare ground*<sup>8</sup> made very hard and smooth. Sometimes in cold weather the mother would spread a bearskin before the fire for the children to sit upon; and this was the only *carpet*<sup>9</sup> they ever knew. There was no door, but only some rough boards *leaned up*<sup>10</sup> in the doorway at night, or perhaps the bearskin was hung over it to keep out the snow and *sleet*<sup>11</sup>.

There was no ceiling overhead, but only the *smoky joists*<sup>12</sup> and the rough boards of the roof; and on clear nights the children could look up from their bed and see the stars peeping down through the cracks between. There was no glass in the one little window, and no way to close it but by hanging the skin of a deer or some smaller animal before it, thus shutting out not only the cold but the light also.

At one corner of the room there was a rude *bedstead*<sup>13</sup> made of rough poles from the woods. On it was a pile of *furry*<sup>14</sup> skins, and, *for aught I know*<sup>15</sup>, a thin *feather bed*<sup>16</sup>;

---

1. 缺少; 2. 法蘭絨; 3. 印花布 (Calico, 美國作印花布, 英國作白洋布); 4. 短衫; 5. 粗麻布; 6. 浣熊皮, 樹狸皮; 7. 客室; 8. 光地; 9. 地毯; 10. 倚在; 11. 霰; 12. 煙燻黑的閣樑; 13. 牀架; 14. 毛皮製; 15. 就我所知; 16. 羽毛墊褥。

這個孩子足上沒有鞋，他的衣服很缺乏。他父親沒有錢去買法蘭絨和印花布；或是任何種類的布。僅有一點點是他母親在家裏做的。她替他做鹿皮的褲，粗苧蔴的襯衫和短衣，他沒有帽子，後來長大了些，他母親替他製了一頂浣熊皮的便帽，獸尾拖到背後。他對於他的衣着很滿意，因為他的父親並不穿得再好些，他的姊姊也不見得強。

這個小屋裏面祇有一個房間，同時要做客室，休息室，臥房，廚房。下面沒有地板，就是光地，弄得又硬又滑。有時候在冷天母親把一張熊皮舖在爐火前面教小孩子坐在上邊，這就是他們所知道的地毯了。沒有屋門，祇有一塊粗糙的木板夜間斜倚在門口，有時用一張熊皮掛在上面遮蔽雪花和雪珠。

頂上沒有天花板，祇有給烟燻黑的攔柵。和屋頂上蓋的不平的木板；在無雲翳的夜間孩子們可以從牀上看見星光從罅隙中透露出來。小窗戶上沒有玻璃，不能關閉，只挂着鹿和小獸的皮在前面，不獨擋住寒氣，也隔離了陽光。

在一邊屋隅，擺着一張樹林裏面的粗糙的木桿製的牀架，上面放着一疊毛皮，就我所知道的而言，還有一張薄的羽毛墊

and covering all was a *quilt*<sup>1</sup> of rare *patchwork*<sup>2</sup>, made by the mother when she was a light-hearted girl and her name was Nancy Hanks. There were no chairs, but only some rough wooden blocks to sit upon; and the table was merely a broad shelf, made by driving two long pegs into the wall and then laying a smooth board upon them.

At the end of the room farthest from the bed there was a *huge fireplace*<sup>3</sup> made of stones and clay. It was so large that logs as big as a man's body were rolled into it and heaped one upon another for the winter fire; and although these logs would crackle and blaze at a great rate, and the flames would roar in the chimney, and the firelight would fill the room with its brightness, the cabin in winter was often a very cold and comfortless place.

It was by this fireplace that the mother did all her cooking. But she had not many things to cook. For meat there was usually plenty of *venison*<sup>4</sup>. It was boiled in a pot hung over the fire, or sometimes *broiled*<sup>5</sup> on the live coals. The bread was made by mixing corn meal with water or sour milk, so as to form cakes of thick *dough*<sup>6</sup>, which were then covered with the hot ashes in the fireplace. Sometimes the dough was put into a *Dutch oven*<sup>7</sup>, the oven was set upon the *hearth*<sup>8</sup>, and red-hot coals were kept beneath and upon it until the bread was baked. Wheat bread was a *luxury*<sup>9</sup> which only the richest people could afford; the Lincolns scarcely knew how it tasted.

In one corner by the chimney were the dishes, ranged upon a shelf: a few *pewter plates*<sup>10</sup>, a tin cup or two, some treasured pieces of *earthenware*<sup>11</sup>, and a wooden *trencher*<sup>12</sup>—

1. 棉被; 2. 補綴細工; 3. 大爐灶; 4. 鹿肉, 獸肉; 5. 烤; 6. 粉團; 7. 荷蘭式烘鍋; 8. 爐架; 9. 奢侈品; 10. 白燄(鉛錫化合物)碟子; 11. 陶器; 12. 木盤。

褥，蓋在上面的是一條少有的補綴的被，是母親還是一個快樂的女孩兒家而用南仙亨克斯做名字的時候親手縫就的。沒有椅子，祇有幾塊不平的木頭做坐位；桌子只好算是一個寬闊的木架，用兩只長的木樁釘在牆裏面，再在上面舖着一塊光滑的木板做成的。

屋裏離牀最遠的那一端，是一個石頭和黏土做成的大爐灶。大到像人體這麼粗細的木頭都可以放得進去，這種木頭一塊塊推着預備做冬天的燃料；雖然這木頭很快地發生爆聲和火光，火焰在烟突裏怒吼，火光滿屋中照得透亮，這所屋子在冬天還是一個很冷而不舒服的地方。

母親常常靠着這個爐灶治餐，但是他沒有多少東西去煮。日常有許多的鹿肉，放在一個鍋內挂在火上煮透，有時候靠着熾炭烤熟。麵包是用玉蜀黍粉和水或酸牛乳捏成餅團，用熱爐灰蓋着。有時候這團子放進荷蘭式的烘鍋內，烘鍋放在爐架上頭，燒紅的煤放在底下直到麵包烘好為止。麥做的麵包是奢侈品祇有最富的人能夠供給；林肯家庭裏難得嘗到它。

碟子都排列在烟突旁屋角的架子上：幾隻白鐵（鉛錫化合物）的碟子，一二隻錫碗，幾件可貴的陶器和一隻木盤，——

and that was all. In the other corner, resting on two pegs, was the father's rifle; and hanging from one of the pegs were his *powderhorn*<sup>1</sup>, his *bullet pouch*<sup>2</sup>, and his *hunter's belt*<sup>3</sup>. Over the fireplace were some bunches of dried *herbs*<sup>4</sup> to be used for tea in case of sickness; and perhaps also a few simple *trinkets*<sup>5</sup> and *keepsakes*<sup>6</sup> were hung there, as *ornaments*<sup>7</sup> and as *reminders*<sup>8</sup> of absent friends. And on the hearth were ranged the cooking *utensils*<sup>9</sup>—the Dutch oven, a pot or two, and a *skillet*<sup>10</sup> or *frying pan*<sup>11</sup>.

If you had visited that poor cabin, you would hardly have seen more than I have told you about. To you it would have seemed a *wretched*<sup>12</sup> place with none of the comforts of home. But to those who lived in it, it did not seem so; for it was as good a home as many of their neighbors had, and their minds were cheered day by day with the hope that better times were coming. To the children who had never known any other home, little else seemed needed. Here were kind parents, *shelter*<sup>13</sup>, and food, a bed to sleep in, a fire to warm one's self by—and what more could anybody want?

As soon as Abraham Lincoln was old enough to understand, his mother *took great pains*<sup>14</sup> to teach him to be dutiful and true. Taking him upon her *lap*<sup>15</sup>, she would tell him stories which he never forgot of brave and good men, who had lived beautiful lives and done noble deeds. And often in the evenings by the glow of the firelight, while

---

1. 裝火藥的角質器； 2. 子彈袋； 3. 獵人用的皮帶； 4. 草本植物； 5. 飾物； 6. 留別時的贈物； 7. 裝飾品； 8. 紀念品； 9. 器皿； 10. 燒水用的長柄小鍋； 11. 煎炒用的淺鍋； 12. 簡陋； 13. 藏身之處； 14. 費很大的心力，費極大的辛勞； 15. 懷抱。

這就是全部了。在另外一個屋角上，釘着兩隻木釘，父親的來福槍靠在那裏，一隻釘子挂着他的裝火藥的角質器，他的子彈袋，和他的獵人用的皮帶。在爐架上面放着幾紮乾的草本植物預備在病時泡來喝的。還有一些小的飾物和友朋留別時的贈物挂在那裏，做裝飾或別離的朋友的紀念品。在爐火旁邊又排列着廚房用的器皿——荷蘭式的鍋，一二個壺，和長柄小鍋或油煎鍋之類。

假使你們去拜望那個貧窮的木屋之後，你們不容易看到比較我告訴你們的再多的東西了。在你們看起來那是一個簡陋的地方，家庭裏面的舒服一些都沒有。但是對於那些住在裏頭的人，倒也不見得這樣；因為鄰近的人家也都一樣如此，他們的腦子裏天天為未來的希望所鼓勵着。至於孩子們，從來沒有知道過別種人家的樣子，所以很少對其他事物的需要。這裏有和善的父母，屋宇，食物，還有牀給他們睡覺，爐火使他們溫暖——誰會再需要什麼呢？

待亞伯拉罕林肯長得懂事了，他的母親盡了很大的心力教誨他竭誠盡職和誠實不欺。她把他抱在懷裏，講給他聽他終身永遠不會忘記的名人勇士的優美生活和高尚事業的故事。

the children *nestled*<sup>1</sup> at her feet on the warm hearth, she would read to them from a wonderful Book which she kept with great care among her little treasures. The boy could not understand much that he heard; but the sound of his mother's voice pleased him, and he wished that he too could learn to read. And so it was a pleasant task for his mother to teach him the letters of the *alphabet*<sup>2</sup>, and for him to learn how to spell easy words long before he could go to school.

The father, Thomas Lincoln, could not read; he did not even know the alphabet until his wife taught it to him. But he could tell strange, true stories—stories of things that he had seen or heard, or that had happened to himself. He liked best to tell about hunting, and about wild animals, and wild Indians, and about the brave pioneers who had settled Kentucky when all the land was covered with woods.

There was one story in particular which he *related*<sup>3</sup> *over and over*<sup>4</sup> to his delighted listeners: It was about a bold settler who went out one morning to work in his field. The settler's little boy, six years old, was with him, very glad to help his father pull up the *weeds*<sup>5</sup> from among the growing *corn*<sup>6</sup>. All at once, the child was *startled*<sup>7</sup> by hearing the sharp report of a gun. He looked up and saw his father *stagger*<sup>8</sup> and fall to the ground. He saw an Indian *leap*<sup>9</sup> from among some bushes and run toward him. With wild screams he turned and *fled*<sup>10</sup> across the field as fast as his little legs would carry him; but the Indian was soon upon him—had caught him in his rude arms—was carrying him <sup>39</sup>away to the

1. 蛻伏; 2. 字母; 3. 講述; 4. 一再重覆; 5. 雜草; 6. 玉蜀黍, 穀類;  
7. 驚起; 8. 撲蕩; 9. 躍出; 10. 逃。

常常在晚上，小孩們蜷伏在母親的雙足間，圍爐取暖，她拿出什麼珍藏的奇聞軼事的書本來念給他們聽。這小孩對於他所聽到的不能懂得很多，但是他母親的聲音使他覺得快樂，他願意他能夠學着去讀。他的母親又教他認識字母和學習拼那簡單的文字，視為日常快樂的功課，遠在上學校以前。

父親，湯姆斯林肯，不會讀書，也不識字，一直等到他的妻教給他。但是他能講奇異的實在的故事——他曾經看到，聽到，或是親自遇到的。他喜歡講打獵和野獸，野蠻的印第安人的事情，還有關於在土地全部為森林遮蓋的時候，移殖到墾塔啓來的勇敢的拓荒者。

有一件故事他反覆講給愛聽故事的人聽的：這是一個勇敢的殖民，一天早晨到他的田地裏去，這殖民的六歲的孩子同他在一起，很高興去幫助他的父親拔去玉蜀黍旁邊的雜草。一霎那間，這個孩子被一聲尖銳的鎗響所驚起。他看他的父親身子幌蕩而跌到地上。他見一個印第安人從叢林中躍出向他奔去。他轉身大喊，用盡他小腿的力量飛逃；但這印第安人立即追及他——捉住他在粗糙的胳膊裏——把他向林子裏帶去。



woods. Then there was another sharp crack of a gun; the Indian *tumbled*<sup>1</sup> *headlong*<sup>2</sup> in the dust; and the little boy, thus set free, ran *swiftly*<sup>3</sup> to the house and to his mother's safe *embrace*<sup>4</sup>. His brother had saved him by shooting the cruel Indian.

When Thomas Lincoln had finished this story he would look at the children and say: "The poor man whom the savage Indian killed was your own grandfather; his name was the same as yours—Abraham Lincoln; and the little fellow who ran so fast and screamed so loud grew up to be a man—and he is your own father."

And then, as the children crept nearer to him, clinging to his knees, he would tell them that they need not be afraid of Indians, for those savage people had been driven far away, and now very few of them were ever seen in Kentucky.

## II. BOY LIFE IN THE BACKWOODS

When Abraham Lincoln was four years old his father sold his first farm and bought another which was thought to be much better; and so the family moved over **1813** the hills and settled in a new place on the banks of a small stream called Knob Creek. But the cabin which sheltered them was little better than the one they had left, and to the tender mother it never seemed so much like home.

There were three children now; for besides Sarah and Abraham there was a baby brother who was called Thomas, after his father. He was always a *feeble*<sup>5</sup> little

---

1. 跌倒; 2. 頭向前; 3. 敏捷地; 4. 擁抱; 5. 柔弱的。

於是另一聲鎗響，印第安人向前猛跌在灰塵裏；這小孩已得釋放，急急飛跑到他母親的安全的懷抱裏面，他的兄長打倒殘忍的印第安人，救了他的性命。

湯姆斯林肯講完這段故事以後，他看着小孩子們說道：“這個被印第安人打死的可憐的人就是你的祖父，他的名字同你一樣——亞伯拉罕林肯；這個跑得這麼快喊得這麼響的小孩長成一個大人了——他就是你的父親。”

於是，孩子們匍匐到他跟前，抱住他的膝蓋，他就告訴他們現在無須畏懼印第安人了，因為這些野人已經逐走，祇有極少數的可以在壑塔啓見到了。

## 二 林子裏的童年生活

亞伯拉罕林肯四歲的時候，他的父親賣掉了他第一次的田莊，買進另外以為是更好的一處；這樣這個家族就搬到小山的那一邊，在一條叫做諾勃溪的小河岸上。但是這所他們住的小屋比較他們所離開的那一所好得有限，而且這個慈善的母親看來竟不很像一個家庭。

現在有了三個孩子了；因為除了沙拉和亞伯拉罕以外，又添了一個弟弟，他隨着他的父親，也叫做湯姆斯。他總是一個

fellow, and with every care that his mother was able to give him he could gather no strength.

One day, with wondering eyes, the brother and sister saw the baby laid tenderly in a rude box which their father had *nailed*<sup>1</sup> together; and when they had kissed his cold cheeks, a neighbor lifted the box upon his shoulders and carried it out of the cabin; and then with *awed*<sup>2</sup> footsteps, and holding their weeping mother's hand, man and his burden far meadow path, scarcely they went or what



The Knob Creek Home

they followed the down the *winding*<sup>3</sup> knowing whither happened at the end of the journey. The baby never returned to the poor cabin.

After that, so long as the summer lasted, they went daily with their mother to see a little *mound*<sup>4</sup> of fresh earth that had been made under the trees near the path; and on the way they gathered *violets*<sup>5</sup>

and *daisies*<sup>6</sup> and *red clover blossoms*<sup>7</sup> which their mother laid upon the mound and watered with her tears. It was all very strange and sad; and they did not notice at the time

1. 釘牢；2. 懼懼；3. 曲折；4. 小坡；5. 紫羅蘭；6. 雛菊；7. 紅三葉草花。

柔弱的孩子，無論他的母親怎樣的盡力，總不能夠增加他的力量。

有一天，姊弟倆帶着驚奇的眼光看見嬰孩安穩地躺在他們的父親釘好的一只粗糙的木箱裏面；在他們已吻了他冷頰的時候，一個鄰人把這個箱子抗在肩頭上帶到屋子外面去了；於是帶着惴惴的脚步，握着他們流淚的母親的手，他們隨着那人和他的重負一直走上迂曲而長着蔓草的小路，不知走到了那裏，也不知最後遇到了什麼，這個可憐的嬰孩永遠不回家了。

此後，一夏天裏他們天天隨着母親，去看在路旁樹木底下的一個新的土墳；在路上他們採集一些紫羅蘭，雛菊，和紅的三葉草的鮮花，他們的母親把這些東西放在墳上，用眼淚濕潤它。

這是異常奇怪和悲鬱的；他們沒有留意到從他們母親眼

that a light had gone out of their mother's eyes which would nevermore return.

This was the boy's first knowledge of sorrow; but he very soon began to learn much about the hardships and *distresses*<sup>1</sup> that are the *lot*<sup>2</sup> of the poor. His father was in *constant*<sup>3</sup> trouble *concerning*<sup>4</sup> the *ownership*<sup>5</sup> of the land, which he had bought in good faith, but which he now found was *claimed*<sup>6</sup> by other persons; his mother, worn with *anxiety*<sup>7</sup> and care, grieved for her lost baby and could not be comforted; the poor log cabin at Knob Creek had but few comforts and still fewer pleasures to offer its *inmates*<sup>8</sup>.

When Abraham was about five years old, a wandering schoolmaster came into the settlement. His name was Zachariah Riney, and he was a *Catholic*<sup>9</sup>. There **1814** was no schoolhouse; but one of the neighbors offered him the use of an old log cabin if he would open a school in it. The poor people could not pay him much for teaching their children; for none of them had any money. But they agreed to give him what they could—some to give him *board*<sup>10</sup> and *lodging*<sup>11</sup>, some to wash and *mend*<sup>12</sup> his clothing, and some to do him other kinds of service—and so he came to stay a little while among them and teach their children as best he could.

I think this must have been the first school that was ever taught in that neighborhood. Most of the scholars were big boys and girls who had grown up without seeing books. Very few of them could read; and there were young men and young women among them who did not so much as know one letter from another.

---

1. 痛苦; 2. 命運; 3. 時常; 4. 關於; 5. 所有權; 6. 索取; 7. 憂慮;  
8. 家人; 9. 天主教徒; 10. 食物; 11. 住所; 12. 修補。

睛裏發出來的光彩不會再回來了。

這是童年時第一次對於悲觀的智識；但是他就開始認識窮人的艱辛和痛苦的命運了。他的父親時常陷於關於土地所有權的煩惱裏，這地方是他很誠實地買來的，竟有人向他索取。母親爲憂煩憔悴，爲亡過的孩子悲傷，無法寬解；在諾勃溪的窮苦的小屋，實在給與家人很少的慰安和更少的樂趣啊。

亞伯拉罕五歲的時候，一個遊歷的學校教師來到殖民地。他的名字是柴卻禮力尼，他是一個天主教徒。校舍是沒有的，祇有鄰居借給了一所舊的木屋做開學校用。窮苦的民衆不能付給他多少學費；因爲他們都沒有錢。但是他們應允把力所能及的供給他們需要——有人供他膳宿，有人替他洗補衣服，也有人替他服務——這樣他就來住下去盡力教導他們的孩子。

這是鄰近區域的第一個學校。大部分的學生是從來沒有看見過書本的年紀大的男女孩子。祇有極少數人能讀書的；也有青年男女連字母都不很能分得出來的。

To this school Abraham Lincoln and his sister Sarah were sent. It was their mother's doing, for the father did not care for book learning. "I never went to school," he said, "and I guess I've got along just as fairly as other people. If a man know how to *chop*<sup>1</sup> well and shoot straight, he don't need to be a scholar." But Mrs. Lincoln thought otherwise.

Abraham was the youngest of the pupils; and the big boys and girls were surprised to find that he could *ou'spell*<sup>2</sup> them all. For spelling was the only *branch of study*<sup>3</sup> taught at that school. No other book was used but a little blue-backed spelling book with a few reading lessons at the end; and it was thought that if any one should learn all the words in that volume he would be very wise indeed. But it was only for a few weeks that the school could be kept up. The boys and girls were needed at home, and the people could not pay the master to stay longer.

The next year another schoolmaster came. His name was Caleb Hazel, and he opened a school in the same old cabin. The same boys and girls, with some of the younger children in the settlement, were his pupils. The master was thought to be very bright; for he was a good speller, and was strong enough to *whip*<sup>4</sup> the biggest boy in the *district*<sup>5</sup>. But nobody seemed to know what the school was for.

There was nothing to be learned but the letters of the alphabet and long lists of words. The girls were idle and thoughtless; and the boys cared for nothing but to *annoy*<sup>6</sup> the master. Little Abraham Lincoln kept his

---

1. 伐木; 2. 拼法勝人; 3. 學科; 4. 鞭策; 5. 區域; 6. 煩擾。

亞伯拉罕林肯和他的姐姐沙拉就送到這個學校裏上學。這是他們的母親的意思，因為父親是不注意念書的。他常說，‘我從來沒有上過學，我也像別人一樣這麼過着。一個人只要會得好好地伐木和瞄準開鎗，他不需要成一個學者。’但是林肯夫人卻不是這樣想。

亞伯拉罕在學生中是最年輕的一個；而他在學習拼法勝人，竟能震驚年紀大的學生。因為在那學校裏拼法是僅有的學科，除了一本小小的藍封面的拼法讀本，後面有少數幾課讀習以外，就沒有別的書了；倘使那一個學生能夠讀熟了那本書上的全部生字，他就是很聰明了。這個學校祇能夠開了幾個星期，各家庭裏面需要男女孩子們，人們也不能供給老師再教下去了。

第二年另一個教師來了，他的名字是開來勃海才爾，他在原來的老木屋裏面開了一個學校。原來的男女孩子，還有幾個殖民地年輕些的小孩是他的學生。這個老師看來是很漂亮的；因為他是一個擅長拼音者，他又有力量去鞭策那個地方的年紀大的學生，但還是沒有人明白設立學校的目的是為什麼。

除了字母和很長生字表外，沒有什麼讀了。女孩子們是愚魯而沒有思慮；男孩子們除了煩擾教師之外不注意別的。小亞



place at the head of his class, and for that reason was admired by some and disliked by others who were much older than himself.

Within less than three months this school also came to an end; but the boy did not stop learning. Young as he was, study had already become a pleasure to him. The Bible, that wonderful old book which his mother loved, was often in his hands.

In the long winter evenings he would sit on the hearth and read by the *flickering*<sup>1</sup> light of the fire. Sometimes when the flames died down he would gather bits of *spice-wood brush*<sup>2</sup> and throw them, a few at a time, upon the coals so that they might blaze up and serve him as candles. All his studying was aloud, and when he came to a big word which he could not make out, his mother would help him *pronounce*<sup>3</sup> it.

There were no churches in that part of the country. But wandering *preachers*<sup>4</sup> often came and *held meetings*<sup>5</sup>, sometimes in the cabins of friendly settlers, sometimes under the trees in the open air.

At Little Mound, several miles away, there was a cabin where there was *preaching*<sup>6</sup> quite often, and the Lincoln family were *very fond of*<sup>7</sup> going there. Sometimes the meetings would be nearer home, at the house of a neighbor. Sometimes the preacher would visit them in their own cabin, to taste of their venison and corn cake and talk with them on many subjects regarding both this life and the life to come.

Among these preachers there was one for whom the family felt a more than common *friendship*<sup>8</sup>. His name

---

1. 搖動的; 2. 香木柴; 3. 發音; 4. 教士; 5. 集會; 6. 傳教; 7. 極喜; 8. 友誼。

伯拉罕總是名列前茅，爲了這個理由有的學生稱讚他而另外幾個比他大得多的卻不喜歡他。

不到三個月這個學校又停辦了；但是林肯並不停止讀書。他這樣年輕，讀書對於他變成一種嗜好。他母親愛讀的聖經，那本奇異的舊書常常在他的手裏。

在冬天的長夜，他坐在爐架旁邊靠着搖動的火光讀書，火焰熄滅下去的時候，他收集了些香木屑逐漸投到煤火上面使它發光當做蠟燭。他讀得很響，他念到冗長的字讀不出的時候他的母親就幫助他發音。

那部份的鄉區沒有禮拜堂，但是周遊的教士常來召集開會，有時候，在親近的殖民的木屋的裏面，有時候，在露天樹蔭底下。

在小墳旁邊，數英里外，有一所木屋裏面常常有人宣教，林肯的家族很喜歡去，有時候在離家較近的所在集會，在鄰居的家裏。宣教師有時候到他們的木屋裏面拜訪他們，嘗他們的鹿肉和玉蜀黍餅的滋味，并討論現在的和未來的人生問題。

在宣教師中間林肯的家族覺得有一個是超過普通友誼之

was David Elkin, and to him, more than any other, they *confided*<sup>1</sup> the story of their hardships, their griefs, and their hopes. The only way in which he could help them was by giving them his kindly *sympathy*<sup>2</sup>, for he was even poorer than they.

The young lad found much delight in listening to these preachers. He looked upon them as indeed great men; and his hope was that, some day, he himself might be a public speaker like them. Often when he came home from meeting, he would stand up on the hearth and play the preacher while his mother and sister listened to his noisy shouting; and when the neighbors' children came to visit them, he would mount upon a log or a *stump*<sup>3</sup> and make *queer*<sup>4</sup> speeches until they were tired of hearing.

No newspapers were seen in the cabins of the Knob Creek settlers; and it was only through *rumors*<sup>5</sup> and the talk of neighbors that anything was known of the busy world. It was by listening to such talk and by asking questions of his mother that Abraham got his first knowledge of the great country of which he would one day be the ruler. But his thoughts about it were very *crude*<sup>6</sup> and simple.

One day when he was playing by the creek, he caught a little fish in his hands. He was much pleased and hurried to carry it home. But as he was running along the road, he met a man who wore a *faded*<sup>7</sup> blue cap and had *brass buttons*<sup>8</sup> on his coat. He had seen a man dressed in a similar fashion once before, and had been told that he was a soldier. And so he stopped and asked, "Are you a soldier?"

1. 密告, 信託; 2. 同情; 3. 殘幹; 4. 奇異的; 5. 謠言, 傳聞; 6. 粗率; 7. 褪色的; 8. 銅鈕。

上的。他的名字是大衛愛而金，他們對他訴述他們的困苦的故事，他們的悲傷和他們的希望較別人更多。他能夠幫助他們的，就是他的溫和的同情，因為他比他們更窮。

這個年輕的孩子聽這些宣教師講道，得到很大的愉快。他實在當他們做偉大人物；他的希望是將來也可以做一個大衆的演說家像他們一樣。從集會回家他就要站在爐架旁邊裝做宣教師，他的母親和姊姊聽他的高聲呼喊；鄰家的孩子們訪他的時候他就登上木塊或木樁，發出奇異的演說詞直到他們聽得疲倦爲止。

在諾勃溪殖民的木屋內沒有報紙看到；祇從傳聞和鄰家的談論知道一些關於繁忙的世界的事情。從這種談話和問他的母親各種問題裏，亞伯拉罕開始得到他將來有一天要做大國統治者的智識。但是這種見解是極粗率而簡單的。

有一天他在小河旁邊遊玩，他捉到一條小魚在手裏，他歡喜得了不得，急急回家。他正沿着路跑，遇到一個人戴着一頂褪色的藍帽，上衣上扣着銅鈕扣。他從前曾經看見過一次這樣的人，人家告訴他這是兵士。因此他站住問道，“你是不是一個兵士？”

“Yes,” was the answer. “I was with General Jackson, and I fought through the war.”

The boy laid the little fish in the man’s hand, and ran home happier than if he had caught a dozen fishes. His mother had taught him that he should always be kind to soldiers, and so he had given to this one the only thing in the world that he could call his own. Had he been a little older he would have understood much more about the war which had just then been ended. But he was only three years old when it began, and now he was barely six.

The War of 1812, as it is called, was *caused by*<sup>1</sup> England’s *overbearing*<sup>2</sup> acts toward Americans. For months before the beginning of the war, the whole country was in a state of *dread*<sup>3</sup> and distress. The chief fear of the people in the West had been lest the Indians should unite with the English and again *attack*<sup>4</sup> the settlements. But American soldiers under General Harrison had met a large band of Indians at Tippecanoe, in Indiana. A great fight had taken place, in which the red men were so badly beaten that they did not dare to give any more trouble in that region for a long time to come. During the war many battles were fought on sea and land, and the distress of the people increased. Finally, the American soldiers under General Jackson gained a wonderful victory over the English in the famous fight at New Orleans.

It was of these things that Abraham Lincoln had heard much talk which he could not understand. But this at least was clear to him, that it was one’s duty to *stand up*<sup>5</sup> for his country and to be kind to the soldiers who *risked*<sup>6</sup> their lives in its *defense*<sup>7</sup>.

1. 由……而起； 2. 壓迫； 3. 恐怖； 4. 襲擊； 5. 援助； 6. 冒險； 7. 保護。

答覆是“是的，我本來是跟傑克遜將軍的，我打好了仗了。”

亞伯拉罕把小魚放到這個人手裏，回到家去比捉到一打魚都快樂。他的母親曾經教他應該常常對兵士表示好感，所以他把他在世上僅有的私有物給了他。要是他大一些他就要懂得方纔結束的戰爭。但是戰事開始時他只有三歲，現在他還僅僅六歲。

世人所稱的一千八百十二年戰事是英格蘭對美利堅人過分壓迫的事實造成的。在戰事開始的幾個月內，全國處於恐怖悲痛的狀況之下。西部人民主要的恐怖是擔心印第安人聯合英人重新向殖民地進攻。

但是美利堅的軍隊在哈利遜將軍統率之下在印第安拿的鐵潑肯拿地方遇到大隊印第安人。大戰就發生了，紅人大敗，以後就很長的時期不敢在那個區域內為難白人。在戰事中間，好幾次戰事在水上和陸上打起來，而人民悲慘格外增加。最後，美利堅軍隊在傑克遜將軍指揮之下，在有名的紐俄連斯戰役得到了驚人的勝利。

這些是亞伯拉罕常常聽見講說而不懂得。但是至少他明白幫助國家和優待捨身衛國的將士是每一個人民的天職。

### III. RESTLESS THOMAS LINCOLN GOES TO INDIANA

When Abraham Lincoln was seven years old his father sold the land which he had in the Knob Creek settlement. He had never been sure of his *title*<sup>1</sup> to it, for there were other men who claimed to have an earlier and better right to it; and so he was glad to be *rid of*<sup>2</sup> the *worry*<sup>3</sup> of it, although he had to sell it for very little. He was a dreamy, restless man, fond of the freedom of the backwoods, and caring but little for the comforts of *civilized*<sup>4</sup> life. Such men are always found pushing on toward the *frontier*<sup>5</sup> and clearing the way for settlers of a more *enterprising*<sup>6</sup> class.

He had heard that north of the Ohio River, in Indiana, there was a wild and wonderful region, where the soil was rich and *game*<sup>7</sup> was plentiful, and where one might soon have everything he needed, and a free title to his land could not be *disputed*<sup>8</sup>. So he made up his mind to go across the Ohio, and find in that newer country a better

**1816** home for his family than he had yet been able to give them. Indiana was still a thinly settled territory; but it was to become a state that very year, and people were *crowding*<sup>9</sup> into it and buying up the land very fast. Thomas Lincoln felt that now was the time to better himself if he ever meant to do so.

With his ax and saw he set to work and built a rude *raft*<sup>10</sup> which he *launched*<sup>11</sup> on the waters of a small but deep stream called Rolling Fork—a stream that *emptied*<sup>12</sup> after a few miles into Salt River, a *tributary*<sup>13</sup> of the Ohio. On this raft he loaded his *kit of carpenter's tools*<sup>14</sup> and some

1. 權利; 2. 解除; 3. 煩惱; 4. 文明進化; 5. 邊疆; 6. 有冒險性的; 7. 野味;  
8. 爭辯; 9. 擁擠; 10. 木筏; 11. 下水; 12. 流出; 13. 支流; 14. 一副木匠器具。

### 三 不息的湯姆斯林肯到印第安拿

亞伯拉罕七歲的時候他的父親賣掉了諾勃溪的土地。他對這塊地的所有權沒有確切得到，因為有人提出他有更優先的主權；所以他雖是錢賣得不多，也樂於解除因它而生的煩惱了。他是一個富於幻想而精進不息的人，喜歡未開墾地的自由生活，少注意文明進化人生物質上的舒適。這種人常常喜歡向邊陲開拓，為更富冒險性的一類殖民開闢一條新的路。

他曾聽說，俄亥俄河北面，在印第安拿區域內，有一個曠野而奇異的地方，那邊土壤肥沃，野味繁多，人人可以得到一切需要，而對土地的據有也沒有什麼爭議的。於是他決計穿過俄亥俄，到較新的鄉土上，可以給與他的家族一個比較現在他力量所能的更好的家。印第安拿還是一個人口稀疏的地方；但是最近的年頭中它就要成為一州，人口正在繁密地遷入和很快的買進土地了。湯姆斯林肯覺得假使他自己要改善他的生活這是時候了。

他用了他的斧頭和鋸子，造了一個簡陋的木筏 浮上一條小而深的老林汶道的河流——是一條數英里外傾注於鹽河，一條俄亥俄的支流。在這個木筏上面他載了一副木匠器具和



*barrels*<sup>1</sup> of *liquor*<sup>2</sup> which he had received in part pay for his farm. He thought that in the new settlements, where many houses were being built, he could make good use of the tools; and he believed that he could also find a market for the liquor.

The two children and their mother watched him with tearful eyes as he pushed off from the shore and floated slowly down the creek toward the unknown land of *promise*<sup>3</sup>. When he was lost to view in a bend of the stream, they returned to the lonely cabin, which was now no longer their own, but which they would be allowed to *occupy*<sup>4</sup> until his return.

When the raftsmen reached the Ohio River, he found that the *eddies*<sup>5</sup> and *currents*<sup>6</sup> were too strong for him. His little raft was driven here and there among the rocks and *snags*<sup>7</sup> until it was tipped over and the barrels and tools were tumbled off. Happily the water at that spot was not deep, and the shore was close at hand. With the help of a friendly boatman who happened to be near, almost everything was saved; and a few days later, Thomas Lincoln stood on the Indiana shore with all his little property piled up before him. He was told that only a few miles farther north there was plenty of fine land waiting for any one who was willing to buy it at the government price, which was two dollars an acre, *payable*<sup>8</sup> in small *installments*<sup>9</sup>. And so having *disposed*<sup>10</sup> of his barreled goods to his satisfaction, he started on foot through a dense forest, looking for a place to make his home.

He did not go far. Late in the afternoon of the first

---

1. 桶; 2. 酒; 3. 希望; 4. 佔領, 居住; 5. 旋渦; 6. 水流; 7. 樹樁;  
8. 可付的; 9. 分期付款; 10. 讓渡, 處理。

幾桶賣田園所得作為一部分代價的酒類。

他想在新殖民地，有許多房屋正在興工，他可以利用他的工具；他也以為酒類可以得到好買賣。

這兩個孩子和他們的母親滿眶苦淚看着他撐開木筏慢慢向抱有希望而不知底細的地土上浮去。到了河流曲折處看不見他了，他們纔回到寂寞的木屋裏，這已經不是他們所有的了，祇允許他們暫時住到他回來。

他浮木筏到了俄亥俄河，旋流太急，小木筏受衝動，在石塊和樹樁中亂撞，工具和酒桶左右傾墜，幸虧水還不深，離岸又近。又得附近駕船人的救助，一切都脫險境；幾天以後，湯姆斯林肯已站到印第安拿的岸上，全部小小財物都堆在他的前面了。別人告訴他在北邊離開那裏幾英里就有許多良田等候任何人照政府規定的價格去購買，兩塊錢一英畝，得分期小額繳款。他的成桶的貨物滿意讓渡後，他就步行經過茂林，找看成立家庭的地方。

他並不走遠，第一天下午他就到一塊認為在那個區域內

day, he arrived at a spot which seemed to him to be the best in all that region. Here was a *stretch*<sup>1</sup> of rich *bottom land*<sup>2</sup>, with a stream called Pigeon Creek flowing through it, and on either side were gently *sloping hills*<sup>3</sup> covered with a mighty growth of trees. Settlers were already beginning to buy in the neighborhood, and one of them, whose name was Gentry, was talking of setting up a store and starting a village. Thomas Lincoln lost no time, therefore, in choosing a *site*<sup>4</sup> for his farm; and there he drove a *stake*<sup>5</sup> into the ground to show that he had the first claim upon it.

The next day, at *dawn*<sup>6</sup>, he set out, with his gun on his shoulder, to walk to the land office at Vincennes, seventy miles away.

It was a long and hard journey, and we are not told how many days he spent on the way. Vincennes was then the chief town in Indiana. It had been settled by the French nearly a hundred years before, but it was still a backwoods village. Thomas Lincoln found its streets crowded with hunters and traders and land buyers from all parts of the territory. He made his way directly to the land office, where he laid out every dollar that he had in the world, in part payment for one hundred and sixty acres of land lying near Pigeon Creek in Spencer County, about eighteen miles north of the Ohio River. He then started back to Kentucky, to bring his wife and children to their new home.

#### IV. A WINTER IN A HALF-FACED<sup>7</sup> CAMP<sup>8</sup>

---

1. 一帶地方； 2. 低窪之地； 3. 斜坡； 4. 地基； 5. 木樁； 6. 微明，破曉； 7. 半露的； 8. 帳幕。

最合適的地點，這裏是一帶肥沃的低田。一條小河叫披奇盎的灌溉着，兩邊是長着茂密的樹木的斜坡，移民早已開始在鄰近舊地，有一個叫做近卻連的人說要開設一個店鋪，開始建設一個村子。於是湯姆斯林肯不再浪費時間，看好田園的地基，樹立木椿，標明最先的所有權。

第二天破曉，他動身到文生尼斯的土地管理處，在七十英里外的地方。

這是一個艱苦的長途，我們不詳悉他在路上費了多少天。文生尼斯那時候是印第安拿的主要市鎮。從前這地方法蘭西人住了一百年，但還是一個未開墾地的村子。湯姆斯看見在路上擁擠着從各地來的獵人，商人和購買土地者。他直接走進土地管理處，在那裏他繳出他所有的每一塊錢，作為購買在俄亥俄河北八十英里，斯本散縣披奇盎河旁邊一百六十畝地的部份付款。於見他動身回嬰塔啓，攜取他的妻和孩子們到他們的新家來。

It was late in the *fall*<sup>1</sup> when the Lincoln family *bade*  
*good-by*<sup>2</sup> to the Kentucky settlement on Knob Creek



and began their journey through the *wilderness*<sup>3</sup>. They had not much to take with them. The few cooking utensils and the little bedding which they owned were *strapped*<sup>4</sup> on the backs of two *borrowed*<sup>5</sup> horses. Then all *set out on foot*<sup>6</sup>, by the nearest road, to the Ohio River. At night they camped in the woods by the roadside.

The father with his rifle killed plenty of wild game for their food; and friendly settlers along the road often invited them to share their humble meals.

The *distance*<sup>7</sup> from the old home to the new, *measured*<sup>8</sup> upon a straight line, was but little more than forty miles. But they traveled very slowly, and it was a full week before they reached their journey's end. Over a great part of the way there was no road of any kind; and there they had to cut their way through the thick woods. At last, one cold November day, they reached the spot which the father had chosen. It was a *desolate*<sup>9</sup> *outlook*<sup>10</sup>: no house, no shelter, no neighbors to welcome them to their firesides. The leaves had fallen from the trees; the air was *chill*<sup>11</sup> and *damp*<sup>12</sup>; the sky was hidden behind *leaden*<sup>13</sup> clouds

1. 秋天; 2. 告別; 3. 曠野; 4. 皮帶綁紮; 5. 借的; 6. 步行出發; 7. 距離;  
8. 測量; 9. 荒涼; 10. 景色; 11. 寒冷; 12. 潮濕; 13. 鉛色的, 陰暗的。

#### 四 一個半露的帳幕下的冬天

林肯一家向諾勃溪上墾塔啓殖民地告別而開始穿越曠野的旅行的時候正在晚秋。他們不帶許多東西，他們所有的幾樣做飯的用具和臥具綁繫在借來的二隻馬身上。於是全體步行到俄亥俄河。晚上他們在路旁樹林裏宿營。父親用來福鎗打下許多野味爲食；道路近旁友誼的殖民常常拜訪他們并請他們分用盤餐。

從舊家到新屋的距離依着直線測量起來，祇有四十英里多一些。但是他們行得很慢，是一個星期纔完成旅途。大部份的路途都是任何道路都沒有，他們需要從深林密菁中開路而進。最後，在一個十一月的冷天，他們到了父親選定的所在。這是一個荒涼的景色：沒有房屋，沒有遮蔽，也沒有鄰居歡迎他們去烘爐火。樹葉已經從林木中掉下來了；空氣寒冷而潮濕，天藏在鉛色的陰暗的雲裏面，雲片徐徐地下降，幾曾見到這樣

from which a few snowflakes were slowly falling. Was there ever a home-coming so empty of joy?

And yet Thomas Lincoln and his wife were not *down-hearted*<sup>1</sup>. The thought that this spot was to be their home gave delight to the dreary scene. The father was strong, and easily contented with any lot, but the *frail delicate*<sup>2</sup> mother was little able to *endure*<sup>3</sup> the added discomforts which must now be theirs.

Soon the father and little Abraham were busy felling trees and clearing a small opening in the woods. It was the work of only a few hours to build what the settlers called a "half-faced camp." This was nothing more than a *shed*<sup>4</sup> made of poles and covered with broad pieces of *bark*<sup>5</sup>. The three sides that were most *exposed*<sup>6</sup> to the winter winds were *inclosed*<sup>7</sup>; but the greater part of the south side was left open. The cracks between the poles were filled with leaves or sticks and pieces of clay; and a part of the opened side was *screened*<sup>8</sup> with skins hanging down from the roof pole. At one end of the shed was the bed where the family slept. Opposite the open south side, a fire blazed between two great logs, and there the meals were cooked and eaten. This fire was kept burning night and day, and its warm rays made a part of the shed quite comfortable, even in the chilliest weather.

In this rude shelter the Lincoln family lived all that winter. The father was busy every day with his ax, cutting down trees, hewing logs for a new house, and making a clearing for a cornfield. The patient mother kept things as *tidy*<sup>9</sup> as she could, and cooked their simple meals. They had meat in plenty; for the woods were full of

1. 灰心; 2. 嬌弱; 3. 忍耐; 4. 棚; 5. 樹皮; 6. 阻擊; 7. 閉; 8. 蔽; 9. 整潔。

不見歡容的搬家嗎？

但是湯姆斯林肯和他的夫人還是不失望。這個地方要成爲他們的理想的家庭，在愁悶的景色中發生出愉快來。父親是強健而在任何命運中能滿足的；但是在弱而嬌柔的母親不容易再忍受日增月甚的他們應該過的不安適的生活了。

父親和小亞伯拉罕立即忙於砍下樹木在林子裏面開闢一個小空地，這是不過幾點鐘的工作造一間殖民所稱的“半露的帳幕。”這是沒有別的東西祇有一間木頭造成蓋着樹皮的棚子。最易受到朔風侵襲的三面是封閉着的；但是南面的大部份是開敞着的。木頭中間的裂縫用枝葉和泥土填着；敞着的一面一部份用皮革從棚頂的木頭上挂下來遮蔽冷氣。在蔭蔽處的一端放着家裏人睡覺的牀。對着開敞的南邊，在兩根巨木中間生着火，在那裏治餐進食。火在白天晚上都旺着，它的暖融融的光焰使棚的一部份就是在頂冷的天氣都舒服。

在這個簡陋的棚子裏面林肯的家族過着一整冬天。父親每天忙着用他的斧頭砍樹林，鋸木頭，預備蓋房子，並且開闢一片玉蜀黍的田。有耐性的母親安置着各種東西使整潔有序，又煮他們的簡便飯食。他們有豐富的肉類；因爲林子裏面滿是



squirrels and wild *turkeys*<sup>1</sup>. Deer, too, often came within *gunshot range*<sup>2</sup> of the camp. The mother knew how to handle the rifle well, and more than one dinner of venison was secured by her skill.

One morning Abraham, hearing the *gobble*<sup>3</sup> of wild turkeys, peeped out and saw a flock of the big birds marching close by the camp. Their leader was a noble old fellow, as fine a *gobbler*<sup>4</sup> as was ever seen. The lad ran quickly and took his father's rifle from the pegs where it hung. Then he pushed its *muzzle*<sup>5</sup> through a crack in the wall, took aim, and fired. When the smoke cleared away, he saw the *gobbler* stretched dead upon the ground. At first he was proud of having brought down such noble game; and then his pride gave way to pain at the thought of having taken the life of an innocent creature. It was the first time that he had knowingly harmed any living being. After that he often followed game in the wild woods, but only when the family were in need of meat for food. The gentle-hearted lad, unlike his father, could not see any *sport*<sup>6</sup> in hunting.

There were many cold days during that lonely winter, when the barefoot boy could not go out to help his father in the clearing. On such days he would stay in the camp with his mother and read. Among the two or three books which they had brought from Kentucky there was a little *pamphlet*<sup>7</sup> that he liked to read very much. It was a brief true story of a young man named Henry Clay, who by *hard labor and perseverance*<sup>8</sup> had made himself a *leader in the councils of the nation*<sup>9</sup>. Like Abraham himself, he had

---

1. 火雞； 2. 步槍射程； 3. 火雞叫； 4. 火鷄； 5. 鎗口； 6. 娛樂； 7. 小冊子； 8. 堅忍勞苦工作； 9. 國會領袖。

松鼠和火雞。鹿也常常走進營幕的火線射程以內，母親知道怎樣握鎗得法，鹿肉飯用她的技能得到的不祇一次了。

有一天早晨，亞伯拉罕聽野火雞的鳴聲，向外窺視看見一羣大鳥在營幕近旁翔行。它們的領袖是前所未見的一隻華美的老火雞。這孩子急奔過去把挂在牆上的他父親的來福鎗從木釘上取下。他把槍口穿過牆隙，瞄準發槍，烟火消散後，他見一隻火雞倒在地上了。起初他得到這樣華美的野禽傲然自得；隨後他想到害一無辜動物的生命又感覺苦痛。這是他第一次意識地傷害生物。從此他時常在林子裏追逐野味，但祇在家裏需要肉類佐膳的時候。仁心的孩子，不像他父親一樣，不肯引行獵為樂。

在寂寞的冬天有許多寒冷的日子，赤足的孩子不能出去幫助他的父親清除田地。在這些日子他就同他的母親住在帳幕裏面讀書，在他們從壘塔啓帶來的二三本書裏面有一本小冊子他最喜歡誦讀。這是一本少年亨利克連的簡短故事，這個人堅忍勞苦使他成為國會領袖。像亞伯拉罕林肯自己，他本來是一個窮苦的小孩子——飽嘗着辛酸受盡撻辱的孩子——

been a poor boy,—he had been called “The *Mill*<sup>1</sup> Boy of the *Slashes*<sup>2</sup>,”—but now he was a very great man whom everybody honored. The lad could not fully understand all the story, but it pleased him and he read it over and over many times.

It was during these days also that he learned to write. His mother was his teacher, and his first copies were *probably*<sup>3</sup> made with *charcoal*<sup>4</sup> on smooth pieces of bark. Paper was a *precious*<sup>5</sup> thing—too precious to be found in that poor camp. Ink there was none, unless it may have been the *juice*<sup>6</sup> of *poke berries*<sup>7</sup> or of *walnut hulls*<sup>8</sup>. But Abraham Lincoln did the best that he could with whatever came to hand, and before the winter was well over he could write fairly well. Had it not been for this early habit of his, of making the best of his small *opportunities*<sup>9</sup>; it is not likely that, in after years, he would have done anything that you or I would care, to-day, to read about.

## V. HOW THE HEWED-LOG HOUSE WAS BUILT

When spring came, all hands were busy burning logs and brush heaps in the clearing, and planting corn in the rich soil among the stumps. It was not till late in the summer that Thomas Lincoln had all the logs ready with which to build their new house. He had promised himself and his wife that this house should be much better than the one they had left in Kentucky, and so he had

---

1. 磨鍊, 艱苦; 2. 鞭撻; 3. 或有的, 或然的; 4. 木炭; 5. 珍貴的; 6. 漿汁; 7. 商陸漿果; 8. 胡桃殼; 9. 機會。

但是他現在是人類景仰的偉大人物。林肯不能全懂這故事的意義，但是他愛好異常，百讀不厭。

在這些日子中間他也學習書寫。他的母親是他的教師，他第一次的抄本或許是用木炭在樹皮上寫的。

紙是一種珍貴的東西——在那貧窮的帳幕裏面要找到他是太珍貴了。墨水是沒有的，除非是用商陸漿果或者胡桃殼裏的漿汁。但是亞伯拉罕林肯想盡他能做的最好的方法使用手頭的東西，冬季未過他已經能夠寫得不差。假使沒有他早年的習慣，利用他最小限度的機會，他不能有所成就，使我們在今日誦讀它了。

## 五 怎樣造成木砍的屋子

春天到了，許多的人們忙於焚燬枯木，掃除灰堆，在殘株斷椿中種植玉蜀黍。早夏湯姆斯林肯預備好了全部建築新屋的木頭，他向自己和他的妻子承允這所房屋，要比較他們留在聖塔啓的那一所好得多了，因此，他很留意地鋸木使成方塊。

carefully hewed and squared the logs, and had *notched*<sup>1</sup> their ends so that they would fit *snugly*<sup>2</sup> one upon another when they were put in place.

In September all the neighbors for miles around were invited to come to the house raising; and a fine dinner of venison and green corn with *stewed pumpkin*<sup>3</sup> and a *relish*<sup>4</sup> of wild *plums*<sup>5</sup>, was served in the grove near the half-faced camp. When the walls had been raised and the roof of rough *clapboards*<sup>6</sup> was laid over all, everybody looked with admiration at the new building and said that Thomas Lincoln was certainly a good carpenter and that there was no better house in the Pigeon Creek settlement, if indeed in the whole new state of Indiana.

The family had become so tired of the half-faced camp, that they moved into the new house at once. It was far from being finished; and many a day *elapsed*<sup>7</sup> before its easy-going builder found time to make it a comfortable place to live in. There was a fireplace and chimney at one end of the single room, just as there was in the old Kentucky cabin. A floor had been promised, but *sawed planks*<sup>8</sup> were things not plentiful where there were no *sawmills*<sup>9</sup>, and it would take time and much hard work to *split*<sup>10</sup> and hew flat "*punchions*<sup>11</sup>" to be used instead. There were places for two windows, but no glass was bought to put into them. There was but one doorway, and yet Thomas Lincoln, the carpenter, would rather hunt deer in the woods than make a door with which to shut out the wind in stormy weather. The logs had been nicely hewn and smoothed, but nothing had yet been done to "*chink*<sup>12</sup>" the *cracks*<sup>13</sup> between them.

1. 鑿凹； 2. 緊密； 3. 蒸熟的南瓜； 4. 調味物； 5. 梅； 6. 薄板； 7. 逝去（指光陰）； 8. 鑄板； 9. 鋸木坊； 10. 劈開； 11. 大桶； 12. 填塞縫隙； 13. 孔隙。

又在各木塊的一端鑿凹，使裝置時可以一塊塊緊密接合。

九月裏，一英里內的全體鄰居受邀請蒞臨參觀新屋的建築；鹿肉和加上蒸熟的南瓜的玉蜀黍，以及野梅子調味物的精美餐事，在靠近半露的帳幕的林中供張着。看到豎立的圍牆和沒有磨平的木板蓋的屋頂，各人都讚美新居，都說湯姆斯林肯是一個能幹的木匠，而在披奇魯灣甚至於印度安拿州的屋子中，沒有一所比這個屋子再好的了。

全家已經厭倦於半露的帳幕了，他們立刻遷到新屋裏去。但全部完成離開尚遠，經過了許多日子，這處事優裕的建築匠纔造成一個舒服的地方給他們住。也像壘塔啓的舊屋一樣，在這簡單的屋子的一端有一個火爐和烟囱。他們預定鋪地板，但是鋸好的木板並不多，又沒有鋸木坊，只好費了很辛苦的工作去劈鑿扁平的木桶來代替它。又闢了二扇窗的地位，但沒有玻璃可買到。祇有一個門口，而木匠湯姆斯林肯還寧願到林子裏打鹿，不高興費工夫做一扇門以阻擋惡劣天氣時的暴風。木頭已經好好地刻鑿磨光了，但是填塞裂縫的東西還沒有。

The walls had been built high, so as to make an *upper half-story*<sup>1</sup>; but there were only bare *joists*<sup>2</sup> of round poles to show where the lower room ended and the upper room began. Some time after this, a few clapboards were laid across the joists, and in one corner of the *loft*<sup>3</sup> thus formed, a bed of leaves and *straw*<sup>4</sup> was thrown down. This was Abraham's *bedchamber*<sup>5</sup>, and the only way of getting into it was by climbing a *ladder*<sup>6</sup> made by driving long pegs one above another into the wall below.

You would think this unfinished cabin a dreary place indeed; but to the Lincolns it was so much better than the half-faced camp that it seemed as good as a *palace*<sup>7</sup>. Mrs. Lincoln's aunt, Betty Sparrow, and her husband, Thomas Sparrow, now moved into the camp. They had but lately come from Kentucky, and were even poorer than the Lincolns. They had no children of their own, but they brought with them a young *nephew*<sup>8</sup> who was a few years older than Abraham, and whose name was Dennis Hanks.

Thomas Lincoln's one great fault was *the putting off of things*<sup>9</sup>. When the family moved into the unfinished cabin, he *fully intended*<sup>10</sup> to put everything into perfect shape very soon. But the weather was warm, and everybody was comfortable, and why need he hurry? There was work to be done in the clearing; and the woods were so full of game that he must go hunting. When the weather grew colder, the corn had to be gathered; and when winter came, with its snow and wind, it was not pleasant to do any kind of work, and the family could live in the house as it was until spring. In the spring the crops had to be planted,

1. 半層樓房; 2. 欄柵; 3. 樓; 4. 草料; 5. 臥室; 6. 梯子; 7. 王宮;  
8. 姪子; 9. 處事遲鈍; 10. 滿擬。

圍牆高高地建築起來，搭成半層樓房；但是下層盡處和上層起處祇用些不修飾的圓木的攔柵。此後若干時，將幾塊薄板闌在攔柵上面，在樓面一個屋角上安上一張樹葉和草料的牀。這是亞伯拉罕的臥室，惟一進去的路是從釘在下面牆內的長木釘做的一級高一級的梯子上爬上去。

你們恐怕要想像這所未完工的木屋是一個怕人的地方；但在林肯家中看來，同半露的帳幕相比竟如王宮一樣。林肯夫人的姑母同她的丈夫，湯姆斯史巴勞現在也搬進這個帳幕裏來住了。他們纔從墾塔啓搬來，比林肯家中還窮。他們沒有自己的孩子，祇帶來一個年輕的姪子，比亞伯拉罕大幾歲，他的名字叫做騰尼斯亨克斯。

湯姆斯林肯一件重大的缺點就是處事蹉跎，在一家人搬進了沒有完成的木屋時候，他很想使各事立刻就上軌道。但是天氣還和暖，各人都很安適，爲什麼他必須要這樣急促呢？還有清除田地的工作；林子裏野獸這麼充足他必須去獵取。到了天氣漸冷的時候，玉蜀黍就要收集了；冬天到了，雨雪下降，人們不喜歡做任何的工作，於是家人都可以圍聚在屋子裏，一直到春季的重陽。在春天的時候，許多的禾黍須下種，



and there was so much *plowing*<sup>1</sup> and *grubbing*<sup>2</sup> and *log-rolling*<sup>3</sup> to be done that Mr. Lincoln had no time to think of floors and doors and of chinks in the walls. In the summer the weather was so hot that it would be foolish to close up the windows or hang the door or *daub*<sup>4</sup> the cracks which let in the welcome breezes. And so time passed, and the fine, comfortable house that had been promised was never finished.

There are people, known to both you and me, who have this habit of putting off things; but they are not people who succeed well in life.

## VI. A GREAT SORROW

The second summer in Indiana, like the first, was a summer of much hard work and little play. Abraham Lincoln was now in his ninth year, and there were many things that he could do. He could do almost a man's work with an ax; and much of his time was spent in the clearings, chopping down trees, *piling*<sup>5</sup> brush, and burning logs. Sometimes he helped his mother about the house and garden; and sometimes he went on *errands*<sup>6</sup> to the neighbors or to the little village of Gentryville which had *sprung up*<sup>7</sup> two miles away. **1818**

If you could see him as he was, you would think him an *odd-looking*<sup>8</sup> child. He was tall for his age, and very *homely*<sup>9</sup>. He was dressed much as we saw him in the old Kentucky home, in trousers of *tanned*<sup>10</sup> deerskin and shirt of *homespun tow*<sup>11</sup> or *linsey-woolsey*<sup>12</sup>. During most of the year he wore nothing more. If he had a coat for Sundays,

1. 耕種； 2. 掘地； 3. 滾木； 4. 塗塞； 5. 堆積； 6. 被人差遣； 7. 勃興；  
8. 難看的； 9. 樸素的； 10. 鞣色的； 11. 手織的粗麻布； 12. 廢毛女織布。

有這麼多耕種鋤地和滾木的工作，林肯沒有時間想到地板門窗和牆頭上裂縫的事情。夏天天氣這麼熱，關起窗子，垂下門戶，塗塞通風的牆縫是愚蠢的事。因此時間過去，預定的精美舒適的房屋還沒有完工。

有許多人，你我所知道的，他們有這種遇事蹉跎的習慣，那麼他們終身不會成功的。

## 六 重大的慘傷

在印第安拿的第二個夏季，像第一個一樣，是一個勞苦工作多而遊戲少的夏季。亞伯拉罕現在是他的第九週歲，許多事情能夠做了。他差不多能夠用斧頭做成人的工作；他的大部分時間用於清理和斬伐樹木，堆積木材，焚燒木料。有時候他在園子和屋子裏幫助他母親；也有時候他應差遣到二英里外，勃興的近卻連小村的鄰家去。

假使你能看見他那時候的樣子，你要想他是一個難看的孩子。他是身材高而極樸實的孩子。像在墾塔啓舊屋時候一樣，穿了褐色的鹿皮袴和手織的粗麻布或是麻毛交織的襯衫，大半年時間他沒有別的衣服了。倘使他有一件星期日的上衣，

it was made<sup>1</sup> of the *coarsest*<sup>1</sup> home-made goods, and perhaps had already done service as the *garment*<sup>2</sup> of another. For shoes he had a pair of *moccasins*<sup>3</sup> which his mother had made for him, and these he wore only when the weather was very cold. Stockings he had none, nor did he ever wear any until he was a grown-up man. He did not think it a hardship to be thus so poorly clad; for the rest of the family, and other men whom he knew, were dressed in the same poor fashion.

Autumn came again, and with it came trouble and sorrow. A strange *disease*<sup>4</sup> had broken out among the settlers. It was believed to be caused by some plant which grew in the woods. If cows ate the plant, their milk was made *poisonous*<sup>5</sup>, and those who drank of it grow sick and were almost sure to die. On account of this belief the disease was called "milk-sick". Sometimes the cows themselves died; but nobody could ever find the strange plant, or describe its appearance or manner of growth. The disease was known only in new settlements among the clearings and the woods; and *physicians*<sup>6</sup>, even to this day, have been unable to tell what was its true cause.

Thomas Sparrow and his wife were the first to be attacked by this dreadful sickness. The narrow half-faced camp which was their home was a *cheerless*<sup>7</sup> place at its best, and the disease did its work quickly. Two *graves*<sup>8</sup> were made side by side, on the sunny slope of a hill, and there the poor people were laid by their sorrowing *kinsfolk*<sup>9</sup> and neighbors. And then Abraham Lincoln's mother was *stricken*<sup>10</sup> down. The hardships of the

---

1. 極粗糙的; 2. 外衣; 3. 鹿皮鞋; 4. 疾病; 5. 有毒的; 6. 醫生; 7. 不愉快; 8. 墳墓; 9. 親戚; 10. 被打, 受傷的。

就是極粗糙的手製品，而且恐怕是別人早做外衣用過的。他還有母親製的一雙鹿皮鞋，祇在嚴寒的日子纔穿上去，他沒有襪子，在成人以前他從來沒有穿過。穿得這樣襤褸的衣服他不以為是一件苦事。因為他所知道的別的家庭的人都穿得一樣簡陋的。

秋季又到了，帶來的是困難和愁慘。殖民中間流行一種奇異的疾病。一般人信為林子裏植物身上長出來的。倘使母牛吃了這種植物，牛乳也變毒了，誰飲了這乳生的病差不多一定會死的。信了這個說法，這種病就叫做“牛奶病。”有時候母牛死了；但沒有人能夠找到這奇異植物或是說出它長成的外形過。這種病祇在新開闢的殖民地會有；而就是近代的醫師們還不能說出真正的病源是什麼。

湯姆斯史巴勞和他的妻是首先被這種可怕的疾病所侵襲。作為他們的家的窄小的半露的帳幕是一個極不愉快的場所，疾病迅速地進行着。在小山上向陽的斜坡上他們的悲傷的親戚和鄰人替他們築成了兩個墳墓。於是亞伯拉罕林肯的母

past two years had already taken the *flush*<sup>1</sup> of health from her cheeks. *Exposure*<sup>2</sup> to *dampness*<sup>3</sup> and cold in the camp and the unfinished cabin had robbed her of her strength and made her an easy *victim*<sup>4</sup> to the disease. Her husband and children nursed her with tender care, and did all they could to help her. There was no doctor for whom they could send; but they gave her such simple *remedies*<sup>5</sup> as they had, and were always at her bedside, watching her with loving eyes.

One morning very early, when the gray daylight was beginning to struggle through the chinks of the cabin, she reached out her arms and drew the lad Abraham toward her. "My boy, I am going away, and you will not see me again. Be good—I know you will. Help your father. Take good care of your sister. Live as I have taught you, and love God always." And then the end came.

With his own hands Thomas Lincoln made a rude *coffin*<sup>6</sup> of boards for his wife; for there was no one in all the settlement whom they could ask to do this sad service. Then, one quiet afternoon, when the nuts were falling in the woods and the trees were dropping their brown and yellow leaves, they bore her to her last resting place. Under the *spreading branches*<sup>7</sup> of a *sycamore*<sup>8</sup> tree, on the side of a *hillock*<sup>9</sup> some distance from the cabin, they buried her silently and with much sorrow. The grave had been made in the place which she herself had chosen when still in health.

In all that backwoods country there was as yet no place of *public worship*<sup>10</sup>. There was no preacher who could be

---

1. 紅暈; 2. 衝冒; 3. 溼氣; 4. 受害者; 5. 藥劑; 6. 棺材; 7. 紛披的樹枝; 8. 無花果; 9. 小丘; 10. 教堂的祈禱。

親也病倒了。過去兩年的困苦早已消失了她雙頰健康的紅暈。在帳幕和未完工的木屋內所受的濕氣和風寒奪去他的健康，使她爲一個容易的患病者。她的丈夫和孩子們小心看護她，盡力幫助她。他們延請不到醫生；但是他們把所僅有的簡單的藥劑給她，常常在她牀前，用親愛的眼睛看着她。

一個很早的清晨，銀灰色的天光開始穿過屋隙射入，她伸出她的臂膀，把亞伯拉罕拉到她身邊。“我的孩子，我去了，你不能再見我了。好好的——我知道你會這樣的，幫助你的父親，好好注意你的姊妹，照着我教導你的行去，常常親愛上帝。”這樣就完了。

湯姆斯林肯親手做了一具粗陋的棺材收殮他的妻；因爲在全殖民地無人肯能替他們做這個愁苦的工作。於是在一個寂寥的下午，林間果實下墜，黃葉飄落，他們把她搬運到她的長眠的一抔土上。在一顆無花果樹的紛披的枝葉下面，離開木屋不遠的一個小丘旁邊，他們帶着重大的慘傷，肅穆地把她埋葬。

在全部林子裏的鄉間，還沒有一個公衆祈禱的教堂。沒有

invited to come to the *funeral*<sup>1</sup> and speak words of comfort and hope to the *mourners*<sup>2</sup>. The few neighbors who had come in kindness to do what they could returned sadly to their homes, each having his own griefs and burdens to bear. And with hearts bowed down with their great sorrow, the lad Abraham and his sister Sarah slowly followed their father back to their desolate cabin.

### VII. "MY ANGEL MOTHER"

To the sorrowing child, not yet ten years old, it seemed a terrible thing that his mother should be laid in the ground

1818 and no *religious services*<sup>3</sup> be held above her. "If only some good man were here," he thought—"if only some traveling preacher would come into the settlement!"

Then he thought of good David Elkin, whom they had known in the old Kentucky home. If he could be told of their loss, perhaps he would come even now and preach a *sermon*<sup>4</sup> by her grave. But how could he be told?

Sitting by the lonely hearth at home, Abraham thought of a plan. He would write a letter to his mother's old friend. He would tell him of their sorrow, and ask him to come. But this was no easy task. Where could he find paper and pen and ink? Who would carry the letter after it was written? And where, indeed, was David Elkin, the wandering preacher, to be found?

In the backwoods people *learn to do much with but little*<sup>5</sup>. They are not *daunted*<sup>6</sup> by difficulties. In the *thumb-worn*<sup>7</sup> spelling book which the lad had studied

1. 葬禮； 2. 悲痛的人； 3. 宗教儀式； 4. 講道； 5. 小題大做； 6. 挫折； 7. 翻破。

牧師可以延請到參加葬禮而向悲痛的人致安慰詞。懷着仁慈的意思來爲他們盡力的鄰人哀傷地回家，各有自己的愁苦和負擔。帶着被極大悲痛壓抑的心緒，小孩林肯和他的姊姊沙拉慢慢地跟隨着他的父親回到他們淒涼的小屋裏。

## 七 “我天仙的母親”

對於這悲切的孩子，還不到十歲，他的母親入土沒有宗教的儀式似乎是一件慘傷的事情。他想“倘使有一個善人在這裏，倘使只有一個週遊的牧師到這殖民地來。

於是他想到他們在壘塔啓舊屋裏認識的大衛愛而金。要是他知道了他們的損失，恐怕他就要來到她的墓旁致莊嚴的演詞了。但是怎麼能告訴他？

亞伯拉罕坐在家中爐火旁邊，想出了一個計劃。他想寫一封信給他母親舊日的朋友。他要把他的苦痛告訴他，請他來。但是這不是一件簡易的事情，他從那裏能找到紙筆和墨水呢？信寫成之後誰能帶了去呢？還有，大衛愛而金，一個週遊的牧師，從那裏去找到他呢？

森林地的人們遇事總喜歡小題大做，他們不因遭受困難而挫折。他在開來哈齊爾的學校裏讀過的一本翻版的拼音讀



at Calob Hazel's school there was a blank fly leaf, and this was paper enough. Poke berries were hanging ripe on their stalks<sup>1</sup> by many a charred<sup>2</sup> stump in the clearing, and their blood-red juice would serve very well for ink. In the wings of the wild turkey which the father had killed in the woods there were plenty of quills<sup>3</sup>, and of one of these a pen could be made.

The letter was written, and folded<sup>4</sup>, and addressed to David Elkin in Kentucky. But there was no post office, and there were no carries of mail<sup>5</sup> in that part of the country. How was it to be sent to its destination<sup>6</sup>?

One of the neighbors was about to start on some sort of business to a point on the Ohio River. He would carry the letter as far as he went, and then give it to some other person who was going still farther in the right direction. This second person would hand it to another, and he, perhaps, to still another, until at last, no mischance<sup>7</sup> happened, it would reach the hands of the one to whom it was directed<sup>8</sup>. To Abraham Lincoln there was nothing strange about this way of sending a letter—it was the only way that he knew; it was the common custom in that early day among the people of the West.

The dreary winter came, the dreariest that the boy had even known. The wind whistled through the open chinks in the walls, the snow and sleet<sup>9</sup> beat in at the unprotected door. The comfortless cabin was more comfortless than ever before, for she who had been the light of the home was no longer there. Little Sarah, eleven years old, was the housekeeper. The father, still putting off the things that needed most to be done, sat by the fire at home, or

1. 柄; 2. 焦; 3. 鳥翅; 4. 摺; 5. 信差; 6. 目的地; 7. 意外; 8. 繕寄; 9. 霰。

本裏面有一散頁空白的書，這已經够做信紙了。在燒殘的敗株旁，成熟的商陸漿果挂在果柄上，它們的漿汁可以當墨水用。他的父親斬殺的林子裏的野火鷄翅膀上有許多翎毛管，只要用一根就可以做筆了。

信已寫成了，摺疊好開好了大衛愛而金的地址。但是沒有郵局，在那一個鄉區內也沒有信差。信怎麼能送到目的地呢？

有一個鄰居剛要動身到俄亥俄河旁某處經商，他要把這封信帶到他所到的終點，再交給別人把它送再遠的適當地點，這第二個人可再交給另一人，如此轉輾傳遞，如無意外，即可寄到收信人手裏了。對於亞伯拉罕林肯這樣的送信方法不算一件希罕的事；這是他所知道的惟一的方法；這是昔年在西部人民中間普通的辦法。

可怖的冬天來了，孩子從前所經歷的中間最厲害的了。朔風穿過牆隙刮進來，雪片打擊到沒有保障的門上。不舒適的木屋比較以前格外不舒適了，因為給家庭以光明的她已經不在。小沙拉，十一週歲，做了管理家務的人。父親還是蹣跚着一

wandered about the clearings with his ax or his gun. Dennis Hanks, since the death of his aunt, Betty Sparrow, had come to live with the Lincolns; for he had no other kinsfolk or friends to give him food or shelter. He was older than Abraham, and made himself useful, chopping wood and feeding the stock and hunting game in the woods.

At last the days grew longer and cheerier. Spring came, and the woods were *gay*<sup>1</sup> with wild flowers, and full of the *melody*<sup>2</sup> of singing birds; and then, one day, David Elkin, the preacher, rode up to the cabin door. He had received Abraham's letter. *In response to*<sup>3</sup> it he had ridden a hundred miles through the wild, new country, often without so much as a path to *guide*<sup>4</sup> him; he had swum rivers which the spring rains had *swollen*<sup>5</sup> into *torrents*<sup>6</sup>; he had slept in the woods while wolves howled in the thickets about him; he had braved all sorts of danger, suffered weariness, endured hunger—and for what? Merely to stand by the closed grave of a poor woman, to tell about her goodness and gentleness, and to speak *encouragement*<sup>7</sup> to those who had loved her. For this he expected no reward, neither gifts nor gold, nor the praise of men, but only the satisfying thought that he had done his duty. Certainly, when the *roll*<sup>8</sup> of the world's heroes is made up, the name of humble David Elkin will stand far higher than those of many men who have done greater *deeds*<sup>9</sup> but done them *selfishly*<sup>10</sup>.

Word was sent to the neighbors that a preacher had come to preach Nancy Lincoln's funeral sermon. Neighbors carried the news to neighbors, and when the next

1. 爲期均; 2. 好音, 曲調; 3. 應……要求; 4. 引導; 5. 膨脹; 6. 急流;  
7. 鼓勵; 8. 歷史記錄; 9. 事業; 10. 自私地。

切應做的事，坐在家中爐火旁邊，或是帶了他的鎗或斧頭在場上走來走去。騰尼亨克斯，自從他的姑母彼蒂史巴勞死後，也同林肯們住在一起，因為他沒有親友養活他。他比亞伯拉罕年長，劈伐樹木，餵養牲畜和在林子裏打野味，很為得力。

自此以後，大地春回，白晝漸永，景色怡人，林間野花競放，欣欣向榮，枝頭好鳥，齊奏清歌；一日，牧師大衛愛而金乘騎叩木屋。他接到了亞伯拉罕的信，他應召，乘馬行一百英里，經荒野無路可尋的新闢地域；又泅水越過春雨沖積，盛漲的洪流；夜宿森林，叢莽中豺狼叫噪其側；他冒犯艱險，備受疲勞飢餓——為的什麼？僅為站到可憐的婦人的墳墓旁邊，訴說她的溫良的德行，給予愛她的人一種鼓勵。為了這個，他不希望得到金錢贈物的酬報，也不須人們的讚美，不過盡了一己的責任，引以自滿。當然蓋世英雄的歷史記錄造成以後，這個卑賤的大衛愛而金的大名，要高出於一般作大事業而僅圖私利者之上了。

牧師來作南仙林肯的葬儀宣道的消息已經傳達到四鄰。

*Sabbath*<sup>1</sup> came, the settlers quietly met together on the hillside near the spreading sycamore. Many of them had walked long distances, some had come on horseback, some in wagons. This preaching of a funeral sermon was a great event, and men, women, and children were anxious to hear it. More than two hundred persons were there. It was a greater company than had ever before been gathered together in that *scattering*<sup>2</sup> settlement.

When the sun had almost reached the place of noon, the preacher gave out a *hymn*<sup>3</sup>, line by line—for there were no hymn books for the *worshippers*<sup>4</sup>—and, line by line, the women and girls, with their sweet, but *untrained*<sup>5</sup> voices, joined him in singing it. A short prayer

was offered; and then the preacher began his sermon. It was not a *scholarly*<sup>6</sup> sermon, but it was full of *earnestness*<sup>7</sup> and feeling, and was just the kind of speech which the unlearned listeners could understand. Its subject was, of course, the gentle woman whose memory was so dear to all who had known her. And the preacher spoke most feelingly of her patience and faith, and of her high ideals of life—ideals which she had, with loving care, taught and *imparted*<sup>8</sup> to her children.



The Grave of Lincoln's Mother as it now appears

1. 安息日; 2. 散; 3. 讚美詩; 4. 禮拜者; 5. 無訓練; 6. 文雅; 7. 真誠; 8. 傳授。

四鄰又帶信到再遠些的鄰居。到了下一個安息日的時候，殖民地居民在小山的旁邊紛披的無花果樹下靜穆地聚會。他們中間不少人步行長途，有的乘着馬，有的乘着車來。這一個殯儀的宣道是一件大事，男女老小們都渴望着要聽聽。二百人以上在場。這在分散的殖民地中間比較前此曾舉行過的任何集會都偉大呀。

太陽早到了正午了，牧師唱出讚美詩，一行一行念着——因為沒有給禮拜者頌主詩歌的書本——於是婦女們也用着她們的悅耳而沒有訓練的音調，一行一行地和着他同唱。做了一個簡短的禱告，牧師就開始宣道了。這不是一篇文雅的演詞，但是充滿了情感和真誠，而能使一般沒有學識的人都瞭解的宣講。演講的題目當然是這個溫良的婦人，她的紀念是親切於全體認識她的人的。牧師說得非常的動人，關於她的熱誠和忠實，她的高尚的人生理想——她所有的理想——用愛的教養，傳授給她的孩子。

At length the sermon was ended; another hymn was sung; the *benediction*<sup>1</sup> was pronounced; and then the people slowly separated, and went thoughtfully homeward. As for the lad, Abraham Lincoln, he felt that now one great duty to his mother had been performed, and he was happier than he had been since she went away. But a still greater duty remained: to shape his life from that day forward *in accordance with*<sup>2</sup> her teachings, and to make his character such as he knew she would like it to be. He went home with noble thoughts in his heart. Although but ten years old, he was no longer a child. He was resolved to be a man of the type which his mother would admire and commend.

Long years afterward, when he had won honor and *fame*<sup>3</sup>, and was *assured*<sup>4</sup> of a place among the great men of the world, he said, "All that I am, and all that I hope to be, I *owe to*<sup>5</sup> my angel mother."

### VIII. LONELY DAYS AT PIGEON CREEK

There was much hard work to be done on the farm, and the two boys, Abraham Lincoln and Dennis Hanks, **1819** were busy early and late. Between the planting and *hoeing*<sup>6</sup>, the grubbing and logrolling, the *splitting*<sup>7</sup> of *rails*<sup>8</sup> and the building of *fences*<sup>9</sup> there was little time for play. Dennis Hanks and the neighbors' boys took much pleasure in *trapping*<sup>10</sup> *possums*<sup>11</sup> and wild turkeys, and sometimes on moonlit nights they went out *coon*<sup>12</sup> hunting with their dogs, and had grand fun. Sometimes they would *persuade*<sup>13</sup> Abraham to go with them; but

1. 祝福; 2. 依照; 3. 名譽; 4. 確認; 5. 歸功於; 6. 刈草; 7. 劈;  
8. 樑杆; 9. 籬笆; 10. 用機關槍捉; 11. 袋鼠; 12. 樹狸, 浣熊; 13. 勸導。

最後，演詞結束了；又唱出另一種讚美詩；乃作幾句祝福詞；於是會衆各散，掛念地回家。至於亞伯拉罕這孩子感覺現在對於他母親的一件重大責任已盡，比較從她逝世後經過的時間要快樂了。但是還有更重大的責任留着：此後須使他的生範囿於她的教導，使他的行爲自覺爲她所喜悅。他心裏存了這個高尚的理想回家，雖然他祇有十歲，他已經不再是一個小孩子了。他下決心做一個他的母親所贊揚和誠諭的一種人。

許多年以後，他取得了光榮和名譽，列身於世界偉大人物之林，他說，“我現在所成就的，和將來所希冀的，都得歸功於我天仙的母親。”

## 八 在披奇盎灣的寂寞日子

田園裏有很多的工作要做的，亞伯拉罕、林肯和鄧尼亨克斯這兩個孩子，早夜忙着，在下種和刈草，掘地和滾木，劈木和結籬的工作中間，玩的時間很少。鄧尼亨克斯和鄰家的孩子對於喜用機關捕捉袋鼠和野火雞，或是在月夜帶了獵狗去獵取狐狸感覺很大的興味。有的時候他們勸亞伯拉罕一同去；但是



in the heat of the *chase*<sup>1</sup> he was sure to *lag*<sup>2</sup> far behind, for it pained him to see any creature *tortured*<sup>3</sup> or put to death.

He was far better pleased when he could sit at home in the chimney corner and *pore*<sup>4</sup> over his book. He had only two or three, but he read them again and again. It was his habit to read aloud—the thoughts seemed so much more *vivid*<sup>5</sup> to him when he could hear the word as well as see them. This habit I suppose began with his first reading, when his mother was his teacher and most delighted listener. It was a habit which he retained to the end of his life.

About this time two new books came into his hands, but where he got them I cannot tell. One was an arithmetic; and many were the evenings which he spent, studying the rules, and *ciphering*<sup>6</sup> by the *dim*<sup>7</sup> light of the fire. He had no slate—perhaps had never seen one; but he made his *figures*<sup>8</sup> on a smooth clapboard or wooden *shovel*<sup>9</sup>, using a piece of charcoal for a pencil.

The other book was a worn and torn copy of “Æsop’s Fables.” It was a delightful book. Its queer *conceits*<sup>10</sup> *tickled*<sup>11</sup> the boy’s fancy, and he liked to repeat to the other lads its *quaint anecdotes*<sup>12</sup> about talking beasts and birds. In this way he began to *acquire*<sup>13</sup> that pleasant art for which he was always noted—the art of telling *entertaining*<sup>14</sup> stories.

One day in the late fall Thomas Lincoln put on his best suit of *homespun*<sup>15</sup>, shouldered his gun, and left home. He did not tell any one where he was going, but said that

1. 狩獵； 2. 落後； 3. 受苦； 4. 披閱； 5. 生動； 6. 計算； 7. 朦朧的；  
8. 數字； 9. 鏟； 10. 幻想； 11. 引起； 12. 奇怪的軼事； 13. 得到； 14. 引  
人入勝的； 15. 手織。

他對於狩獵的狂熱實在是落後的，因為他不忍見生物遭受苦難以致於死。

他覺得坐在家裏烟肉旁埋頭書本要有興味得多了。他祇有二三本書，但是他一遍一遍地讀。他慣於高聲朗誦——他一面看一面聽文字，在理想上似乎是生動得多了。這個習慣我想他在開始讀書，他的母親做教師和喜悅的傾聽者的時候就養成了，一直到他的終身還保存着這個習慣。

在這個時候有二本書到了他的手裏，不過他從什麼地方得到的我說不出了。一本是算術；他費許多晚上在朦朧的火光中讀公式和演習題目，他沒有石板——恐怕他連看都沒有看見過；但是他用一塊木炭把數字寫在光的板上或木鏟上面，以代鉛筆。

另外的書是一本破舊的伊索寓言，這是一本有興味的書。它的奇特的幻想觸起他的興趣，他喜歡覆述給別的孩子聽其中怪異的鳥獸的軼事。從這種方法他開始得到了他出名的引人入勝的藝術——講悅耳的故事。

有一天深秋，湯姆斯林肯穿上了他最好的手織布的衣服，肩着鎗，離家走了，他不告訴別人他到什麼地方去，不過說他沒有幾天就要回來。三個孩子就自己住着，他不在家沒有什麼

it might be a few days before he would come back. The three children thus left alone, were not much troubled by his absence, for they were used to taking care of themselves.

In the woods were squirrels and turkeys and deer; and Dennis Hanks, with his *traps*<sup>1</sup> and gun, would supply them with meat. There was plenty of corn in the cabin loft; and Abraham Lincoln, with the *tin "gritter"*<sup>2</sup>, would *grit*<sup>3</sup> as much meal as they wanted for bread. There was a cow in the field, and milk to be had for the milking; and Sarah Lincoln, twelve years old, knew how to broil venison on the coals and bake corn dodgers in the Dutch oven. Although there was no danger of *starving*<sup>4</sup>, yet the poor children were in a sad *plight*<sup>5</sup> for clothes. Since their mother had gone from them, more than a year before, they had had no one to care for them. They were in *rags*<sup>6</sup>. The boys had *outgrown*<sup>7</sup> their deerskin trousers. Winter was coming, and they had not clothing enough to keep them warm.

Days and weeks passed, and the father did not come home. The house of the nearest neighbor was so far away that the children *seldom*<sup>8</sup> saw any one but themselves. The unfinished log house seemed drearier and lonelier than ever before.

### IX. IMPROVED<sup>9</sup> CONDITIONS

Early one December morning before the sun was above the trees, the children in the house heard some one *halloo*<sup>10</sup> from the edge of the woods. They ran out, and were

1. 捕獸機; 2. 洋炭碾麥機; 3. 磨; 4. 飢餓; 5. 情形; 6. 襤褸; 7. 因長大而不能穿舊衣; 8. 稀少; 9. 進步的, 改善的; 10. 呼喊。

多大困難，因為他們慣於自己照顧自己。

樹林裏有的是松鼠火雞和鹿，鄧尼亨克斯用了洋鎗和捕獸機，可以供給他們肉類。

樓上藏着很多的玉蜀黍；亞伯拉罕林肯用了鐵的碾麥機可以磨出他們所需要的麵包的粉屑。場中有一隻母牛，可以得到牛乳爲飲。十二歲的沙拉林肯知道怎樣烤鹿肉和在鍋內烘玉蜀黍餅。雖沒有飢餓的危險，但是貧窮的孩子們卻在衣服不週的情形之下。他的母親逝世一年多了，沒有人照顧他們，他們衣衫襤褸，孩子們長得穿不上鹿皮的長袴。冬天到了，他們沒有禦寒的衣服。

一天一天一個一個禮拜過去，父親還不回來。最近的鄰家隔得這麼遠，孩子們除他們自己以外，罕見別人。未完工的木屋比較以前越發顯得陰沈和冷寂了。

## 九 較佳的景況

一個十二月的早晨，太陽上樹身以前，孩子們在屋子裏聽見有人在林子旁呼喊的聲音。他們跑出去，突然看見一輛四匹馬的車子從小路上向屋子行過來。一個陌生人駕着車子而來；

surprised to see a wagon with four horses coming down the lane toward the house. A stranger was driving; and on the seat beside him was their father; and peeping out from beneath the white wagon cover were the faces of a woman and three children. Abraham and Sarah Lincoln could hardly believe their eyes, as they waited in silent wonder by the door, not knowing what change of fortune was at hand.

The wagon drew up before the house, and their father leaped to the ground. Then the woman and the children climbed out over the wheels.

“Abraham and Sarah,” said their father, “this is your new mother. And I have brought you a new brother and two new sisters, too.”

They saw that the woman had a kind, good face, and that the children, who were about their own age, were dressed in warm, *neat*<sup>1</sup> clothes. The new mother *greeted*<sup>2</sup> them very pleasantly, making them feel at once as though they had found a friend. And when she went into the cabin, it seemed already a cheerier place than it had been for many a month.

Soon the wagon was *unloaded*<sup>3</sup>, and Abraham and Sarah were surprised to see the many fine and wonderful things that the new mother had brought with her. There were chairs, and a feather bed, and a *bureau*<sup>4</sup> with *drawers*<sup>5</sup>, and a wooden *chest*<sup>6</sup>, and many other things such as their poor house had never known. And from the wooden chest the kind woman lilted such a supply of clothing as they had not seen before; and soon the children had put off their rags and *tatters*<sup>7</sup>, and were dressed in neat homespun

---

1. 整潔的； 2. 招呼； 3. 卸貨； 4. 玻璃櫥； 5. 抽屜； 6. 箱子； 7. 破衣。

在他旁邊位上坐着他的父親；從白的車頂下面窺見一個婦人和三個孩子的臉。亞伯拉罕和沙拉林幾乎不能相信他們眼睛所見的了，他們在大門旁以緘默的詫異態度中期待着，不知道什麼命運變化在目前了。

馬車拉到屋子前面，父親跳到地下。於是婦人和孩子跨過輪子攀登車外。

“亞伯拉罕和沙拉，”父親說，“這是你們的新母親，我又帶了一個新的兄弟和兩個新的姊妹給你們。”

他們看見那婦人帶着溫和善良的臉，同他們相彷彿年齡的孩子們，穿着溫暖清潔的衣服。新母親很和顏悅色地招呼着他們，使他們立刻感覺找到了一新朋友。她走進木屋的時候，似乎裏面早已變了一個比較以前好幾個月快樂的地方了。

馬車上的物件隨即卸下來，亞伯拉罕和沙拉看見了新母親帶來的許多美好而奇異的東西表示驚異。有幾把椅子，一頂有抽屜的玻璃櫥，一張羽毛的牀墊，還有一隻木箱，另外還有許多這個貧窮的屋子裏從來沒有知道過的東西。於是從木箱裏面這和善的婦人拿出一套他們所需要而從來沒有見過的衣服；孩子們立刻脫去破舊的衣服，穿上手織布的整潔衣服

which made them feel so *awkward*<sup>1</sup>, and yet so warm, that they scarcely knew themselves.

Thomas Lincoln, when he left home, had gone back to Elizabethtown in Kentucky, where in his younger days he had learned the trade of carpenter. He went for the purpose of calling upon Mrs. Sarah Johnston, a widow lady who lived there with her three children, John, Sarah, and Matilda. He had known Mrs. Johnston when she was a young girl and her name was Sarah Bush; and now it was quite easy to persuade her to become his wife, and be a second mother to his children.

In Elizabethtown there lived a man whose name was Ralph Crume, and whose wife was Thomas Lincoln's sister. He owned a good four-horse *team*<sup>2</sup>, and a *stout*<sup>3</sup> wagon that had been built for Kentucky roads. He was glad of an *excuse*<sup>4</sup> to see the new country beyond the Ohio; and so he readily agreed to take Mr. Lincoln, with his bride and his *stepchildren*<sup>5</sup> and some household goods, back to the home in Indiana. This Ralph Crume was the stranger whom Abraham and Sarah first saw when they ran to the door in answer to their father's shout. To them he seemed to be a very great man with his four horses and his big wagon.

The coming of the new mother *wrought*<sup>6</sup> many changes. Thomas Lincoln was soon *partly cured*<sup>7</sup> of his habit of putting off things. I suppose that he must have been anxious to show his wife how good a carpenter he could be when he chose to try. For he set to work at once, with ax and *broad-ax*<sup>8</sup>, to hew smooth "punchcons," or *slabs*<sup>9</sup>, for the floor of his cabin. When these were laid in their places and fastened

1. 拙劣、愚笨； 2. 聯着駕車的一隊牲畜； 3. 堅固的； 4. 理由； 5. 摺兒； 6. 激起； 7. 部分改善； 8. 伐木斧； 9. 板皮(經木爲板時所去之外片)。

使他們感覺這樣不好看，但是卻這樣溫暖，他們竟不認識自己了。

湯姆斯林肯離家的時候，回到墾塔啓的依立才勃斯鎮去，那裏是他年輕時學習木匠的地方。他去的目的是爲拜訪一個帶着三個孩子，約翰，撒拉和麥鐵爾大，住着的寡婦撒拉約翰史敦夫人。他早就認識約翰史敦夫人在她是一個姑娘，她的名字叫撒拉勃休的時候；現在很容易勸說她做他的妻，和他孩子的第二個母親。

在依立才勃斯鎮上住着一個男子，他的名字叫做拉而夫克留姆，他的妻是湯姆斯林肯的姊姊。他有在墾塔啓馬路上行走的駟馬和堅固的車輛，他喜歡趁此機會看看俄亥俄河流域新的鄉村；因此他就同意載了林肯同他的新婦和他的寄子寄女和傢具，回到印第安拿的家裏。這拉而夫克留姆就是亞伯拉罕和沙拉在跑到門口回答他們父親呼喊的時候，最先看見的客人，他們看來他是一個大人物帶了四匹馬和大車。

新母親的來演起了許多的變動。湯姆斯林肯就局部改善他的遇事蹉跎的習慣。我想他定是急切向他的妻表示出他能做一個怎樣好的木匠，因爲他立即開始工作，用斧頭削平那木枋板或板皮當做木屋內的地板。當這些東西，放在相當的位



down with wooden pegs, the house began to look much more *habitable*<sup>1</sup>. Then, with the help of the boys, the cracks in the wall were chinked with clay, and a sufficient number of rough clapboards were *ripped*<sup>2</sup> to make a good floor for the loft.

The *crowning piece*<sup>3</sup> of work was the door, which was made of sawed planks, *battened*<sup>4</sup> together, and was hung on wooden *hinges*<sup>5</sup>. When closed it was fastened with a wooden *latch*<sup>6</sup> which could be lifted with a *string*<sup>7</sup>. During the day, the end of this string was passed through a hole and hung on the outside of the door. Then "the latch-string was out" to all comers, and any person could open the door and enter. But at night the string was drawn inside, and then no one could come in without first knocking for *admission*<sup>8</sup>. As for the windows, there was no use thinking of glass; and so Mr. Lincoln fitted wooden *frames*<sup>9</sup> into the openings, and Mrs. Lincoln hung neat *curtains*<sup>10</sup> before them which could be closed when the weather was rough, and drawn when it was fine. And thus, after more than two years of putting off, the cabin was finished. It was a pleasanter place than you would *imagine*<sup>11</sup>; and it had been made so by the good *management*<sup>12</sup> of the new mother.

There were now six children in the family—three boys and three girls—and every one was old enough to *lend a hand*<sup>13</sup> and be useful. There were merry times in the cabin and in the fields and clearings, and plenty of *drudging work*<sup>14</sup> had to be done. In the clearings

1. 可居住的; 2. 劈開; 3. 竣工的部分; 4. 釘以狹板; 5. 鉸鏈; 6. 門閂; 7. 繩; 8. 允許; 9. 架; 10. 窗簾; 11. 想像; 12. 管理; 13. 助一臂之力; 14. 苦的工作。

上用木釘釘下去，這屋子就覺得像樣得多了。於是經孩子們的幫助，牆縫都用黏土填塞，又用夠數的粗的小木板鋸開做樓房的合式的地板。

最後完成的工作是大門，這是用鋸好的木板做成，以狹板箱在一起，掛在木製的絞鏈上。關上的時候用門闌門住，這門闌可以用繩子拉起來。在白天，繩子的一端從孔內穿過去掛在門外。於是這個門闌的繩是露出給一切來人，任何人可以開門進來。但在晚上這根繩子拉到裏面，來的人不先敲門得到允許是不能進來的。至於窗子，用不着想到玻璃；所以林肯在敞開處安上木架，林肯夫人在木架前面懸上整潔的窗簾，在天氣不好的時候關起來，天氣好的時候拉開來。這樣經過兩年的處置，木屋就完工了。它是一個比較你們所想像的還要暢快的地方；這是由新母親適當的管理做到的。

現在有六個小孩在這個家庭裏面——三個男孩和三個女孩——每個人都是年紀長得足夠助一臂之力而有用了。木屋裏面和田園裏場子上都有了歡樂的時間，有許多苦工要做的。

trees were to be cut down, logs piled and burned, roots grubbed up, and fences built. In the fields there was an endless round of plowing, and planting, and sowing<sup>1</sup>, and reaping<sup>2</sup>; and gathering<sup>3</sup>. And in all this labor Abraham bore a part<sup>4</sup>. He did not like to work, and never found pleasure in it; but he always did his best, and did it without complaining<sup>5</sup>. He was already old enough to see that labor was the only means of bettering his life<sup>6</sup>, and he had made up his mind<sup>7</sup> to rise in the world as high as he could

In and about the house the mother and daughters found no end of duties. They carded<sup>8</sup> the wool and hackled<sup>9</sup> the flax<sup>10</sup>; they spun and wove<sup>11</sup> these into cloth, which they dyed<sup>12</sup> and made up into clothing; they milked the cows, and cared for the chickens; they churned<sup>13</sup> butter<sup>14</sup> and boiled soap<sup>15</sup> and knit<sup>16</sup> themselves stockings; and in time of corn planting or harvesting<sup>17</sup>, they thought nothing of putting on sunbonnets<sup>18</sup>, and helping the "men folks"<sup>19</sup> in the fields. With the new mother's bureau<sup>20</sup> and chairs, the house was more elegantly<sup>21</sup> furnished<sup>22</sup> than any other in the neighborhood; and although the brooms<sup>23</sup> were made of buckeye<sup>24</sup> splints<sup>25</sup> rudely tied<sup>26</sup> together, the floor was always a model of cleanliness. The cooking was done on the hearth, or over the blazing fire. The family ate from pewter plates, and without forks<sup>27</sup>; and they drank from tin cups or from the shells of gourds<sup>28</sup>. And thus

1. 播種； 2. 收穫，刈； 3. 聚集，採集； 4. 担負一部分； 5. 出怨言； 6. 改善生活惟一方法； 7. 盡他的心； 8. 梳理； 9. 以麻梳梳之； 10. 亞麻； 11. 織成； 12. 染； 13. 攪亂； 14. 牛油； 15. 肥皂； 16. 編織； 17. 收穫； 18. 遮陽帽； 19. 一般男人； 20. 玻璃衣箱； 21. 優美的； 22. 佈置，設備； 23. 掃帚； 24. 馬栗，美洲等萌齒樹木； 25. 散片； 26. 綑紮； 27. 叉； 28. 葫蘆。

在空場上面，許多樹木要劈伐下來，許多木頭要堆積起來焚燒，許多樹根要挖出來，和許多籬笆要建築起來。在田園裏，有一種無窮盡的耕，植，播種，收穫，聚藏的工作輪流着。全部的工作亞伯拉罕擔負一部份。他不喜歡工作，在工作裏找不出興趣；但是他盡力地做，做了也無怨言。在他的年紀早已足夠看出工作是改善生活的惟一方法，而他已決心儘量在世界上提高起來，出人頭地。

在屋子內外母親和女兒有不停的職務。他們梳理羊毛和亞麻；他們把這些紡織成布，染色做成衣服；他們擠出牛乳，喂養小雞；他們把乳攪成牛油，煮沸肥皂和自己織襪子；在耕耘和收穫的時候，他們不想到戴上遮陽帽，就去幫助男人們在田園裏工作。用了新母親的玻璃衣櫥和椅子，這屋子裏比較其他鄰家都佈置得優美；雖然掃帚是用馬栗樹的散片粗率地紮成的，地板常是顯得清潔。煮飯炒菜在爐架上或熊熊的火上。一家人在白鐵盆子裏吃，沒有叉；他們用洋鐵的杯子或葫蘆瓢

with hard work and homely fare the days went by *unnumbered*<sup>1</sup>.

## X. NOT MUCH SCHOOLING, AND YET A LITTLE

When Abraham was thirteen years old, the people in the Pigeon Creek settlement decided to build a schoolhouse. It would not do, they said, to let their children grow up in *ignorance*<sup>2</sup>. One morning in autumn, when the crops had been "laid by," and there was a *lull*<sup>3</sup> in the work on the farms, all the men met together at the *crossroads*<sup>4</sup>, where a *plot*<sup>5</sup> of ground had been given for school purposes. Axes rang in the woods, trees crashed to the ground, logs were cut in proper lengths and laid one above another—and before *nightfall*<sup>6</sup> the schoolhouse was finished. 1822

It was much like any other log cabin. The door was at one end; and on either side there was a small square window. Nearly the whole of the other end *was taken up*<sup>7</sup> by the fireplace—a *huge affair*<sup>8</sup>, built of blue clay and flat stones. Benches made of logs split in halves were placed around the inside of the room for seats. A rude shelf was put up near the door to serve as a desk, before which the few pupils who wished to study writing could stand by *turns*<sup>9</sup> and *trace*<sup>10</sup> their copies. Of course there was no floor. There was no glass in the windows, but it was expected that when the weather grew cold the master would *paste*<sup>11</sup> a sheet of *greased paper*<sup>12</sup> over each opening—and this would serve just as well.

---

1. 無數的; 2. 無知識; 3. 暫時的休息; 4. 十字街頭; 5. 一方地; 6. 暮;  
7. 被佔據地位; 8. 重大事務; 9. 輪流; 10. 書寫; 11. 裱糊; 12. 油紙。

飲。這樣在勞苦工作和家常的生活之下，過了不知道多少的日子。

## 十 不多的學校教育，但是還有一些

亞伯拉罕十三歲的時候，披奇 盎 灣殖民地的人民決定建築一所學校房屋。他們說，不要讓孩子們長大沒有知識。一個秋天的早晨，農作物收割好了，農場上的工作得到暫時的休息，人們都在十字路口聚集，那邊有一塊土地撥給建學校的需用。伐木丁丁，大樹倒到地下，木頭都鋸成適當的長度一塊一塊疊起來——日落以前校舍完工了。

這很像別の木屋一樣，大門在屋的一頭；每一面都有一個方的小窗戶。另一頭幾乎全面為爐架——一個大工事，用黏土和平石築成——所佔。木塊鋸成兩半做成的橈子放在屋裏邊做座位。一個粗糙的木架子放近門口做書桌，在它的前面少數學生願意學習字的時候可以輪流站着抄寫。當然地板是沒有的。窗戶上也沒有玻璃，但是希望一到天冷教師要在每一窗洞上糊上一張油紙——這恰是足夠用得一樣好的。

The first master was Azel Dorsey; and the boys and girls from the Lincoln cabin were among the pupils. School began at sunrise and was not *dismissed*<sup>1</sup> until the sun was setting. It was scarcely daylight when the children started to school, for the house was three or four miles away, and often the stars were shining before all were back at the home fireside. The master had agreed to teach spelling, reading, writing, and arithmetic "*to the rule of three*"<sup>2</sup>; but only a few of the scholars studied anything but spelling.

Of course, Abraham Lincoln stood at the head of his classes, not because he could learn more easily than his schoolmates, but because he studied harder. He was the only one who saw that the way to rise in the world is by hard labor and by getting knowledge. The other boys cared for nothing so much as being good *wrestlers*<sup>3</sup> and fast runners, *hard hitters*<sup>4</sup> and *straight throwers*<sup>5</sup>. They looked with *scorn*<sup>6</sup> upon book-learning, and would have made things very unpleasant for Abraham if he had not shown them that, with all his love for books, he could wrestle and run and strike and throw as well as the best of them. On the fly leaf of an arithmetic which he used at about this time, one may still read these lines written by himself:—

"Abraham Lincoln,  
His hand and pen;  
He will be good,  
But God knows when."

Azel Dorsey's school soon came to an end, and it was two years before another master was employed to teach in the little log schoolhouse. But all this while, Abraham was quietly teaching himself at home; and it is not

1. 散學; 2. 比例; 3. 力士; 4. 重擊者; 5. 正確的投擲者; 6. 輕蔑。

第一個教師是阿才爾桃賽；從林肯屋子裏來的男女孩子都在學生中間。學校從日出開始，日落散學。差不多曙色初現學童就離家上學，因為到學校差不多要三四英里遠，回家烤火的時候已是明星朗耀了。教師同意教拼音，讀法，書法，和算術‘比例’；但是祇有極少數的學生，除了拼音以外，讀別的功課。

當然，亞伯拉罕林肯名列前茅，不是因為他比別人容易學會，而是因為他比別人攻讀勤苦。他是惟一的學生知道出人頭地須要努力工作和求知。其他的孩子們除了做一個力士，賽跑好手，技擊家和正確的擲遠者以外，不注意別的事。他們輕視讀書，看見亞伯拉罕祇愛好書本而不能在角力，賽跑，技擊，投擲上比上他們的時候，就要予以難堪。在他這時候用的算術書飛頁的上面，可以看到他自己寫的幾行字：——

“亞伯拉罕林肯，  
他的手和筆；  
什麼時候他要好了，  
祇有上帝知道。”

阿才爾桃賽的學校不久就結束，過了兩年，另一個教師纔被聘在小木屋內掌教。但這全部時間，亞伯拉罕靜靜地在家中



likely that any backwoods schoolmaster could have taught him better. His father thought that it was folly for him to learn anything more, and that so much reading of books was a great waste of time. But when Andrew Crawford at last opened another school in the little cabin, Mrs. Lincoln *declared*<sup>1</sup> that the six children should attend it—and so they did.

It was at this school that Abraham wrote his first composition of which we have any *account*<sup>2</sup>. Its subject was "Cruelty to Animals," and knowing how gentle-hearted he was toward all living creatures, we can easily guess some of the things he said.

The second school was even shorter than the first. The settlers seemed to think that a very little learning was sufficient, and so it was a long time before the log schoolhouse again *echoed*<sup>3</sup> with the voices of children *conning*<sup>4</sup> their spelling books.

When Abraham was nearly seventeen years old, a wandering schoolmaster whose name was Swaney, opened a school in a *deserted*<sup>5</sup> cabin four and a half miles from the Lincoln home. Of course young Lincoln was one of the scholars. He was so anxious to learn, that he thought nothing of walking nine miles every day to gain what little he could from a man who knew far less than himself. But his father soon came forward and declared that the boy had already had more *schooling*<sup>6</sup> than was good for him, and that he must stop all such *nonsense*<sup>7</sup> and go to work. And so Abraham Lincoln's school days were at an end. If all had been put together, they would not have made a twelvemonth.

1. 提議; 表自己; 2. 記號; 3. 回響; 4. 學習; 5. 遺棄; 6. 學校教育; 7. 無謂。

自己教學；就是任何林子裏的教師都不能教得他再好些。他的父親想再多讀書對於他是笨拙事情，而且浪費時間。但是後來恩及魯克勞華特在小木屋裏開學校的時候，林肯夫人提議六個孩子都要去上課——他們就去了。

在這個學校裏亞伯拉罕寫了他的在我們記載以內的第一篇文章。它的題目是“虐待動物，”知道他對於一切生物怎樣仁愛，我們很容易猜想到他說的幾許事情。

第二個學校還要比第一個時間短。殖民地居民似乎想學到一些就夠了，所以又經隔了長時間這校舍纔重新回響着孩子們的學習他們拼音書的琅琅之聲。

亞伯拉罕近十七歲的時候，一個遊歷的教師，名字叫桑尼的，開了一個學校在離林肯家四英里半人家遺棄的木屋中，小林肯自然是學生中的一個。他這樣熱心求學，他想一天走九英里路從一個學問遠不如他的人那裏得到怎樣少的一些知識是不算什麼的。但是他的父親不久就出來干涉，他說這孩子所受的教育，已超過有益於他的範圍了，他必須要停止這些無益的舉動去工作。因此林肯上學的日子就此結束。倘使全部加起來，還不到十二個月。

## XI. CONNING BOOKS BY THE FIRELIGHT

During all this time Abraham Lincoln's love of books continued. He read everything that he could get hold of. If he heard of a book anywhere in the settlement, he could not rest until he had borrowed it. Once he walked bare-footed twelve miles to borrow a book containing the laws of Indiana. When he was plowing in the fields, he would almost always have a book with him to read while he gave the horse a few moments' rest at the end of the row<sup>1</sup>.

His father was not in favor of so much reading. He thought that it unfitted the boy for his work and made him lazy, but the good mother *pleaded*<sup>2</sup> in his *behalf*<sup>3</sup>, and begged that he should be allowed to have his own way. "He was always a *dutiful son*<sup>4</sup> to me," she afterward said, "and we took pains when he was reading not to *disturb*<sup>5</sup> him. We would let him read on and on till he *quit*<sup>6</sup> of his own *accord*<sup>7</sup>."

He would sit by the fireplace at night and read as long as the fire lasted. Often he would have a pile of *hickory*<sup>8</sup> bark at his side which he would throw in, piece by piece, as the flames died down. In the Pigeon Creek settlement a candle was a *luxury*<sup>9</sup> which common people could not think of using save on *special occasions*<sup>10</sup>.

Whenever Abraham found anything in his reading which seemed to be too good to be forgotten, he would take note of it in whatever way he could. If he had no paper, he would write with *charcoal*<sup>11</sup>, or with a piece of red "*keel*<sup>12</sup>," on the side of a smooth board. The logs in the chimney corner were covered with his rude notes. When he had

1. 一瞬地； 2. 辯護； 3. 利益； 4. 孝子； 5. 擾亂； 6. 停止； 7. 自願；  
8. 胡枝樹； 9. 奢侈品； 10. 特別事故； 11. 木炭； 12. 龍骨粉。

## 十一 在火光中誦讀

在全部的光陰中，林肯繼續對書本十分愛好。他拿到書本就讀，倘使他聽說在這塊殖民地上，那裏有了什麼書，他必定要借到手才歇。有一次他赤足步行十二英里去借一本印第安拿法律的書。他犁田的時候，總是帶着一本書，他給馬在一瞬地的盡端休息一刻的時候他就誦讀起來。

他的父親不主張他讀這麼多書。他以為這樣不適宜於孩子的工作而且要使他懶惰的，但是賢明的母親卻辯護他的利益，請求讓這孩子自由。她說，“他對我總是做一個孝順的兒子，在他讀書的時候我們應當忍耐，不去擾亂他，待他自己願意停止。

在晚上他總要坐在爐火旁讀書，一直到火熄滅為止。他常常有一堆山胡桃樹的皮在他身旁，火焰將滅的時候他就一塊一塊投進去。在披奇盎灣，蠟燭是一件奢侈品，除了有特別事故，平常想不到去用它。

亞伯拉罕在誦讀時看見有容易忘記的事情，他就用任何可能方法記錄下來。倘使他沒有紙，他就用木炭，或用紅的龍骨瓣寫在光滑的木板上。煙囪旁邊屋隅上的木頭被他粗率的

learned his notes by heart, he would *rub*<sup>1</sup> them out to give place for others.

Paper was a rare article, and every piece that he could get was kept with great care. He made ink from poke berries, or walnut hulls, or the *sap*<sup>2</sup> of *brier*<sup>3</sup> roots. His pens were of goose quills and turkey quills, and no one in those times had better. Some pages of his exercise books, filled with figures and examples in arithmetic, have been found and may still be seen.

One autumn he heard that a settler whose name was Josiah Crawford owned a book about the first President of the United States. He set out at once to borrow it. Mr. Crawford very kindly allowed him to take it, telling him to be careful not to *soil*<sup>4</sup> it. The lad no sooner turned his face homeward than he opened the book and began to read. It was Weems's "Life of Washington," and to him it seemed a wonderful story, filling his heart with noble thoughts and with *aspirations*<sup>5</sup> higher than he had ever felt before.

Walking slowly homeward, he read until darkness *overtook*<sup>6</sup> him. After supper, in his corner by the fire, he read until the last log of wood had been burned to ashes and there was no longer the slightest flame *flickering*<sup>7</sup> upon the hearth. It must have been past midnight when he crept up the ladder to his bed in the loft. He carried the book with him, and laid it in a crack between two logs so that, at the earliest peep of day, he could take it and *resume*<sup>8</sup> his reading while still lying in bed.

In the morning he was awakened by the sound of rain *pattering*<sup>9</sup> on the roof over his head. He reached out and

1. 擦去； 2. 液汁； 3. 野玫瑰花； 4. 染污； 5. 希望； 6. 追及，襲擊；  
7. 搖曳； 8. 重新開始； 9. 淅瀝。

字跡寫滿。他牢記了這些記錄後，就擦去以備再寫。

紙是希罕的東西，他每得一張，就什襲珍藏。他用商陸漿果或胡桃仁皮或野玫瑰花根的液汁做墨水。他的筆是鵝毛管和火雞毛管，那時候沒有再好的東西了。他練習簿上的幾頁，寫滿了算術的碼字和例題，到現在還可以看到。

在一個秋天他聽見有一個名叫約瑟克勞化的殖民地的移民有一本關於合衆國第一任大總統的書。他立刻動身去借。克勞化好和氣地借給他，并教他不要弄污。林肯一轉身回家時立即翻開書讀起來了。這是一本維姆著的華盛頓傳記，他覺得這是一件奇異的故事，使他胸中充滿了前所未有的高尚意志和較從前更高的希望。

他一面徐徐步行回家，一面讀，直到夜色降臨。晚膳後，在屋隅爐火旁，他又讀到最後的一塊木頭燒成灰末，再也沒有動搖的光影才止。他爬上梯子到閣樓牀上時一定已過中夜了。他帶了書放在兩根木頭的中間空隙內，以備天一亮時就可以在牀上誦讀。

早上他被雨點打在屋頂上的聲音所警醒。他伸手拿書，見

took the book, but was *dismayed*<sup>1</sup> to find that it was *soaked*<sup>2</sup> with the rain. The back was ready to drop off, and the leaves were stuck together. He hurried down, built a fire, and dried the volume so that he could finish the reading of it—but, do whatever he could, it would never look like the same book.

After breakfast he carried it back to its owner and explained what had happened.

“I am very sorry,” he said, “and I am willing to do anything that I can to make it right with you.”

Mr. Crawford said that the book was worth about seventy-five cents, and that if Abraham would work three days for him he would be satisfied.

“Do you mean that the three days’ work will pay you for the book,” asked the boy, “or will it only pay for the *damage*<sup>3</sup> done to it?”

“I mean that you may have the book,” said Mr. Crawford. “It will be of no further use to me.”

And so, for three days, Abraham *husked*<sup>4</sup> corn and *stripped*<sup>5</sup> *feeder*<sup>6</sup>, and then proudly carried the book home again. It was his own,—the first thing he had ever bought directly with his own labor. He read the volume again and again.

In the clearings and the fields he thought of the wonderful *career*<sup>7</sup> of Washington—the greatest of American heroes—and he was strengthened in his resolution to live a manly life and to do his best at all times. Might not he too be a *patriot*<sup>8</sup> and hero? Although he might never be president, he certainly could make himself worthy of that great honor.

---

1. 被驚愕； 2. 溼透； 3. 損害； 4. 剝殼； 5. 剝去； 6. 蜀秫； 7. 事業；  
8. 愛國者，志士； 9. 同等價值的。

已被雨淋透，驚嚇得愕然了。書面快要脫落，書葉都沾在一起了。他趕緊下牀，生了火，把書烘乾以便讀完——但無論怎樣做，總不能恢復原狀。

早膳後他把書帶回主人處，說明一切經過。

他說，“我很抱歉，我願盡力以賠償你的損失。”

克勞化說這本書約值七角五分，倘使亞伯拉罕能夠替他做三天工他就滿意了。

亞伯拉罕問道，“你的意思三天的工作就算這本書的價值嗎，還是單單賠償它的損害？”

克勞化說，“我意思你可以保有這本書，它對於我沒有用處了。”

於是林肯費了三天工夫，把玉蜀黍剝殼，芻秣去皮，這樣就又得意地帶着書回家了。道是他的所有物了，——他的第一件用自己的工作買來的東西，他把這本書讀了再讀。

在田園裏和場地上他想到華盛頓——美利堅最偉大的英雄——的一生奇特的事業，他堅決自矢力行崇高勇往的人生，時時努力精進。他也可以為志士英雄否？雖是他不能為大總統，他總可以使自己得到這種同等價值的榮譽。



## XII. ORATORY AT A COUNTRY COURT

Young Lincoln was now more than ever determined to gain for himself a good education. It was hard for him to learn; he could not go to school; he had but few books; there was no person who could help him; but in spite of all such difficulties, he kept *steadily*<sup>1</sup> on, doing his best every day, and learning whatever he could. He studied hard and did everything thoroughly, and so you need not wonder if he learned more than some boys do *nowadays*<sup>2</sup> who have every opportunity and yet are lazy and careless.

About the time that his father took him from Master Swaney's school, a book on *elementary surveying*<sup>3</sup> came into his hands. He at once set himself to learn the principles of the science, and—perhaps because he knew that George Washington had once measured land—Abraham Lincoln dreamed of becoming a *surveyor*<sup>4</sup>.

I have already told you how, when he was but a little child, he delighted to *imitate*<sup>5</sup> the wandering preachers who came into the Knob Creek settlement. As he grew older he still *cherished*<sup>6</sup> the *ambition*<sup>7</sup> to become a public speaker. Few things pleased him better than to stand on a stump or a log and, with the other five children as listeners, *deliver*<sup>8</sup> a funny speech on some subject of common interest. As he was always greeted with *applause*<sup>9</sup>, he became bolder and would sometimes practice speaking before a crowd of country people at the village store. In harvest time his father *forbade*<sup>10</sup> his speech-making in the fields, "for when *Abe*<sup>11</sup> begins to speak," he said, "all the hands stop work and listen."

---

1. 堅決； 2. 現在； 3. 初步測量學； 4. 測量者； 5. 摹倣； 6. 懷抱； 7. 志願； 8. 演說； 9. 讚賞； 10. 禁止； 11. 林肯小名，長輩稱呼時用。

## 十二 在鄉村法庭上的演說

小林肯現在比往常更堅決要使自己受到良好的教育。他  
很不容易求到學問，他不能進學校；他只有少數的幾本書；沒  
有能幫助他的人；但是他不顧這許多的困難，他還是堅決地繼  
續下去，每天盡他最大的能力，盡量求知。他勤奮讀書和澈底  
工作；所以你們用不着奇怪他，比較現在的各種機會都有而還  
是懶惰不注意的孩子們學到得要多。

差不多在那個時候他的父親帶他到桑尼教師的學校裏  
去，一本初步測量學的書到他手裏。他立刻開始學習科學的  
原理，並且——恐怕他因為知道喬治華盛頓曾經測量過土地  
——亞伯拉罕也夢想做一個測量者。

我早已告訴你們，他在一個小孩子的時候，就喜歡摹倣  
劈奇蓋灣殖民地的教師。當他長大些時，他仍抱着做一個公  
開的演說家的志願。他覺得很少的事情比較站在木塊上，五個  
小孩聽着，作一個有興味的題目的演說來得有趣。因為常常受  
歡迎和讚賞，他膽子大了，時常願意在衆人叢集的村店裏練習  
演說。在收割的時候他父親禁止他在田地裏演講，他說，“因  
為亞伯一開始說話，衆人就要停了工聽了。”

He was nearly eighteen years old when he walked barefooted to Boonville, fifteen miles away, to attend a *murder*<sup>1</sup> *trial*<sup>2</sup> that was being held there. It was his first visit to any court of *justice*<sup>3</sup>, and the first time that he saw lawyers at their work. He was filled with admiration for the *judge*<sup>4</sup>, who seemed to him the greatest and wisest of living men. He listened with *intense*<sup>5</sup> interest to all that was going on; and when one of the lawyers arose and made a speech in *defense*<sup>6</sup> of the *prisoner*<sup>7</sup>, he was delighted beyond measure.

The lawyer's name was Breckenridge, and he was from Kentucky. When he had finished speaking, Abraham Lincoln could no longer hold himself. He rose from his seat, pushed his way across the *courtroom*<sup>8</sup>, and held out his hand to the *astonished*<sup>9</sup> lawyer. "That was the best speech I ever heard," he said.

It was a strange scene. The *gawky*<sup>10</sup> youth, nearly six feet four inches in height, stood with *outstretched*<sup>11</sup> hand, forgetful of everything but the wonderful speech. Dressed in a suit of *buckskin*<sup>12</sup>, with no shoes on his feet, and a coon-skin cap on his head, he never thought of the *inequality*<sup>13</sup> between himself and the young lawyer in *broadcloth*<sup>14</sup> and fine *linen*<sup>15</sup>. But Mr. Breckenridge, with a *sneer*<sup>16</sup> on his face, turned away and took no further notice of his admirer. Young Lincoln, *unused*<sup>17</sup> as he was to the ways of the world, felt this *rebuff*<sup>18</sup> *keenly*<sup>19</sup>. It was his first experience of the inequalities of society. It was the first time that he had met any one who looked down upon him as an *inferior*<sup>20</sup>. I doubt not that he then and there resolved

1. 命案； 2. 審判； 3. 裁判； 4. 法官； 5. 興奮的； 6. 辯護； 7. 罪犯；  
8. 審判室； 9. 驚異； 10. 粗劣； 11. 伸直； 12. 鹿皮； 13. 不等； 14. 雙幅呢  
絨； 15. 亞麻布； 16. 鄙夷； 17. 不習於； 18. 挫折； 19. 聰敏地； 20. 低級者。

他近十八歲的時候，赤着脚步行到蓬維爾，十五英里以外，去聽一件命案的審判。這是他第一次到裁判法庭，第一次看見律師工作。他充滿了對法官的讚美，在他看來是最偉大最智慧的人生了。他用緊張的興趣注意事實的經過；而等到律師中的一個作替罪犯辯護的演說時，他高興得不可思議。

律師的名字是勃萊根立奇，他是從聖塔啓來的。他演說完以後，亞伯拉罕林肯再也忍不住了。他從他的座位上站起來，衝開一條路通過審判室。對這驚人的律師伸出手來，他說“那是我所聽見過的最好的演講。”

這是一幕奇異的活劇。一個驕態的少年，近六尺四寸高，伸着手站立，忘記了一切，光注意這一篇驚人的演詞。他身穿鹿皮衫光着脚，頭戴熊皮帽，沒想到他自己同穿細絨布和蔴布的少年律師中間的階級。勃萊根立奇露出鄙夷不屑的態度，轉過身不再注意他了。年輕的林肯，於世事是沒有經驗的，銳敏地覺出這一次的挫折，這是他的第一次對於社會上不平等的經驗。在他所遇到的人中間，賤視他為低級份子的這是第一個。無疑的他在那個時候那個地方就決定了取得這樣的地位，

to win his way to such a position that some day even Mr. Breckenridge would be glad to take his hand. Many years afterward the two men met again; and Mr. Lincoln, who was then the greatest man in our country, reminded Mr. Breckenridge of this scene in the courtroom—a scene which the proud Kentuckian had forgotten, but which the humble backwoodsman could not forget.

After this visit to Boonville, Abraham's mind was wholly bent upon being a lawyer. He did not expect to become a lawyer at once, or indeed without much study and labor. He would do whatever came to his hand, and he would do it well; he would be anything that it was necessary for him to be, and he would not give way to *impatience*<sup>1</sup> or *despair*<sup>2</sup>, but the end which he kept steadily in view was a career of honor and usefulness in the practice of law. Although he could not help but dislike the hard work on the farm, yet he took pains to learn how to do everything there in the best *possible*<sup>3</sup> way.

He had grown to be very tall, and his strength was something wonderful. He could outlift, outchop, and outwrestle any man in the settlement. And best of all, he was known among his *acquaintances*<sup>4</sup> as being kind-hearted, brave, and honest to a degree that was not common among boys in any *community*<sup>5</sup>.

### XIII. LINCOLN THE BOATMAN

Thomas Lincoln thought that a boy who was so big and *active*<sup>6</sup> ought to be earning some money. And so in the fall, when the crops had been cared for and there was not much to be done on the farm, he sent Abraham down to the Ohio River, and *hired*<sup>7</sup> him out as *ferry*<sup>8</sup> boy to a man

1. 操切; 2. 失望; 3. 可能; 4. 熟識者; 5. 社會; 6. 活潑; 7. 僱出; 8. 擺渡。

使將來，就是勃萊根立奇也要高興同他握手。多年以後兩個人又在一處會面；林肯他那時候已經是我們國家的偉大人物了，憶勃萊根立奇在法庭上的情景——這個情景墾塔啓人早已忘記而卑賤的鄉下人是不能忘記的。

到蓬維爾以後，亞伯拉罕的心懷完全傾向於做一個律師了。他不希望立即做一個律師，因為實在沒有什麼研究和工作的。什麼事到他手上他就做，他要做得它好；有什麼必須要他當的他就當什麼，他也不會操切和失望；但是結果他堅定地放在心目中的是實習法律的榮譽和效用的歷程。他雖是不能幫助或不喜歡田間的勞苦工作，但他還是努力學習怎樣可使各事可能合於範圍內最好的方法。

他已經長得很高，膂力驚人，他能舉重，伐木，角力較殖民地的任何人為佳。而最好的長處，還是他在儕輩中，仁慈，勇敢而誠篤，在任何人羣社會的孩子中間都顯得是異乎尋常的。

#### 十四 林肯當舟子

湯姆斯林肯想一個這樣高大活潑的孩子應當要去掙些錢。因此在秋季，收穫已完，他派亞伯拉罕到俄亥俄河，儲於一

whose name was James Taylor. The lad was put in *charge*<sup>1</sup> of a *flat-bottomed*<sup>2</sup> *rowboat*<sup>3</sup>, and it was his duty to carry *passengers*<sup>4</sup> across the river, between the Indiana and Kentucky shores. For this work it was agreed that he should have his *board*<sup>5</sup>, and his father should receive two dollars and fifty cents a week.

Abraham Lincoln now gained much knowledge of the world that was new to him. He had never studied *geography*<sup>6</sup>, and his ideas about the *extent*<sup>7</sup> of our country were not very clear. He saw the steamboats passing up the river to Cincinnati or Pittsburg, and down toward St. Louis or New Orleans. But he had never seen a city, and the accounts which he heard of these places seemed to him like fairytales.

There were but few travelers to be ferried across the river, and so, on some days there was not much to be done. At such times it was pleasant, in the warm autumn weather, to lie on the bank and watch the flatboats and other *craft*<sup>8</sup> go floating down the stream. But young Lincoln was not satisfied to waste his time in idleness. Judge Pitcher, who lived near the landing, was the owner of a *shelfful*<sup>9</sup> of books. While waiting for passengers, the ferry boy often ran into the judge's office to look at these books; and the judge, seeing how fond he was of reading, kindly allowed him to take down and *peruse*<sup>10</sup> as many as he chose.

Sometimes the boy would amuse himself by writing on paper his thoughts about certain subjects. One of the compositions thus written was on *temperance*<sup>11</sup>. When Judge Pitcher read it, he was so pleased with the good sense of it all that he handed it to a preacher who sent it to Ohio,

---

1. 職務； 2. 平底的； 3. 用槳之船； 4. 旅客； 5. 膳食； 6. 地理； 7. 面積，大小； 8. 小船； 9. 滿架的； 10. 看書； 11. 節慾。

個名叫傑姆斯泰樓的人做搖擺渡的船童。這孩子就管着一條平底船，載客來往於印第安拿和聖塔啓間，爲了這種工作，他得供膳食，他的父親受到一星期二元五角的報酬。

亞伯拉罕林肯現在得到了許多新的世界知識。他沒有讀過地理。他對於國家的面積不很清楚。他看見汽船過河到辛辛那提和畢資堡向聖路易斯或紐奧爾連斯進行。但是他沒有見過一個城市，他所聽到的關於那些地方的事物似乎是許多神仙故事。

祇有少數的旅客擺渡過河，所以有幾天沒有多少工作做，這種時光是很快樂的，在和暖的秋天，躺在河岸上看着船舶蕩漾河上。但林肯不願如此消磨時間，在附近住的法官畢却有滿架的書籍，在等候渡客的時候，這個船童常常跑到法官的辦公室去看這些書；而這法官看見他這樣愛好讀書，溫和地允許他取下書閱讀，他要多少就多少。

有的時候這孩子以把他對某種題的感想，寫在紙上自娛。其中有一篇作文講的是節慾。畢却法官讀的時候，他見這篇文字立意佳妙，很喜歡，就交給一個傳教士送到俄亥俄報紙上發



where it was published in a paper. Another of young Lincoln's *essays*<sup>1</sup> was on "National Politics<sup>2</sup>." It is not likely that at this time he had ever seen a newspaper, and so it seems strange that he could know anything about politics. But the essay was so well written and *displayed*<sup>3</sup> so much knowledge of the subject that a lawyer to whom it was shown declared "the world couldn't beat it<sup>4</sup>."

Abraham's service as a ferry boy did not continue long. Winter came, ice formed in the river, and there were so few travelers that the boat was *hauled*<sup>5</sup> up on the shore and the ferry stopped business. The lad went cheerfully back to Pigeon Creek, carrying to his father the money which he had earned. The world seemed a great deal larger to him now than ever before, and he *longed*<sup>6</sup> for the time to come when he could go out and see what was taking place in its busy *marts*<sup>7</sup>.

Those thoughts led him to form a *project*<sup>8</sup> for building a flatboat and taking the farm produce to the river where it might be sold for a good price. All that winter he was busy thinking and working, cutting *timber*<sup>9</sup> for his boat and putting the pieces together. His father was easily *persuaded*<sup>10</sup> that something might be made out of the *venture*<sup>11</sup> but his mother shook her head, and was unwilling to let the lad leave home. When the spring rains finally came, and Little Pigeon Creek was overflowing its banks, Abraham launched his boat upon the stream and, having at last gotten his mother's leave, made a trial trip to the Ohio.

The little craft was *stanch*<sup>12</sup> enough so long as it was floating in the narrow *channel*<sup>13</sup> of the creek; but when it

1. 論文; 2. 國家政治; 3. 啓示; 4. 世界上無出其右; 5. 拉起; 6. 渴望;  
7. 市場; 8. 計劃; 9. 木材; 10. 說服; 11. 冒險之事; 12. 堅固; 13. 河槽。

表。另一篇林肯的文章是“國家政治。”那時候他沒有見過一份報紙，而他知道政治這是很奇怪的。但是這篇文章寫得這樣好，並且對於題意啓示得這樣明白，因此有一個律師見了譽爲“舉世無出其右者。”

亞伯拉罕做船童的工作並沒有繼續長久，冬季屆臨，河面結冰，渡客這麼少，所以那船就被拉到岸上，而這渡船停止營業。這孩子愉快地回到披奇盎灣，帶了掙的錢回家。現在世界似乎比他從前所知道的大得多了，他盼望他能夠有時間去看看熱鬧市場。

這一種思想，引導他成立一個計畫建築一隻平底船把農產物載到河上以便售得善價。全部的冬季他忙着思索和工作，砍伐樹木再一塊一塊裝起來以便造船隻。他的父親聽說這冒險的事情可以有所獲得就很容易被說動；但他的母親搖着頭不贊成這孩子離家。春雨來了，披奇盎溪河岸水流泛濫，亞伯拉罕把小船放下水中，最後向母親告別，作到俄亥俄的試航。

這隻船在溪的狹槽中浮着足夠堅固；但是一到大河的旋

came out upon the rolling waters of the great river it seemed very *frail*<sup>1</sup> indeed. Young Lincoln dared not venture far into the stream. He *moored*<sup>2</sup> his boat to the shore, and began to study whether there was any way by which to make it stronger and safer. Two strangers with their *trunks*<sup>3</sup> were on the landing, waiting for a steamboat that was coming down the river. The steamboat would not come to the shore, for there was no *wharf*<sup>4</sup>. But if there were any passengers to be taken on, she would stop in midstream and wait for them to be rowed out to her.

The two strangers looked at the different boat that were moored by the landing, and at last came to young Lincoln's. They seemed to like the stout new *vessel*<sup>5</sup>, for they said, "Will you take us and our trunks out to the steamer?"

"Certainly," said Lincoln; for he knew that with his great strength he could *manage*<sup>6</sup> the boat during that short trip, and he hoped that the men would pay him at least a "*fee*"<sup>7</sup> for his trouble.

The trunks were put into the boat, the men seated themselves, and the tall, *brawn*<sup>8</sup>, young man soon *sculled*<sup>9</sup> them out to the steamer. He knew how to handle his boat, even in the strong current. The men climbed into the steamer, and their trunks were lifted upon the deck. The *pilot*<sup>10</sup> rang the bell; the *engineer*<sup>11</sup> began to put on steam; "You have forgotten to pay me!" shouted Lincoln. Then each of the men took a silver half-dollar and *tossed*<sup>12</sup> it into the little vessel. The engine *puffed*<sup>13</sup>, the *paddle*<sup>14</sup> wheels went round, and the steamer pushed on down the rolling stream. The young man could scarcely believe

1. 脆弱; 2. 停泊; 3. 衣箱; 4. 碼頭; 5. 船; 6. 駕駛; 7. 錢幣; 8. 壯健; 9. 搖櫓; 10. 領港者; 11. 駕駛人; 12. 投擲; 13. 一吹; 14. 輪翼.

流中就顯得脆弱了。小林肯不敢再遠航，他攏船傍岸，視察有否方法可使船堅固安全。兩個旅客帶着衣箱在岸上，候着向大河去的汽船，汽船不能傍岸，因為沒有碼頭。但是倘使有客人上下，船就停在中央等候他們乘划子上來。

兩個旅客看着岸旁的小船，最後就選中林肯的那隻。他們似乎喜歡這隻大新船，因為他們說，“你願意載着我們和我們的箱籠渡到汽船上嗎？”

林肯說，“當然的”，因為他知道用他的膂力他可以駕船作短程的航行，可望人家付幾個錢以報他的勞力。

箱籠放進小船，兩個人坐着，這高大壯健的少年就把他們搖上汽船。雖在渡流中，他也能把定渡船，兩個人爬上汽船，箱籠送上甲板，領港者把鈴一打，駕夫拉上汽門；林肯呼道，“你忘記付錢了！”於是兩人各摸出半元錢幣擲到小船上，汽笛一鳴，舟輪轉動，汽船向急流就去，這少年拾起兩錠銀子，幾乎自己都不信能賺這麼些錢。這是他第一次自己賺到的錢，因為

his senses when he picked up the two pieces of silver. It was the first money that he had ever earned for himself, and it seemed to him a very great sum indeed. That he, a poor lad from the backwoods, could earn so much in so short a time, was almost too wonderful to believe.

#### XIV. NEW ORLEANS AND THE MISSISSIPPI

What became of Abraham Lincoln's little flatboat, and why he gave up his intended voyage, we do not know. But when next we hear of him he is *engaged*<sup>1</sup> by Mr. Gentry, the *storekeeper*<sup>2</sup> at Gentryville, to *pilot*<sup>3</sup> a much larger vessel down the river to the *markets*<sup>4</sup> of New Orleans. This vessel was of the kind called by the river people a "*broadhorn*<sup>5</sup>." It was wide and flat-bottomed, with a little *caboose*<sup>6</sup> or shelter in the middle where the men could sleep. Close by the caboose there was a hearth of clay where they could build a fire and cook their meals. The boat was loaded with *pork*<sup>7</sup> and corn and other products of the new country; and young Lincoln, who was the *captain*<sup>8</sup> worked the front oars. He was promised that if he made the trip safely, he should receive money enough to pay his *passage*<sup>9</sup> back on a steamboat, and his father should have two dollars for every week he was absent. His only *companion*<sup>10</sup> and helper was Allan Gentry, his employer's son.

You must know that at this time there were no *railroads*<sup>11</sup> in the world. In the Western country there were but few roads of any kind, and these were *mostly*<sup>12</sup> mere wagon *tracks*<sup>13</sup> through the woods. To bring goods over the

---

1. 僱用； 2. 店主； 3. 領港； 4. 市場； 5. 叉開角； 6. 船上之廚房； 7. 豬肉； 8. 船長； 9. 舟費； 10. 同伴； 11. 鐵路； 12. 大半； 13. 跡，車路。

這對於他實在是一個巨大的數目。一個林子裏的窮孩子能在極短的時間賺到這許多錢，差不多太奇怪了。

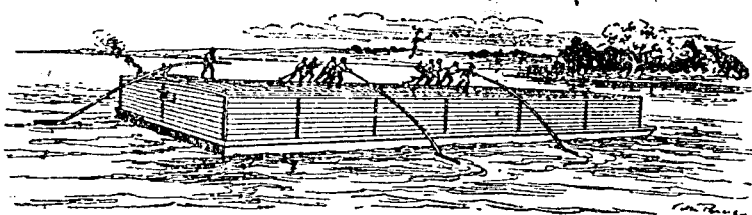
## 十五 紐奧爾連斯和密士失必

以後亞伯拉罕林肯的小船怎麼樣，他為什麼放棄他的打算，我們不知道。但我們知道後來他爲近卻連維爾的一個舖主近卻連所雇用，做一條往紐奧爾連斯市場比從前的大得多的一艘船上的船長。這種船上居民都稱它做“叉開角”這種船寬闊平底，有一個船廚或小棚可供睡臥，靠近棚砌了一個黏土的竈以便煮飯食。這條船裝運豕肉，穀類和新領土的生產；林肯因爲是船長，執掌前槳。倘使他能駕船平安抵達，說好他可以得到足夠購輪船要回家的錢，他的父親每星期收受兩元錢。他的唯一的伙伴和助手是愛倫近卻連，他的雇主的兒子。

你們必須明白在那個時候世界上還沒有鐵路。在西睡祇有少數的幾條道路，這種路大半不過是林中的車跡而已。帶了

mountains from the East was a difficult and *expensive*<sup>1</sup> *undertaking*<sup>2</sup>. To send the corn and wheat and pork of the *fertile*<sup>3</sup> West over the same mountains to the market cities of New York or Philadelphia was a thing impossible because of the great *cost*<sup>4</sup>.

It was only *by means of*<sup>5</sup> the water courses that the settlers could find any market for their *surplus*<sup>6</sup> produce. And as all the great streams of that region flow into the Ohio or the Mississippi, these two rivers became the chief



A Mississippi Flatboat

*highways*<sup>7</sup> of *traffic*<sup>8</sup>. New Orleans, near the mouth of the latter stream, was the center of trade for the West and South, and the busiest city in the United States.

As Abraham Lincoln guided Mr. Gentry's broadhorn down the great waterway to New Orleans, he saw many sights that were wholly new and strange to him. There was much busy life on the river. Boats of every kind were floating down—flatboats, *barges*<sup>9</sup>, house boats, *timber rafts*<sup>10</sup>—nearly all *bound for*<sup>11</sup> the same place. Steamboats with loads of *freight*<sup>12</sup> and passengers went paddling by, sometimes in one direction, sometimes in the other. To the young men whose lives had been passed in the quiet of

1. 費錢的； 2. 事業； 3. 肥沃的； 4. 費用； 5. 利用……方法； 6. 過剩的； 7. 大道； 8. 運輸事業； 9. 漕艇； 10. 木排； 11. 駛往； 12. 運費。

貨從東方越過山脈是困難和費錢的事情。運送肥饒的西方的穀物和豕肉過同一的山脈到紐約或非列得爾菲亞，因為運費太大，是辦不到的事。

移民祇能利用水道把他們的剩餘的生產送到市上。因為所有那個區域裏的大河流都流向俄亥俄和密士失必，這二條河成了貨運要道。紐奧爾連斯，在密士失必口子上，成了西南部的商業中心，合衆國最繁盛的城市。

因為亞伯拉罕林肯管領近卻連的船往紐奧爾連斯，他見了許多新奇的景物。在河水上有許多勞苦的生活。各式各樣的船向下游駛去——平底船，遊艇，住家船，木排——幾乎是完全駛往那同一個地方的。載客貨運的汽船鼓輪行駛，來回對開，對於這一向在林子裏悄然過活的少年這種忙碌和行動，一定看做很奇異的。



the backwoods this *bustle*<sup>1</sup> and movement must have seemed very wonderful indeed.

For hundreds of miles along the river there were no towns. Now and then a lonely clearing might be seen on the higher ground back from the stream. Now and then they passed in sight of some bold settler's cabin half hidden by the underwoods which lined the banks. On their left, near where Memphis now stands, they saw the long stretch of woodland where the Cherokee Indians still had their hunting ground. Thousands of wild ducks and other swimming birds flocked in the creeks and *coves*<sup>2</sup>, and now and then the boatmen caught sight of timid deer running among the trees or seeking to hide themselves in the thick underwoods.

Every day the weather grew a little warmer. Every day the shores became a little greener. Trees and flowers of kinds which the young men had never seen began to appear. Floating onward, they came, little by little, into what seemed to be a new world. They passed now and then a plantation of cotton or of sugar *cane*<sup>3</sup>, and saw *gangs*<sup>4</sup> of slaves working in the fields. *Alligators*<sup>5</sup> *basked*<sup>6</sup> in the sun, or *paddled*<sup>7</sup> lazily about in the creeks and *inlets*<sup>8</sup>. Strange birds *whceled*<sup>9</sup> and *screamed*<sup>10</sup> above them. Spreading trees, with long *moss*<sup>11</sup> *pendent*<sup>12</sup> from their branches, lined some parts of the shore. They passed an old town called Natchez, where all the people talked French—for it must be remembered that Louisiana was first settled by pioneers from France. At last, after many *adventures*<sup>13</sup> they reached the busy wharves of New Orleans, and were at the end of their *voyage*<sup>14</sup>.

---

1. 忙碌； 2. 小灣； 3. 甘蔗； 4. 羣； 5. 短吻鱷魚； 6. 曬； 7. 涉水； 8. 小灣； 9. 飛旋； 10. 尖聲叫喊； 11. 青蘚； 12. 下垂物； 13. 蹣跚； 14. 航程。

沿河數百里沒有市集，河後高地上可望見寂寞的空間。有時呈現幾個膽大的移民的宅子，半藏在河濱排列着的矮林旁邊。在左邊，靠近現在孟斐斯所在的地方，他們又可看見森林地帶的延展，那邊卻勞基印第安人依舊保守着這一片狩獵地，成千的野鴨和水禽聚集在小溪或小灣裏邊，膽怯的鹿在林子裏飛跑或尋找隱蔽在密菁中間。

天氣一天一天和暖了，河濱漸漸變成綠色，少年人從未看見過的樹木花卉開始出現了。向前浮蕩，他們又漸漸進入新的世界，他們又經過棉花和甘蔗的新開園地，看見成羣的奴僕在田間工作，鱷魚在陽光下晒曝，或在溪流裏移動。奇異的鳥在他們頭上飛翔，和尖聲地叫着。紛披的樹，枝上掛着苔蘚，成行地在岸上排着。他們又經過拿起堡，那邊的人都講法語——因為這應記住路易聖那是從法蘭西來的開闢者移殖的。最後，歷過許多難關，他們到紐奧爾連斯的繁盛碼頭，那是他們的航行終點。

It would be interesting to follow young Lincoln about the streets of the city and to know what he thought of the strange sights that were everywhere presented. Here were people of all classes and of many nations: merchants, *sailors*<sup>1</sup>, *planters*<sup>2</sup>, slaves; backwoodsmen like himself; hunters and *trappers*<sup>3</sup> from the far Northwest; and ship captains from beyond the sea. Here, too, were all kinds of *merchandise*<sup>4</sup>. The wharves were lined with steamboats and other river craft. Sailing vessels from ocean ports were *anchored*<sup>5</sup> in the stream. Indeed, it seemed as if the whole wonderful world had been brought together in this great market place.

But the two young men did not stay long among these interesting scenes. They had come to New Orleans on business and not for pleasure. It took only a few hours to sell their little *cargo*<sup>6</sup> of pork and corn. Then they *disposed*<sup>7</sup> of their flatboat, which had been made to float only with the stream, and was now good for nothing but *firewood*<sup>8</sup>, and, without losing more time than necessary, they *embarked*<sup>9</sup> on an up-river steamboat and were soon voyaging homeward *at a rate*<sup>10</sup> which was then thought to be very rapid indeed.

When, at last, the young men again set foot in Indiana, they had many wonderful stories to tell of their adventures; and when they paid to Mr. Gentry the money which they had gotten for his goods, they were made happy by his saying that no man could have managed the business better.

Abraham Lincoln was now nineteen years old. After

---

1. 水手; 2. 地主; 3. 設獵捕獸者; 4. 商品; 5. 停泊; 6. 貨物; 7. 處置; 8. 燃料; 9. 上船; 10. 立即。

這是一樁趣事要是跟着少年的林肯到城市的街頭看看他對着呈現眼前的新奇景色生什麼感想。這裏有各階級各民族的人民，商人，水手，地主，奴僕，像他自己的森林居民。西北邊睡的獵人弋人，海外的船主，這裏也有各種商品，碼頭上排列着汽輪和木船。從港口來的帆船在河中寄碇，實在好似整個的世界在這大市場上聚在一起了。

但是這兩個少年在奇趣的景色中不能載得長久。他們到紐奧爾連斯是爲營業，不是爲娛樂。祇消幾個鐘頭就可把他們的豕肉和穀物船貨脫售。於是他們處置好這條平底船，祇要讓他順流浮着，除可供燃料之外沒有別的用處了，爲不枉費時間起見，他們立即搭了上行汽船回家，這就迅速得多了。

最後，兩個少年又到了印第安拿，他們把艱險的歷程的奇蹟述說出來；他們把所得售貨的錢付給近卻連之後，他說沒有別人能把事情辦得這麼好，他們就很高興。

亞伯拉罕林肯這時十九歲了，見了許多的世面，他開始對按奇查灣的乏味生活感覺厭倦。他做了許多勞苦的工作，在他

having seen so much of the world, he began to tire of the dull round of life at Pigeon Creek. He had done a great deal of hard work, for a boy of his age, and yet his father had claimed all his earnings. He had never had but one dollar that he could call his own. Was it not time that he should be doing something for himself? The captain of an Ohio steamboat offered to hire him as a *deck hand*<sup>1</sup>. The money would be his own. He would see still more of the world and its busy people. Why not go?

He did not speak to any one at home about this matter; but went down to the landing where he had worked as ferry boy to see a friend whom he trusted.

"William Wood," said he, "what ought I to do? Ought I to *strike out*<sup>2</sup> for myself, or ought I to stay with my father and serve him, as I have been doing, for nothing?"

"Abraham," said William Wood, "you are only nineteen years old. Your time until you are twenty-one belongs by right to your father. Help your father."

And then the young man remembered that these were the last words of his angel mother: "Help your father. Live as I have taught you, and love God always." He at once put aside all thoughts of leaving home. He made up his mind that he would *manfully*<sup>3</sup> do his duty, and trust in God for what might follow. He went cheerfully back to his home, and without a word took up his *accustomed*<sup>4</sup> work on the farm.

## XV. A TRIAL OF NEW FORTUNES

In February, 1830, Abraham Lincoln was twenty-one years old. He was now his own master and might go

1. 水手; 2. 圖謀出路; 3. 勇敢地; 4. 慣常的。

年紀的孩子，可是他的父親要他全部的工錢，他從沒有一塊錢可以說自己的。現在是不是他要替自己工作的時候？俄亥俄汽船上的船主建議雇他做一個水手，賺的錢就算他自己的了。他可見到再多的世事和忙碌的人生，爲什麼不去呢？

關於這件事他也不告訴家裏的人；祇到他做渡船童子的池界上來訪問一個他所信任的人。

“威廉荷特”他說“我應該怎樣做呢？我應該爲自己另謀出路呢，還是仍舊留在那裏像以前那樣替我父親服務，而一點得不到什麼。”

威廉荷特說，“亞伯拉罕你只有十九歲哩。你的光陰還是在你父親的權力之下，幫助你的父親罷，除非你到了廿一歲。”

於是少年記起他天仙的母親最後的一句話：“幫助你的父親，照我教導你的活着，常常敬愛上帝。”他立即拋棄離家的念頭。他決計遇事要勇往負責和信任上帝。他愉快地回家，一言不發照常做他在田間做慣的工作。

## 十五 新命運的嘗試

在一八三零年二月，亞伯拉罕林肯廿一歲了。他現在是自主的人可以到他所挑選的地方去。但是家庭生活發生另外一

where he chose.<sup>①</sup> But another great change was about to take place in the life of the family, and he made up his mind to help his father a little longer.

All that winter letters had been coming to Thomas Lincoln. They were written by Abraham's cousin, John Hanks, who was living near Decatur in Illinois. They were full of *glowing accounts*<sup>1</sup> of that new country in the valley of the Sangamon River; they told wonderful stories of the great prairies and of the *wooded bottom lands*<sup>2</sup>; and they ended always with words of *persuasion*<sup>3</sup>: "Sell your Indiana farm and come. Come, while you can have your choice of government land at only one dollar and twenty-five cents an acre." At last, a letter more *urgent*<sup>4</sup> still was received. John Hanks had chosen a tract of one hundred and sixty acres, the best in all that region, and would hold it for Thomas Lincoln if he would be sure to come in the spring. More than that, he would have logs cut and hauled for a cabin, so that the Lincolns might find a new home ready for them as soon as they came.

Thomas Lincoln did not need so much persuasion. He was always ready to move. If his more *cautious*<sup>5</sup> wife had been as willing as he to leave their old home for a new, he would have moved long before. It was now more than thirteen years since he had settled on Pigeon Creek, and he was still a poor man. Life in Illinois could not be harder than life in Indiana: it might be a great deal easier. *At any rate*<sup>6</sup>, where land was so rich and so plentiful and cheap, there would be a better chance for the younger people who were just beginning life.

And so at last, the members of the Lincoln family

---

1. 熱烈記述； 2. 森林盆地； 3. 勸告； 4. 迫切； 5. 謹慎； 6. 無論如何。

種變化，於是他決計繼續幫助他的父親一個短時期。

那一個冬季裏邊，好幾封信到了湯姆斯林肯那裏，這些信都從伊利諾斯的台加脫附近亞伯拉罕的表兄約翰亨克斯來的。信上充滿了在遜格們河流域新土地的熱烈記述；信上敘述大草原和大森林盆地的故事；信末總是勸告着說“脫售你的印第安拿田園到此地來。來罷，你可以用一元二角半一畝的價錢選政府的土地。”最後，還接到更迫切的信，約翰亨克斯已經挑選了一塊一百六十畝在那一區域裏最好的地，倘使湯姆斯林肯決定來，他就替他保持。再者，他可以斬伐和拖運許多建屋的木料，這樣林肯一姓可以在來的時候得到新的家。

湯姆斯林肯不需要這樣多的勸告，他常常準備搬家的，倘使他的謹慎的妻子同他一樣喜歡搬到新的家，他早已搬了。他移殖到披奇盎灣十三年多了，還是一個窮人。在伊利諾斯的生活不能比印第安拿的生活更艱苦些：它或者要容易得多。在任何情形之下，土地這樣又豐富又肥沃又便宜，年輕些的人剛開始生活可得到更好的機會。

於是最後，林肯一家同意到伊利諾斯新土去碰碰運氣。農



agreed to try their fortunes in the new country of "the Illinois." The farm, which was not yet paid for, was *bargained away*<sup>1</sup>, the *stock*<sup>2</sup> and crops were sold, and at the time of Abraham's twenty-first birthday everybody was busy getting ready for the long, hard journey.

It was in March when they started. All the household goods had been packed into a long, covered wagon drawn by four *yoke*<sup>3</sup> of oxen. There were eight persons in the company: Thomas Lincoln and his wife; the two step-daughters and their husbands, Dennis Hanks and Levi Hall; Mrs. Lincoln's son, John Johnston; and Abraham Lincoln. The sister, Sarah Lincoln, had married Aaron Grigsby some years before, and was now dead.

Of course it was not possible for everybody to ride—for the wagon was already crowded with the beds and cooking utensils and farming tools; and so the five men *trudged*<sup>4</sup> along on foot, and sometimes the women also found it better to walk than to add their weight to the heavy load. Abraham was the *driver*<sup>5</sup>, and through *slush*<sup>6</sup> and *mire*<sup>7</sup>, with whip in hand, he *strode*<sup>8</sup> by the side of the slow-moving team, encouraging the oxen, sometimes by a word and sometimes by a sharp touch of the *lash*<sup>9</sup>.

The ground had not yet fully *thawed*<sup>10</sup> after the winter's *freezing*<sup>11</sup>. The brooks were overflowing, for the spring *freshets*<sup>12</sup> had set in. The rivers were full of floating ice. The air was damp and chilly. Sometimes the wagon sank to the *lubs*<sup>13</sup> in the *oozy*<sup>14</sup> mire, and then all hands had to lay hold and help the team lift it out. At night a camp fire was built in the woods or by the roadside, and while

---

1. 論價賣掉; 2. 家畜; 3. 一對牛; 4. 跋涉; 5. 御者; 6. 雪水; 7. 泥濘;  
8. 大步; 9. 鞭子; 10. 溶化; 11. 凍冰; 12. 泛濫; 13. 輪心; 14. 泥濘的。

田沒有付清款子就賤值定價出售了，家畜和收穫都賣去。於是在亞伯拉罕二十一歲生日的時候，各人都忙着準備長而艱苦的行程。

他們動身的時候在三月，全部家具裝進一輛四對牛拉的大車裏邊，這一夥共八人：湯姆斯林肯和他的妻子；兩個繼女和他們的丈夫，鄧尼斯亨克斯和萊惠好爾；林肯夫人的兒子，約翰約翰斯聖；和亞伯拉罕林肯。沙拉林肯姊姊數年前嫁給阿龍格立斯勃，現在已死了。

當然不能各人都乘車——因為車內已裝滿了牀，烹飪器皿和農具；於是五個男子步行，有時女人也覺得走路比較加重重量來得妥當些。亞伯拉罕做駕御者，身上沾滿泥漿，手裏拿着鞭子，在那慢步的一隊牲畜邊大步走着，鞭策着牛，有時用說話，有時把鞭重打。

地上的冬凍還沒有完全溶解，春泛已臨，溪流水溢。河滿浮冰，空氣黯淡潮濕，車輪有時陷入泥中，於是衆人都得幫着拉出它來。在晚上帳幕搭在林子裏或路旁生起火來，有的睡在車裏，有的是對着火焰躺着。誰都想像不出這一次旅行的艱苦

some slept in the wagon the others lay on the ground with their feet toward the blaze<sup>1</sup>. One can hardly think of a harder or more disagreeable journey. From Pigeon Creek to Decatur, the distance is less than two hundred miles; and yet the family were two whole weeks on the road.

John Hanks gave them a hearty welcome. The logs for the new cabin had been cut and hauled according to promise. For six sturdy<sup>2</sup> men, accustomed to such work, it was the task of only a few days to roll these logs into place, and put a roof over them. And so, long before the end of April, the Lincolns were snugly<sup>3</sup> housed in their new home near the north fork of the Sangamon River.

At this time Illinois had been a state for nearly twelve years, for it had come into the Union only two years later than Indiana. But people had been slow in going there, and thousands of fertile acres still lay unclaimed—the property of the United States government. The first settlers, strange to say, had shunned<sup>4</sup> the prairies and made their homes in the woods and groves which bordered<sup>5</sup> the larger streams. They thought that the treeless plains were, for some reason, unsuited for farming, and that for ages to come they would be used only for the pasturage<sup>6</sup> of herds and flocks.

And so, when Abraham Lincoln first went to Illinois, the state was but thinly settled, nearly all the inhabitants living in the wooded portions, or near the rivers. Most of those who occupied the southern and central parts had come from Kentucky and the neighboring states of the South. Those who lived farther north were chiefly from the New England states or New York. Among all these pioneers, life was much as we have already seen it to be

1. 火塔; 2. 強壯的; 3. 舒適地; 4. 避開; 5. 接近; 6. 放牧。

不安，從披奇盎灣到台加脫，還不到二百英里，但是一家八口費了整兩個星期在路上。

約翰亨克斯誠懇地歡迎他們新屋的木料已按照預約伐下拖過來了。六個壯漢，做慣這種工作的，只消幾天功夫就把木料排好，屋頂裝好。所以早在四月以前，林肯一家已經舒服地住在遜格們河北叉道附近的新屋裏面了。

在這個時候，伊利諾斯成爲州治已十二年，因爲它加入合衆國版圖不過在印第安拿之後兩年。但是人民移殖過去很遲，成千的地畝還無人領種——合衆國政府財產。第一批移民避開草原，在大河流周圍的叢林建築屋宇，他們以爲沒有樹的平原爲幾種原因不適於耕種，將來祇能用做牧場。

所以亞伯拉罕林肯先到伊利諾斯的時候，州邑人口稀疏，差不多居民都住在森林區域，或靠近江河。他們大部份佔有中部南部的人多數是從黎塔啓和鄰近南部各州來的。住在北邊的大概從新英格蘭或紐約來的，在這些開墾者中間，生活情形像在印第安拿的相仿，祇有少數的學堂和禮拜堂。人民習慣照

in Indiana. There were but few schools and fewer churches. The people were, as a rule, rude and *uncouth*<sup>1</sup> in *manners*<sup>2</sup>, and yet kind-hearted and *obliging*<sup>3</sup>. They seldom saw any money, and almost all their buying and selling was by *barter*<sup>4</sup>. Each family had to raise its own food and, generally, to make its own clothing. Everybody was poor; and so the Lincolns, humble though they were, found themselves no worse off than their neighbors. They began life in their new home with much hopefulness, and yet without any great expectations; for they had long ago learned to be content with little.

#### XVI. THE WINTER OF THE DEEP SNOW

Before leaving home to begin life for himself Abraham Lincoln thought it his duty to see his father well started on his new farm. For many days the grove near the cabin rang with the sound of his ax and *man*<sup>5</sup>. He was cutting down trees and splitting the logs into *rails*<sup>6</sup>. "And how he would chop!" said Dennis Hanks, long afterward. "His ax would *flash*<sup>7</sup> and *bite*<sup>8</sup> into a sugar tree or sycamore, and down it would come. If you heard him felling trees, you would think there were three men at work, they came down so fast."

With the rails he helped his father build a fence around ten acres of prairie land. Then he *yoked*<sup>9</sup> the oxen to a plow and helped him turn the *soil*<sup>10</sup> and make the field ready for the corn planting. Everything seemed now to be fairly under way, and the young man began to think of looking for work somewhere else.

---

1. 笨拙的; 2. 儀態; 3. 有禮; 4. 以物易物; 5. 木鏈; 6. 柵欄; 7. 閃耀; 8. 侵入; 9. 以繩駕牛; 10. 草土。

例是粗魯笨拙的，但是卻心地仁慈富有禮貌。他們看不見錢幣，買賣差不多都用物物交換，各家都須自己生產食物和自己裁製衣服，各人都是窮的；所以林肯家中雖是卑陋，也不比鄰人再壞些。他們生活一開始希望很大，但是卻沒有多大的期待；因為他們一向以得一些好處為滿足的。

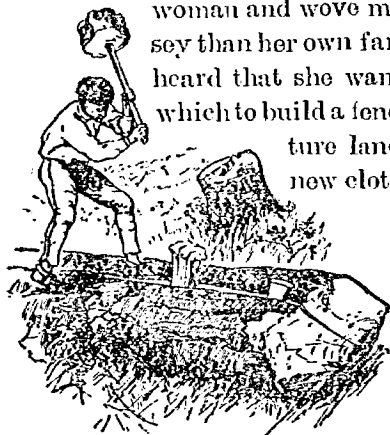
## 十六 大雪的冬季

在離家開始自營生活以前林肯就想着這是他的責任看着他的父親好好的開始他的新農場，小屋附近的林子裏用斧頭伐木丁丁的聲音響了好幾天，他砍下樹幹劈開木頭做成柵欄，“他如何的伐木呢？”好久以後，鄧尼斯亨克斯說，“他的斧頭一發光而砍入無花果樹或糖樹裏面，樹就倒下來了。倘使你聽見樹木倒下來這麼快，你要以為有三個人工作着呢。”

用了柵欄他幫助他的父親建築成一道籬笆在十畝草原地周圍，於是他駕着牛耕鬆草地以備下種。各種事情看起來進行得很好，少年就開始想到去別處找尋工作了。

He still wore the buckskin trousers that had been made for him before he was grown, and they were much too short for him. He had no clothing that was fit to be worn away from home. He had not a dollar with which to buy what he needed.

A few miles from his father's cabin there lived a woman whose name was Nancy Miller. She had a flock of sheep, and a spinning wheel, and a loom<sup>1</sup>. She was a very busy woman and wove more *jeans*<sup>2</sup> and linsy-woolsey than her own family could use. Abraham heard that she wanted some rails split with which to build a fence around a part of her pasture land. Here was a chance for new clothing. He went to see her,



and a bargain was soon made. She agreed to make him a pair of trousers "of brown jeans dyed with white walnut bark;" and he, in return, engaged to split four hundred rails,

each ten feet in length and of *convenient*<sup>3</sup> size, for each yard of jeans so used—or fourteen hundred rails in all.

And so, what with helping his father and what with doing *odd jobs*<sup>4</sup> for the neighbors, the summer passed and

another winter came. It was a winter long remembered in Illinois—the "winter of the deep snow." The snow began falling on *Christmas day*<sup>5</sup>, and in a short time it was three feet deep. Then there came a *drizzling rain*<sup>6</sup> which *froze*<sup>7</sup> as fast as it fell; the air grew

1. 織機; 2. 斜紋布; 3. 適度; 4. 雜事; 5. 耶穌誕辰; 6. 細雨; 7. 凍結。

他還是穿着長成以前的鹿皮褲，這是嫌小多了。他沒有合式的出門穿的衣服。他沒有一塊錢買他需要的東西。

離他父親的家三數里外住着一個婦人名字叫南仙密茲。她有一羣羊，一個紡車，一個布機，她是一個很忙碌的婦人，她紡織成自己家裏用不盡的斜紋布和麻毛交織的布。亞伯拉罕聽說她需要柵欄來築成一道籬笆在她牧場周圍，這是一個得到新衣的機會。他去看她，契約成立了，她合意替他做兩條棕色布的褲子，染上白胡桃樹皮顏色，相對地，用一碼布，他就替她劈四百塊木柵，每塊長十尺和適度式樣的木料——或是說總共一千四百塊木柵。

這樣，他一面幫助他父親一面替鄰人做些零雜工作，夏天過去，冬天又來了。這是在伊利諾斯記憶了好久的一個冬季——“大雪的冬季。”雪在耶穌誕辰下降，短時間就深三尺。於是接着來了一陣一下就凍結了的濃濃細雨；空氣變為嚴寒；



very cold; and the whole great *expanse*<sup>1</sup> of snow became a thick *sheet*<sup>2</sup> of ice. Many of the settlers *perished*<sup>3</sup> in the storm. To those who lived through it, the days that followed were full of distress and discomfort. The deer and other wild animals that had *hitherto*<sup>4</sup> been plentiful, died of *starvation*<sup>5</sup>, or venturing too near the homes of men they were easily *captured*<sup>6</sup> in the *treacherous*<sup>7</sup> snow.

At about the time of the final *thawing*<sup>8</sup> of the deep snow, Abraham Lincoln made the acquaintance of an adventurous young man whose name was Denton Offut. Mr. Offut was buying produce to send to New Orleans on a flatboat, and when he learned that young Lincoln had already made one trip down the river, he was anxious to engage him as a helper. As Abraham had nothing else to do, a bargain was soon made. The *crew*<sup>9</sup> consisted of<sup>10</sup> Lincoln, his cousin John Hanks, and his *stepbrother*<sup>11</sup> John Johnston, while Offut himself went along as captain. Each of the young men was to receive fifty cents a day, and if the venture proved to be a *profitable*<sup>12</sup> one, he was in the end to be given a *bonus*<sup>13</sup> of twenty dollars.

Of that second voyage down the Mississippi River little need be said. Everything seems to have *prospered*<sup>14</sup> with the little company; they reached New Orleans in safety, and the produce was sold at a good profit. While waiting for the steamboat which was to carry them homeward, the young men had time to see a good deal of the great Southern city. They visited the French quarters and also the *section*<sup>15</sup> that had been settled by the Spanish. They

1. 廣漠； 2. 片； 3. 毀滅； 4. 向來； 5. 飢餓； 6. 捕獲； 7. 浮而不實；  
8. 溶化； 9. 水手； 10. 爲……所合成； 11. 繼弟； 12. 有利的； 13. 紅利；  
14. 順利； 15. 部分。

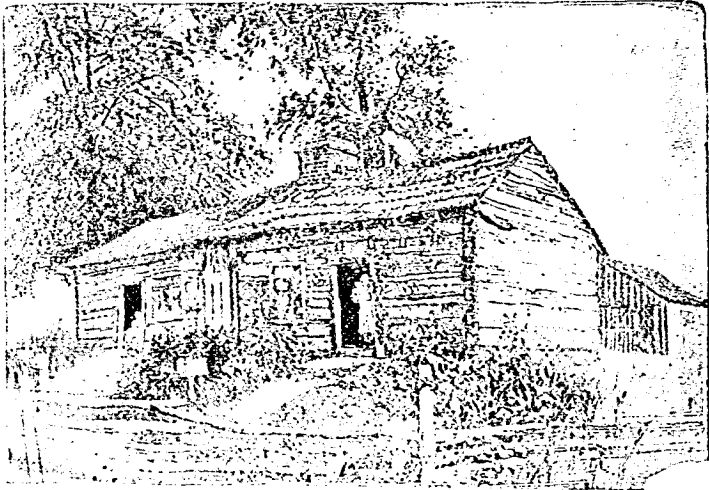
於是整個大雪地變成厚冰層，許多移民在狂風暴雨之下毀滅了。活着的在這幾天裏飽受苦痛和不安。向來繁庶成羣的鹿和野獸因飢餓而死亡；或是大膽地走近人家住宅，輕易地在浮而不實的雪層中捕獲了。

在那深雪最後溶化的時候，林肯認識了一個勇敢的少年，名字叫做鄧登奧富脫。奧富脫正買了農產物裝在一隻平底船上運到紐奧爾連斯去，他知道了少年林肯曾經從水道航行過一次下去，他就急切要他做一個助手。當時亞伯拉罕正沒有工作做，條件就成立了。水手內有林肯，他的表兄弟約翰亨克斯，他的繼弟約翰約翰斯登，奧富脫自己一同前去像船主一般。諸少年每人得五角一天的工錢，倘使這次旅程得利，他還可受二十元的紅利。

在第二次到密士失必河的航程中，很少的事情可說的。小夥伴諸事都很順利；他們平安抵達紐奧爾連斯，產物脫售得到厚利。在等候輪船回家的時候，幾個少年乘此機會遊覽南方大

spent many hours among the shipping and in the great markets. They saw negro slaves at work everywhere.

One day they attended a slave *auction*<sup>1</sup> where a number of negroes were offered for sale, like so many cattle or other *dumb*<sup>2</sup> beasts. The sight made a *strong impression*<sup>3</sup> upon the kind-hearted Lincoln. To see men and women



Thomas Lincoln's House in Coles County

*chained in gangs*<sup>4</sup>, whipped, and otherwise *cruelly treated*<sup>5</sup>, touched his tender heart. John Hanks long afterward said: "It was on this trip that Lincoln formed his *opinion of slavery*<sup>6</sup>. It *ran its iron in him*<sup>7</sup> then and there, May, 1831. I have heard him say so often."

The young men did not stay long in New Orleans. They took passage on the first steamboat that was bound

1. 拍賣； 2. 不能講話的； 3. 一種深刻的印象； 4. 用鏈鎖著； 5. 虐待；  
6. 奴隸制度的意見； 7. 刺激他很深。

城市的不少地方。他們視察法蘭西區域和西班牙人居留地，他們費了好幾點鐘在市場裏和貨運的碼頭，他們看見黑奴在各處工作着。

有一天他們注意到一樁奴隸的拍賣，在那裏一羣黑人被人販賣，像許多牛馬或不出聲的獸類一樣。這種情景使仁慈的林肯腦筋中留下一個很深的印象。看着一夥男女被成隊地用鐵鏈鎖着，鞭子抽着，殘酷地管着，觸動了他富於同情的心懷。約翰亨克斯在好久以後說：“自從這一次旅行林肯形成對奴隸制度的意見。1831年五月的那個地點和那時候，刺激他很深刻，我常常聽見他說起。”

諸少年在紐奧爾連斯留居得不久，他們乘了第一條過江的輪船，不多幾天就在聖路易斯上陸，在這裏亞伯拉罕和他繼弟離開了奧富脫經伊利諾斯草原回家。他們向湯姆斯林肯現

up the river, and in a few days landed in St. Louis. Here Abraham Lincoln and his stepbrother took their leave of Mr. Offut and started homeward across the wild prairie lands of Illinois. They walked all the way to Coles County where Thomas Lincoln was then living. For the *uneasy*<sup>1</sup> man had not been pleased with the land which John Hanks had chosen for him in the valley of the Sangamon, and so, before a year had passed, had left it and moved again.

### XVII. RUNNING A VILLAGE STORE

Toward the end of that same summer, Mr. Offut set up a little store in the town of New Salem, and *sent for*<sup>2</sup> young Lincoln to come and be his *salesman*<sup>3</sup>. New Salem was a very small place. It stood near the Sangamon River, about twelve miles below Springfield. If you should look for it on the maps in your school geography, you would not find it; for its life as a town was very brief, and there is now not a single house to show that it ever had *existence*<sup>4</sup>. In place of streets and *dwellings*<sup>5</sup>, one sees an open field and the sloping river bank overgrown with *weeds*<sup>6</sup> and bushes. In 1831, however, a mill was there, and near it was a *cluster*<sup>7</sup> of small houses. People were moving in and building, and everybody thought it was just the place for a *thriving*<sup>8</sup> town. Indeed, being close to the river where water power could be had, it had more natural advantages than Springfield which was then in the open prairie with only a small stream called Spring Creek flowing through it. New Salem was thought to be a good place for a store, and Mr. Offut perhaps never

1. 心神不定的； 2. 召； 3. 店夥； 4. 存在； 5. 住宅； 6. 蔓草； 7. 一羣，一叢； 8. 繁盛的。

時住的地方可爾走去。因為心神不定的人不到在約翰亨克斯所選定的遜格們流域地方去住着，於是不到一年，他又離了這地方到別處去了。

## 十七 村店經商

同年的夏末，奧富脫在紐賽綸鎮開設一個店舖，召少年林肯來充當店夥。紐賽綸是一個很小的地方。它位於遜格們河附近，離斯潑林非爾特約十二英里。倘使你翻開學校用的地理書的地圖來看，你找不出來的；因為它成為市鎮的生命很簡短，現時已沒有一所舊時房屋存在。在當時的街道和住宅地點上，可以看見空曠的田地和傾斜的河岸長着蔓草和雜樹。但在1831年的時候，那邊還有一個磨坊，附近還有一排小屋，人民正遷移過來建築房屋，各人都以為這個地方可以成為一個繁盛的市鎮。實在呢，因為靠近有水力的河流，比了在空曠的草原中祇有一條叫做春溪的小河流過的史潑林非爾特天然利益更多了。紐賽綸看來是宜於開店舖經商的地方，奧富脫把營業安設在那邊請亞伯拉罕林肯來管理，照他的判斷力恐怕不能

showed better *judgment*<sup>1</sup> than when he placed his business there in charge of young Abraham Lincoln.

The store soon became a place of much interest to everybody in the neighborhood. The men, while waiting for their corn to be ground at the mill, gathered there to talk about cattle and crops and the weather. The women came to buy *needles*<sup>2</sup> and thread and cheap *calico*<sup>3</sup>. They seldom had any money, and so they paid for their goods with the butter and eggs that were not needed for the *table*<sup>4</sup> at home.

The tall, *ungainly* "clerk"<sup>5</sup> who had charge of the store did not have many of the *graces*<sup>6</sup> of a gentleman, as they are commonly thought to be; for in the backwoods the *ordinary*<sup>7</sup> forms of *politeness*<sup>8</sup> were but little known. But, *awkward*<sup>9</sup> as he was, the kindness of his heart was shown in his pleasant manners to all, and he soon had many friends. He was so truthful and *trustworthy*<sup>10</sup> that the rough settlers gave him the *nickname*<sup>11</sup> of "Honest Abe" — a *title*<sup>12</sup> which he kept until the end of his life.

Many stories are told of the way in which he *distinguished*<sup>13</sup> himself during that year in the little town of Salem. He was the *peacemaker*<sup>14</sup> of the neighborhood. *Quarrels*<sup>15</sup> very often arose among the rude fellows who were in the habit of gathering at the store; and these would sometimes have ended in *bloodshed*<sup>16</sup> had it not been for young Lincoln's friendly *interference*<sup>17</sup>. He was brave and strong, and everybody respected him because he was always on the side of right and justice. And so he could stop a fight and make old enemies forget their anger when

---

1. 判斷力； 2. 針； 3. 花洋布； 4. 飯桌； 5. 笨拙的夥計； 6. 溫雅； 7. 普通的； 8. 禮貌； 9. 粗魯的； 10. 可信託的； 11. 外號； 12. 稱號； 13. 顯著出； 14. 和事人； 15. 爭執； 16. 流血； 17. 干涉。

再好的了。

這個舖子不久就成左近的人視為有興味的地方。人們拿了麥放在磨坊裏碾成粉，在等候碾完的時候，說聚集在那裏閒談牲畜和收穫和天時。婦人們到這裏來買針，線和便宜的花布。他們差不多沒有現錢，因此他們把家裏用不着的牛油和雞蛋等食品償付物價。

笨拙的高個子夥計沒有多少紳士型的文雅態度，像一般人平常想像的；因為在半開墾的地方普通的禮貌是人們所不注意的。但他外表是不雅觀，而對人和藹的態度顯出心地仁慈的，所以立刻有了許多的朋友。他這樣的率真和可靠，粗魯的移民給他一個“誠實的亞伯”的外號——他保持這個外號一直到生命的最後。

那一年，在養綸鎮上，他顯露頭角的故事脛炙人口。他是鄰近一帶的和事老。在習慣於借這店舖作集合處的粗魯鄉人中間，爭論常常發生，如其沒有少年林肯的干涉，就要以流血結束的。他是強健而勇敢，因為他總站在公正的一方面，人們都尊敬他。所以在沒有人能使兩者聽從的時候，他能夠一刻兒便止息鬭爭，使仇人釋怨修好。年輕的暴徒至少一而再地躍



no other man would have been listened to for a moment. Twice, at least, he was forced to *defend*<sup>1</sup> himself against young *bullies*<sup>2</sup> who were anxious to try his *mettle*<sup>3</sup>. But when he had punished them as they deserved, he at once made friends with them and showed them that he *bore*<sup>4</sup> them no ill-will. He had none of the bad habits that were so common among the young men in the new settlements. He did not use *tobacco*<sup>5</sup>, or drink strong liquor, or *bet on cards*<sup>6</sup>, or *impose*<sup>7</sup> upon the weak and helpless, or quarrel with those who tried to *wrong*<sup>8</sup> him. But he was in every way a manly young man, and *withal*<sup>9</sup> so just and true that both the rude and the gentle respected and loved him.

I have said that there was not much money in the West at that time. There were households where hardly so much as a dollar was seen in a whole year. When anything was bought at the store, it was paid for in some kind of produce—it might be in corn, or wool, or goose feathers, or butter, or eggs, or live fowls, or *smoked meat*<sup>10</sup>, or any other of the many things that could be *spared*<sup>11</sup> from the farm. The little money that passed from hand to hand was not much like that which we see nowadays. Nearly all the silver pieces were of Spanish *coinage*<sup>12</sup>. One of the most common of these was the Spanish *half real*<sup>13</sup>, which the settlers called a “*fi p*”<sup>14</sup> and which was worth about six cents. Another piece, worth twice as much, was called a “*levy*”<sup>15</sup>.

One day a *customer*<sup>16</sup> came into Mr. Offut's store and bought some goods for which he paid cash. After he

1. 防護；2. 士氣，暴徒；3. 勇氣，火性；4. 對；5. 菸草；6. 賭紙牌；7. 欺侮；8. 損害；9. 同時，並且；10. 薰肉；11. 節省；12. 錢幣；13. 半元幣；14. five pence 的縮寫，即五辨士；15. eleven pence 的縮寫，即十一辨士；16. 顧客。

躍欲試冒犯他才迫得他動手自衛。但是當他罰了他們應受的責罰以後，立即對他們親善表示他對他們並無惡感。在新殖民地的少年所有的許多惡習慣他是沒有的。他不抽煙，不飲酒，不賭牌，不欺凌弱者，也不同損害他的人爭論。他在各方面卻是個勇敢誠實的人，並且公正率真使粗魯和溫良的人都喜歡他。

我已經說過在西部錢幣沒有多少。有的家庭裏一年到頭連一塊錢都很少見。在店舖裏買東西，用來付錢的是農產物——也許穀類，或是羊毛，或是鵝毛，或是牛油，雞蛋，或活的家禽，或燻肉，或是別種農場裏節省下來的東西，少數流通的錢幣不同我們現在看見的一樣。差不多所有的銀子是西班牙錢幣。最普通的一種是西班牙的半塊幣，移民都稱它為“費滾，”五辨士，約值六分，另一種價值大二倍，稱“來維”即十一辨士。

有一天一個顧客到奧富脫店裏來買了東西，付的是現錢。

had gone home, young Lincoln noticed that a mistake had been made and that the customer had given him a tip too much. All day long that little silver piece was in his thoughts; and as soon as he could close the store in the evening, he started off on a walk of several miles across the prairie, to *restore*<sup>1</sup> the coin to its rightful owner. At another time when he was just closing the store for the night a woman came in to buy a half pound of tea. He had already blown out the candle, and rather than relight it, he *felt around*<sup>2</sup> in the darkness and weighed the tea without seeing it. The next morning when he came to the store he saw by the weight which was still in the *scale*<sup>3</sup> that he had given the woman only half enough. He could not rest until he had weighed out the remaining quarter of a pound and carried it to her.

While working for Mr. Offut he did not *neglect*<sup>4</sup> the studies which he felt would sometime be of use to him. He had heard that in order to speak and write correctly, one should understand the rules of grammar. He had never seen a *text-book*<sup>5</sup> on English grammar, and he asked the schoolmaster at New Salem if he knew where such a book could be *obtained*<sup>6</sup>.

“There is a man halfway between here and Springfield who used to teach school down East,” was the answer. “He has an old copy of Kirkham’s Grammar, and I am sure that he would lend it to you.”

“But do you think that I could understand it without the help of a teacher?”

“I am quite sure that you can. With hard study and a good *memory*<sup>7</sup> any one can learn all the rules in it.”

---

1. 歸還; 2. 四圍摸索; 3. 度數; 4. 荒廢; 5. 教科書; 6. 得到 7. 記憶力。

他回家以後，少年林肯注意列那個顧客弄錯了，多付了一個費潑。他把這一個小銀錢一整天記在心上，黃昏時店門關了以後他步行幾英里經過草原，把錢幣歸還原主。另一次他晚上，剛關好店門，一個婦人來買半磅茶葉。他早已吹熄了燭，不願再點起，便在暗中摸索稱給她。第二天早晨他到店裏一看，昨天稱的碼子他祇給了婦人一半的分量。他心中不安，一直到他重新稱了一半帶給她才能。

在替奧富脫工作的時候，他一有餘暇絕不荒廢讀書。他曾聽說要使說話和寫作準確，必須明白文法。他沒有望見過英文法課本，他就問紐賽綸的學校教師他能否得到這樣的一本書。

答復是，在從此地到斯潑林非爾特的半路上有一個人他常常到東方學校裏去教書。他有一本凱克亨氏文法的藍本子，我可以斷定他會借給你的。”

“但是你想我沒有老師幫助能够懂嗎？”

“我斷定你能够的。不論何人能勤讀再有良好的記憶力，可以熟讀所有的規例。”

“Well, I think I have a good memory, and I guess I can study pretty hard,” said Lincoln; “and so I will see what I can do.”

That very night he set out to borrow the book, and after a walk of twelve miles returned with it under his arm. For several days he kept it close by him, and whenever there was a *leisure*<sup>1</sup> moment he was studying from its pages. In a short time he had learned all the rules by heart, but he found that he still made mistakes in the use of language. It was only by taking great pains with his speech, and by trying very hard all the time, that he was at last able to *avoid*<sup>2</sup> most of these *errors*<sup>3</sup> and to use really good English both in talking and in writing.

Mr. Offut did not prove to be a successful business man. He undertook too many ventures, and lost money. In a few months the store at New Salem had to be closed, and Abraham Lincoln was again *looking for employment*<sup>4</sup>.

### XVIII. UP IN BLACK HAWK'S COUNTRY

In the valley of the Rock River in northern Illinois there once lived a *tribe*<sup>5</sup> of Indians called the Sacs. Their neighbors and *kinsfolk*<sup>6</sup> were the Fox Indians; and all had lived so long in that beautiful region that they had come to love it just as we, who think ourselves more civilized, love the land of our birth. But there were white people who saw that the hunting grounds and cornfields of these Indians *included*<sup>7</sup> some of the richest farming lands in the world. “What a pity,” they said, “that such fine lands should remain in the possession of *savages*<sup>8</sup>!”

The Indians did not want to part with their lands, but

1. 閒暇; 2. 避; 3. 錯誤; 4. 找事; 5. 族, 部落; 6. 親屬; 7. 包含; 8. 野蠻人。

“好，想我有良好的記憶力，我自揣我能勤讀；我就看我能夠怎麼樣。”林肯說：

最近的一個晚上他出去借這本當，走了十二英里他在臂膀下挾了回來了。他放在近旁幾天，一得些閒暇就讀幾頁。短時間內他讀熟了全部的規例，但是他在語言上還發生錯誤。他祇在講話上用了辛勤的功夫，最後他竟能免去大部份的錯誤，在言語和文字兩方面都能應用真正良好的英文。

奧富脫證明不是一個成功的商人。他太冒險了，以致賠了本，幾個月裏邊在紐賽綸的舖子關了門，亞伯拉罕林肯就另找位置了。

## 十八 上黑好克的家鄉

北伊利諾斯的洛克河流域曾經住着一族叫做撒克斯的印第安人。他們的鄰居和近親是佛克斯印第安人；他們住在美麗的區域這麼長久，就像文明自居的我們，愛着我們生長於斯的領土一樣，也愛着他們的領土。但是有的白人見了這塊狩獵和種植五穀地內有全世界最富的農場，他們說“這樣美好的地方還留在野蠻人手裏多麼可惜啊！”

they were so hard pressed by the white men that they could not long *resist*<sup>1</sup>. Finally some of the *braves*<sup>2</sup>, while half-drunk with strong liquor, were persuaded to make a *treaty*<sup>3</sup> with the United States, agreeing to give up their old hunting grounds in *exchange*<sup>4</sup> for a *reservation*<sup>5</sup> on the western side of the Mississippi. Many of the people were unwilling to leave their homes, and it was not until force was threatened, that all were persuaded to remove across the river.

One of the leading men among the Sacs was a brave *warrior*<sup>6</sup> called Black Hawk. He was then more than sixty years old, and he had always been *opposed*<sup>7</sup> to selling the lands. He said that the braves did not know what they were doing when they made the treaty, and that it was not right for the whites to take advantage of them. He was much dissatisfied with the new home to which his people

1852 had been removed, and his heart was filled with *bitterness*<sup>8</sup> because of the wrongs they had *suffered*<sup>9</sup>. After remaining quiet for some months, he *put himself at the head*<sup>10</sup> of a *band*<sup>11</sup> of Sacs and Foxes, and *recrossed*<sup>12</sup> the Mississippi. When asked what he meant to do, he answered, "We are going into the Rock River valley to plant corn in the fields that are still our own." Some of his followers were hard to *control*<sup>13</sup>. They *scattered*<sup>14</sup> here and there, burning farmhouses and killing the white people that came in their way. There was a company of United States *troops*<sup>15</sup> at Rock Island, but they were too few to fight against so large a force of savages. The whole state was *alarmed*<sup>16</sup>, and the *governor*<sup>17</sup> hastened

1. 抵抗； 2. 北美印第安戰士； 3. 條約； 4. 交換； 5. 留為專用之公地；  
6. 戰士； 7. 反對； 8. 痛苦； 9. 忍受； 10. 他自為領袖； 11. 隊； 12. 重返；  
13. 控制，管理； 14. 散佈； 15. 軍隊； 16. 震驚； 17. 省長，州長。

印第安人不願讓出他們的土地，但是他們被白人壓迫得這樣厲害，竟不能長久抵抗下去了。最後有幾個戰士，飲酒微醺，被說服同合衆國訂約放棄他們的舊獵地，交換密士失必河以西的一塊留給他們專用的公地。許多人不願意離家，直待受到強力壓迫，始全體被勸遷移過河。

在撒克斯領導人中間有一個戰士叫做黑好克斯。他那時候已六十多歲，反對出賣土地。他說勇士們在訂約的時候不知道他們做的什麼，白人佔他們的便宜是不應該的。他很不滿意他們的人遷移去的新居，他因為他們受到損害痛憤填膺。經數月的靜寂，他領率一隊撒克斯和福克斯人，重越密士失必河。人家問他幹什麼的時候，他回答說，“我們到洛克河流域種田去，那地方還是我們自己的啊。”他的從人中有些人是難駕馭的。他們四散奔突，到處焚燒田舍殺戮白人。洛克島上有一幫合衆國軍隊，但是他們人數太少不能抵抗大批蠻人。於是全州



to call for *volunteers*<sup>1</sup> to help drive the Indians back to their own place.

It was only a few days after the closing of Mr. Offut's store that the governor's call was made public; and Abraham Lincoln, having nothing else to do, *enlisted*<sup>2</sup> at once. Several other young men in the neighborhood also volunteered, and a *company*<sup>3</sup> was formed.

One of the first things to do, after they had come together, was to *elect*<sup>4</sup> officers. There were two *candidates*<sup>5</sup> for captain, Abraham Lincoln and an older man whose name was Kirkpatrick. The word was passed round: "Let all who want Lincoln for captain follow him to the left hand side of the road; and let all who would rather have Kirkpatrick stand on the right hand side of the road."

It was an *odd*<sup>6</sup> kind of election; but when all had taken their stand it was found that there were twice as many men on Lincoln's side as on Kirkpatrick's. This was Abraham Lincoln's first success in public life. Thirty years later, when he was president of the United States, he was heard to say that no other victory of his life had ever brought with it so much satisfaction.

Captain Lincoln and his company marched across the state toward the place where the Indians were making trouble. They were ordered into camp on the banks of the Mississippi, and there they remained, waiting for a boat that was to carry them up the river. The young men who had thus come together from the groves and prairie farms were an *uncouth set*<sup>7</sup> of fellows, very rough and rude and hard to control; and Captain Lincoln had enough to do to keep them in any kind of order. He took part in their

---

1. 志願兵團, 義勇軍; 2. 投軍; 3. 隊伍; 4. 選舉; 5. 候選人; 6. 奇; 7. 異樣。

震動，省長急急召集志願兵團來幫助驅逐印第安人回到他們自己的地方去。

省長募集令公布在奧富脫的店關門之後沒有幾天；亞伯拉罕林肯正沒有事做，就立即加入。另外幾個鄰近的少年也編進去，一個隊伍就成立了。

一件先決的事情要辦的就是推選軍官。隊長的候選人有二位，亞伯拉罕林肯和還有一個年歲較長的人名叫凱克派卻立克，這句話在四周圍喊過來：“主張林肯做隊長的人跟他到左邊；讓主張凱克派卻立克的站到右邊。”

這是一個新奇的選舉法；但是各人站好地位時看出在林肯一邊的要比凱克派卻立克一邊的多兩倍。這是亞伯拉罕林肯政治生活的第一次勝利。三十年以後，他被舉為大總統後，人家聽見他說他終身沒有比這一次再滿意的勝利了。

林肯隊長帶了他的隊伍越過州邑向印第安人騷擾的地方進行。他們奉令在密士失必河濱紮營，留在那裏候船渡河。從森林裏面草原裏會集一般少年都是異樣的漢子，很粗率而難駕馭的；林肯使他們守秩序很費勁。他參加他們的競賽，得到

games, and won their respect by being the hardest *hitter*<sup>1</sup> and with one *exception*<sup>2</sup> the best wrestler in the company.

One day a poor, half-starved Indian came into the camp. He had with him a letter from General Cass, saying that he was friendly to the whites and could be trusted. But he did not show the letter at first. The soldiers ran toward him.

"Kill the Indian!" they cried. "He is a *spy*<sup>3</sup>."

Then the Indian help up his letter; and some one, *snatching*<sup>4</sup> it from him, read it aloud.

"It's a *forgery*<sup>5</sup>," shouted some of the rude fellows. "General Cass didn't write it."

"Shoot him!" cried still others. "He is like all the savages, and who ever heard of one that could be trusted!"

"Yes!" said a *burly*<sup>6</sup> Kentuckian. "Think of the women and children the dog has murdered."

"Shoot him we will!" answered many rough voices; and a dozen *muskets*<sup>7</sup> were *leveled*<sup>8</sup> toward him.

"No, you won't shoot him!" said Captain Lincoln, stepping between the Indian and his angry foes. "He is under my protection, and the first man that touches him dies!"

One by one the *weapons*<sup>9</sup> were lowered, and the *grumbling*<sup>10</sup> soldiers walked *sullenly*<sup>11</sup> away. A man who was present said long afterward that never in his life had he seen Lincoln "so roused over anything."

Days passed, and the boat did not arrive. Finally the time for which the company had *enlisted*<sup>12</sup> *expired*<sup>13</sup>. Most of the men had had enough of soldiering and were glad to make *excuses*<sup>14</sup> and hurry home. But the Indians were still on the war path, and Lincoln was no sooner *mustered*<sup>15</sup>

1. 拳擊家; 2. 破格; 3. 奸細; 4. 攫取; 5. 偽造物; 6. 暴燥; 7. 毛瑟槍; 8. 瞄準; 9. 兵器; 10. 咆哮; 11. 悻悻; 12. 徵募; 13. 滿期; 14. 寬免; 15. 開兵。

他們的尊敬爲了自己是一個最猛的拳擊家，和一隊中獨一的最優勝的角力者。

有一天一個可憐而瀕於餓斃的印第安人到營幕前來。他帶來一封喀斯將軍寄來的信，說他同白人親善而是可信託的人。但是他先不拿出這一封信。兵士們跑到他前面去。

他們喊道，“打死他，他是一個奸細。”

於是印第安人獻上書信；有人搶過來，高聲誦讀。

“這是偽造的，”有幾個粗人喊道，“喀斯將軍不合寫這封信。”

“用鎗打死他，”另外幾個人喊道，“他像別的蠻人一樣的，誰聽說他們有一個可靠的？”

“是的！”一個粗野的墨塔啓人說，想想婦孺們都給這個狗屠戮了。”

“我們要打死他！”幾聲粗暴的聲音回答着；一打短鎗瞄準着他。

“不，你們不准用鎗打他”林肯隊長說，站到印第安人和他憤怒的仇敵中間。“他是在我的保護之下，誰第一個觸及他就得死。”

兵器一般般放下來，咆哮的兵士快快地走開了。有一個在場的人好久以後說他一生從來見過林肯這樣高抬在一切之上。

日子一天天過去，渡船不來。到最後隊伍緝集的時間滿期

out than he *reenlisted*<sup>1</sup> as a *private*<sup>2</sup> in another company. This new company was known as the "*Independent Spy Battalion of Mounted Rangers*<sup>3</sup>," and it soon went into camp on the banks of Rock River not far from where the city of Dixon, Illinois, now stands. To this camp came other soldiers, some of whom, then unknown, were *destined*<sup>4</sup> to become famous in the history of their country. Among these were Zachary Taylor, a *lieutenant colonel*<sup>5</sup> who seventeen years later was to be President of the United States. With him was Jefferson Davis, a *lieutenant*<sup>6</sup>, who thirty years later was to be President of the *Confederate States of America*<sup>7</sup>. It is not at all likely that Abraham Lincoln, the *raw-boned*<sup>8</sup> *recruit*<sup>9</sup> from the Sangamon, ever received so much as a *passing glance*<sup>10</sup> from these fine officers whose birth and station were so much above his own. But among the volunteers he was well known for his courage and *good humor*<sup>11</sup>, and he was long afterward remembered as the best story-teller, and on all accounts the best soldier, in the Spy Battalion.

But he was to have no chance to show his bravery on the field of battle. Before the Spy Battalion had reached the place where the enemy was supposed to be, and before Abraham Lincoln had seen a single *hostile*<sup>12</sup> Indian, the war was ended. In July a part of the army had fallen upon Black Hawk's camp on the *bluffs*<sup>13</sup> of the Wisconsin, and *defeated*<sup>14</sup> his warriors with great *slaughter*<sup>15</sup>. Those who escaped fled toward the Mississippi, anxious now

1. 重入； 2. 兵卒； 3. 騎兵獨立偵探營； 4. 預定； 5. 代理團長； 6. 中尉； 7. 美利堅聯邦國（按 U. S. A. 係美國之正式縮略，此乃南北戰爭時美利堅南部各省所組織之聯盟）； 8. 骨瘦如柴； 9. 新兵； 10. 匆遽一瞥； 11. 幽默，詼諧； 12. 對敵的； 13. 峭壁； 14. 打斃； 15. 慘殺。

了。多數人過够了軍隊生活，很喜歡乘此解脫而急急回家，但印第安人還是在戰場上，林肯遣散後隨即編入另一隊裏當一個兵。新的隊伍稱爲“騎兵獨立偵緝營，”立即開入洛克河岸，離現在的狄克遜，伊利諾斯地方不遠。另外一批兵士當初不爲人知道的，到這營幕裏來了，他們中間有幾個人預定在國史上成爲著名人物。他們中間有一個柴恰立泰雷代理團長，十七年後成爲合衆國大總統。和他在一起的還有一個傑弗遜大衛斯中尉，三十年後成爲美利堅聯盟國的總統。亞伯拉罕林肯以一個從遜格們來的骨瘦如柴的新兵或者不見得受這幾個出身和地位遠在他之上的高級官吏所忽視。但在志願兵中間他以勇敢滑稽著稱；他好久以後還被人記憶爲一個最會講故事的人，也在偵緝營中在各方面都稱爲最良好的兵士。

但是他在戰地上沒有機會顯出他的勇敢。在偵緝營開到假定的敵人所在地，和亞伯拉罕林肯看見一個對敵的印第安人以前，戰事就結束了。在七月裏一部份軍隊攻擊威士康新山的黑好克的軍營，戰敗了他，誅殺無算。漏網的向密士失必

above all things to cross it, and return to their reservation. But they were *overtaken*<sup>1</sup> at Bad Axe on the eastern shore of the great river, and in the bloody scene which followed, nearly all of them were *barbarously slain*<sup>2</sup>.

Black Hawk escaped with his life, but was *captured*<sup>3</sup> a few days later. He was taken to Washington, and on the way was *exhibited*<sup>4</sup> in many of the Northern cities. When at last the fearless old man stood before President Jackson, he made a little speech which will never be forgotten.

"I am a man," he said, "and you are another. I did not expect to *conquer*<sup>5</sup> the white people. I took up the *hatchet*<sup>6</sup> to *avenge injuries*<sup>7</sup> which could no longer be borne. Had I borne them longer, my people would have said: 'Black Hawk is a *squaw*<sup>8</sup>, he is too old to be a chief; he is no Sac.' This caused me to raise the war *whoop*<sup>9</sup>. I say no more of it; all is known to you."

Thus ended the last Indian war in that part of our country between the Mississippi and the Alleghanies. Step by step the red men had disputed the westward march of civilization; step by step the white men had driven them from their hunting grounds and taken possession of their lands. And now in all that region there remained scarcely a spot which the Indian could truthfully claim as his own.

The war being over, the volunteer soldiers were of course discharged. The Independent Spy Battalion was *mustered*<sup>10</sup> out by a young officer of the United States army, Lieutenant Robert Anderson—famous twenty-nine years later as the commander of Fort Sumter when the

1. 迫及； 2. 殘忍地殺害； 3. 俘獲； 4. 展覽； 5. 征服； 6. 斧頭； 7. 報復損害； 8. 美洲印第安人婦女之稱； 9. 印第安人臨戰之吶喊聲； 10. 閱兵。

逃亡，慌忙渡河奔向巢穴。但是他們在大河東岸拔特愛克斯地方被追及，血戰又起，幾全數殲滅。

黑好克僅以身免，但數日後仍被俘獲。他被解到華盛頓，一路在北部城市供人展覽。最後在傑克遜總統面前，他作了幾句簡短的永遠不會被人忘記的演辭。

他說，“我是一個人，你是另一個。我不希望征服白人。我拿了斧頭報復不能再忍耐下去的損害。倘使我繼續忍耐，我的人民要說：黑好克是山巒婦人；他太老耄無用，不能充當領袖；他不能算是一個撒克人’。這使我奮起吶喊廝殺。我沒有別的話可說的；你們都知道了。”

這樣就結束了最後我國在密士失必和阿萊公尼之間，一部分地方征印第安的戰事，紅人一步步紛爭文明西進的路；白人一步步把他們驅逐出他們的狩獵區而佔有他們的土地。現今全部區域內印第安人不易覺得一塊可稱為自己的土地了。

戰事已過，志願兵解散。獨立偵緝營受國軍青年軍官洛勃脫安台生副官——二十九年後內戰開始時以聖脫職台司令開



first shot was fired in the Civil War. Abraham Lincoln, with one companion, set out for home, walking most of the way from the Rock River valley to New Salem.

### XIX. ELECTION—BUT NOT OF ABRAHAM LINCOLN

When Lincoln arrived at the little town on the Sangamon, everybody was glad to see him and anxious to shake hands with him. In ten days an election was to be held, and the people of the district were to choose a man to *represent*<sup>1</sup> them in the *legislature*<sup>2</sup>. Young Lincoln had already *announced*<sup>3</sup> that he would be a candidate; and now all his old neighbors joined in *urging*<sup>4</sup>; others to *vote*<sup>5</sup> for him.

It was the custom for all the candidates to make speeches at different places in the district, and to explain what they would do for the people in case they should be elected. The election being so close at hand, there was but little time for Abraham Lincoln to prepare for *speechmaking*<sup>6</sup>, but he entered into the *contest*<sup>7</sup> with great *energy*<sup>8</sup> and spirit.

On the very next day after his return, there was a public sale of pigs and cattle at a crossroad, twelve miles from Springfield, and at its close there was to be a great political meeting. All the farmers and *stock raisers*<sup>9</sup> for miles around were there, and the talk of the day was divided between cattle and politics. A platform had been built for the speakers, and on it was placed a long bench for the candidates to sit upon. Lawyers were there from Springfield, and *emancipated*<sup>10</sup> young men from other towns. The crowd was a rude and *boisterous*<sup>11</sup> one; few of the men

---

1. 代表; 2. 議院; 3. 宣佈; 4. 慫恿; 5. 投票; 6. 演說辭; 7. 競爭;  
8. 力氣; 9. 牧畜家; 10. 精明幹練; 11. 喧鬧的。

名——檢閱遺散。亞伯拉罕林肯同一幫人回家，行經洛基河流，感到紐賽給開路程的大半。

## 十九 選舉——但不是林肯當選

林肯到了遜格們上邊的小鎮上。各人都喜歡見他同他握手。十天裏邊選舉就要舉行了，在那一區域的人應當舉出一個人來作他們在議會的代表。少年林肯早已宣布他要做候選人；現在他的舊鄰都聯合起來慫恿別人投他的票。

按習慣所有的代表候選人都得在一地的各處演說，解說他們當選後要替人民做什麼事。選舉期快到了，但是亞伯拉罕林肯祇有很短的時間預備演說辭；但是他用極大的力量和精神參加競選。

他回家後第二天，十字路上有牲畜公賣，離斯潑林非爾特十二英里，近旁有一個政治集合。所有數英里內的農人和牧畜家全都在場。這一天的議論集中於牲畜和政治問題。又築了一座演講壇，壇上面放了一排長櫈預備候選人坐。從斯潑林非爾特來的律師，還有從別的市鎮上來的幹練少年。這幫人衆是粗

wore coats, and many were barefooted. They were not likely to look with favor upon a candidate dressed in broadcloth and fine linen.

Abraham Lincoln was the last to make a speech. He stood up on the platform, and his appearance at once gained the respect of the farmers. He was a *gawky*<sup>1</sup>, rough-looking fellow, six feet and four inches tall. He wore a loose coat made of coarse blue jeans, a pair of home-made trousers that were at least six inches too short, and *cowhide*<sup>2</sup> boots that had seen much *tramping*<sup>3</sup> through the black mud of the prairies. Looking straight at his audience, he began:—

“Gentlemen and Fellow-citizens: I *presume*<sup>4</sup> you all know who I am. I am humble Abraham Lincoln. I have been *solicited*<sup>5</sup> by many friends to become a candidate for the legislature. My politics are short and sweet. I am in favor of a national bank; am in favor of the *internal-improvement system*<sup>6</sup> and a *high protective tariff*<sup>7</sup>. These are my *sentiments*<sup>8</sup> and political principles. If elected, I shall be thankful; if not, it will be all the same.”

This was Abraham Lincoln's first political speech. During the week which followed he spoke at Springfield and perhaps at other places, but there is no *record*<sup>9</sup> of what he said. The district was a very large one, and as it was impossible for him to see every voter, he sent out a *handbill*<sup>10</sup> to tell the people what they might expect from him if he should be elected. In this handbill he said:—

“I am young, and unknown to many of you. I was born and have ever remained in the most humble *walks*<sup>11</sup>

1. 儀架的; 2. 牛皮; 3. 踐踏; 4. 假定; 5. 懇求; 6. 改進內政; 7. 高度保護稅則; 8. 理想; 9. 記錄; 10. 傳單; 11. 範圍; 行爲。

野而喧鬧的；祇有少數人穿外掛，許多人光着腳。他們大概看不慣一個候選人穿着細布和寬博的衣服。

亞伯拉罕林肯是最後發言的。他站到講壇上，他的外表立即得到農民們的推崇。他是一個笨拙粗陋的漢子，身材六尺四寸高。他身穿鬆鬆的粗藍斜紋布褂子，手製的外袴至少嫌短六寸，一雙牛皮鞋，看起來是在草地上泥漿中踐踏過很多時候的。正視着他的聽衆，他開始演說：

“諸位同胞：我擅自以爲你們都認識我是誰，我是微賤的亞伯拉罕林肯。許多朋友教我做議會候選人。我的政治主張簡短而溫和。我主張國家銀行；主張改進內政和高度保護稅則。這些是我的政治理想和原則，倘使當選了，我很感謝；否則也是一樣的。”

這是亞伯拉罕林肯的第一次政治演說。隨後的幾個星期他在斯潑林非爾特或是別的地方演說，但是他說的什麼沒有記錄。區域很廣大，他不能見到每一個投票人，他就散發一種傳單告訴人民，倘他當選可以向他希望些什麼。在這傳單裏面他說：—

“我年輕，你們多數不知道我的。我有生以來一向的生活

of life. I have no wealthy or powerful *relations*<sup>1</sup> or friends to *recommend*<sup>2</sup> me. My case is thrown *exclusive*<sup>3</sup> upon the independent voters of the county; and, if elected, they will have *conferred*<sup>4</sup> a favor upon me for which I shall be *unremitting*<sup>5</sup> in my labors to *compensate*<sup>6</sup>. But if the good people in their wisdom shall see fit to keep me in the background, I have been too *familiar*<sup>7</sup> with *disappointments*<sup>8</sup> to be very much *chagrined*<sup>9</sup>."

Election day came, and every man in New Salem, whether *Democrat*<sup>10</sup> or *Whig*<sup>11</sup>, voted for Abraham Lincoln. But when the *ballots*<sup>12</sup> in Springfield and the *remote townships*<sup>13</sup> were counted, it was found that he had been defeated. Since this was the first time that his name had been put before the people, he had not hoped for much, and so he was not "very much chagrined." Indeed, he was only twenty-three years old, and what need had he to feel discouraged?

During the next few months he was busy in many ways. He thought of becoming a blacksmith, and was casting about for a place to set up his shop, when he was persuaded to buy the half of a little store in New Salem. He had not a dollar with which to pay for it, but his honesty was so well known that his *notes*<sup>14</sup> were believed to be as good as money. This venture was, however, an unlucky one. His *partner*<sup>15</sup> proved to be a worthless fellow, who *mismanaged*<sup>16</sup> the business and spent everything for liquor. In a very short time the store was closed, and Lincoln was left *responsible*<sup>17</sup> for the notes which he had given. It was

1. 親戚； 2. 介紹； 3. 惟一； 4. 賜； 5. 不懈； 6. 酬報； 7. 熟於； 8. 失意； 9. 煩惱； 10. 民主黨員； 11. 自由黨員； 12. 選舉票； 13. 遠市區； 14. 借據； 15. 夥計； 16. 管理不當； 17. 擔認。

範圍是最低微的。我沒有資產和有權勢的親友替我介紹。我祇依靠本區內單獨的投票人；倘使我當選了，他們賜予我的厚意我要努力不懈的工作以爲報答。但是倘使善意的衆人高見要把我放在後面，我惟習於失意而安之若素而已。

選舉期到了，紐賽綸的人，不論民主黨員或自由黨員，都投亞伯拉罕林肯的票。但是把斯潑林非爾特和別處遠的市鎮的投票都算進，他失敗了。因爲這是第一次他名字放在衆人前面，他不存奢望，所以也不怎麼樣煩悶。現在，他祇有二十三歲，他又何須灰心失望呢？

在此後的幾個月內他在好幾方面忙着。他想做一個鐵匠，正在找一個地方開舖子，人家勸他買了紐賽綸鎮上一家小店面的一半。他沒有一塊錢付這筆款，但是他的誠實是出名的，所以他的借據是同金錢一樣受人信用。但是這一次的事業是不幸的。他的夥計是不可靠的人，這人管理不當把錢都浪費在喝酒上，因此短期內這舖子就關門了，而林肯要擔負他所立的

six years before this debt was entirely settled, and within that time he had many a hard *struggle*<sup>1</sup>; but in the end every cent was paid.

## XX. "LAW, SIR, LAW!"

Ever since he had attended that famous trial in Indiana, Abraham Lincoln had *cherished*<sup>2</sup> an ambition to become a lawyer. Whether he was poling a flatboat down the Mississippi, or splitting rails in the woods, or selling pins and calico to the farmers' wives, or leading his

1833



little company of Illinois volunteers, he had always this thing in mind. About the time he was trying to be a storekeeper he happened to visit Springfield, and there he bought a *second-hand copy*<sup>3</sup> of Blackstone's "*Commentaries*<sup>4</sup>." This work, as you may know, has been for more than a *century*<sup>5</sup> the *standard authority*<sup>6</sup> on English com-

mon law, and it is one of the first books that a young law student is expected to *master*<sup>7</sup>. The copy which Lincoln bought was old and worn, but it was complete, and he carried it home as he would a precious treasure. Every moment that he could snatch from other duties was now given to the study of this volume, and within a few weeks

1. 奮鬥; 2. 懷抱; 3. 舊書; 4. 註釋; 5. 世紀; 6. 標準權威作; 7. 精通。

借據。費了六年纔把債還清，而在這個時期他刻苦奮鬥；結果每一分錢都清償了。

## 二〇 “法律,先生,法律”

自從聽過在印第安拿舉行的那一次有名的審判，亞伯拉罕 林肯懷抱一種做律師的志願。他不論在撐船下密士失必或在樹林裏劈木頭，或賣針線布疋給農人的妻子，或領導伊利諾斯的小隊志願兵的時候，他總把這件事放在心上。在預備做一個店主的時候，他到了斯潑林非爾特，在那裏他買了一本勃拉克 斯東氏“法律釋義”的舊本子。這本書，你們可以知道，被視為英吉利普通法律的標準權威作，有一世紀以上之久。那是青年學法律者希望貫通第一本應當讀的書。林肯買的這本是舊的，但却是完全的，他帶到家去，視為寶藏。他只要在做別事時取得一刻餘暇，就乘閒讀它，在幾個星期中他就熟習了這本



he had mastered all that was in it. But the knowledge thus gained only made him *eager*<sup>1</sup> for more. If he only had the necessary books, how much he might learn! If he only had money, how soon would the books be *forthcoming*<sup>2</sup>!

He was thinking of this one day when he remembered that, in the soldiers' camp on Rock River, he had met and become acquainted with a young lawyer whose name was John T. Stuart. This Mr. Stuart lived in Springfield, and was said to have a very good *library*<sup>3</sup>. Perhaps he would lend a volume now and then. No sooner had this thought come into Lincoln's mind than he put on his hat and started to walk to Springfield to see his friend.

Mr. Stuart was very kind. "Certainly," he said. "You are welcome not only to a volume, but to every volume in my library;" and then he gave some very *sensible advice*<sup>4</sup> about the best books to be read and the order in which they should be studied. When young Lincoln began his long walk homeward that evening he held an open book in his hand; and before he had reached New Salem he had mastered thirty or forty pages of it.

After the *failure*<sup>5</sup> of the store he supported himself by doing any odd jobs that he could find. Sometimes he shouldered his ax and went out to the woods to chop down trees for *fuel*<sup>6</sup>; sometimes he helped a busy neighbor gather his crops; but there was never a *leisure*<sup>7</sup> moment when he was not studying. One day Farmer Godby hired him to do some work in a distant field. Going out in the afternoon to see how matters were progressing, the farmer was surprised to find the young man sitting on a stump with a book in his hand.

---

1. 渴望; 2. 將至; 3. 圖書室; 4. 明達忠告; 5. 失敗; 6. 燃料; 7. 空閒。

書。但是他得到的知識使他更急切地求進步。祇要他有必要的書，他可以學習到多少！祇要他有錢，書立即可以送到！

他記起在洛克河兵營裏邊，曾經認識一個少年律師，他的名字是約翰史太得。這個史太得先生住在斯潑林非爾特，聽說有一個完善的圖書室。恐怕他可以隨時借給一本。這個思想一到林肯的腦筋中，他立即戴上帽子，動身到斯潑林非爾特去拜訪他的朋友。

史太得態度很和藹。他說，“當然，不祇歡迎你借一本書，就是任何一本書都一樣；”於是他又指導林肯幾種應當讀的最好的書和讀的次序。少年林肯這天黃昏回家走的時候手裏翻開書就讀；在到紐賽給以前他已讀熟三四十頁了。

他開店失敗後找些零雜工作做，來養活自己。有時候他捫了斧頭到林子裏去砍伐樹木作燃料；有時候他幫助一個忙碌的鄰人收集糧食；他不讀書的時候也沒有一些閒工夫。有一天農夫高特倍雇用他在遠處農場裏做工。下午農夫出去看工作進行情形，只見少年坐在木樁上手裏拿着一本書，深以為異。

“Hello, Abe!” he cried; “what are you reading?”

“I am not reading,” answered Lincoln, “I am studying.”

“Well, well! then tell me what you are studying.”

“Law, sir, law!” was the reply.

The farmer was so much astonished that he had not words to express himself; and he was still more astonished when he saw that his hired man had wasted no time over the book, but had already done a full day’s work.

Everywhere he went, Lincoln was pretty sure to carry a book with him. While walking along the road he would often be so deep in study that his best friends might pass him without being noticed. On hot summer days it was common to see him lying in the shade of a tree and *poring*<sup>1</sup> over some dry *treatise*<sup>2</sup> on law. People said that he was going *crazy*<sup>3</sup> over books.

But soon he began to make use of his knowledge. The neighbors, having great *confidence*<sup>4</sup> in his wisdom, came to him for *legal*<sup>5</sup> advice. They sought his help in *drawing*<sup>6</sup> up *deeds*<sup>7</sup> and *mortgages*<sup>8</sup> and other *written contracts*<sup>9</sup>; and now and then he was given the management of some case at law that was being tried before a justice of the peace.

## XXI. IN THE POSTAL SERVICE

About this time young Lincoln was *appointed*<sup>10</sup> *postmaster*<sup>11</sup> at New Salem. Once a week a postman, riding on horseback, with a pair of *saddlebags*<sup>12</sup> beneath him, brought the *mail*<sup>13</sup> to the town. It was not a large mail—perhaps a dozen letters and three or four newspapers. Postmaster Lincoln was always ready to receive it when it came. It

---

1. 打量; 2. 論文; 3. 癡癡; 4. 信任; 5. 法律的; 6. 起草; 7. 合同;  
8. 抵押; 9. 文字契約; 10. 任命; 11. 郵局長; 12. 鞍囊; 13. 郵件。

“噲，亞伯，”他喊道“你讀的什麼？”

“我不在讀書，”林肯回答，“我在學習。”

“好，好！那末告訴我你學習的什麼。”

“法律，先生，法律，”這是答覆。

這個農人這樣心以為深異，竟沒有一句話表示；及見了他的雇工已經做完了一天的工作，沒有因為讀書而浪費一些光陰，更以為異。

林肯每到一個地方去，總帶着一本書。走路的時候他注意看書這樣深切，就是最好的朋友走過他面前也會不知不覺的。炎夏時，常見他躺在樹蔭下面聚精會神研習枯燥無味的法律論文。人們說他正在變成一個書獃子了。”

但是不久他開始利用他的知識了。鄰人很信任他的智慧，到他那裏來請教他法律事件。他們找他的幫助，起草合同和抵押和別種文字契約；他不時受委託處理在保安官審判以前的法律案件。

## 二一 在郵局裏面

大約在這個時候，少年林肯被任為紐賽倫的郵務局長。郵

was not worth while to rent a room for a postoffice; but he put the letters in his hat and kept them there until *called for*<sup>1</sup>; or, if he had the time to do so, he would kindly carry them to the people for whom they were intended.

Of course there was not much *salary*<sup>2</sup> *attached*<sup>3</sup> to a post-



Lincoln the Postmaster

*office*<sup>4</sup> that was carried in one's hat. There were no *postage stamps*<sup>5</sup> at that time, and there were no *envelopes*<sup>6</sup>. When any one wished to *mail*<sup>7</sup> a letter, it was brought to the postmaster, who kept it until the mail carrier made his next weekly visit. Sometimes the sender paid the postage, and then the postmaster would write, in big, *plain characters*<sup>8</sup> on the face of it, the word *Paid*<sup>9</sup>.

But the *rates*<sup>10</sup> of postage were very high, and it generally happened that the sender did not pay any part of it, but left the whole to be *collected*<sup>11</sup> from the person to whom it was *addressed*<sup>12</sup>. It was, therefore, not always a pleasant thing to receive a letter. The postmaster collected the

1. 索取; 2. 薪水; 3. 支付; 4. 郵局; 5. 郵票; 6. 信封; 7. 郵寄, 郵件; 8. 清楚的字; 9. 付訖; 10. 價格; 11. 收取; 12. 寫收信人姓名住址。

差騎在馬背上，下面放着一副鞍囊，帶了郵件每星期到鎮一次。不是一個大信件——恐怕祇有一打的信和三四份新聞紙。郵務局長林肯常常準備在郵件送到的時候收受它。爲郵局辦公處租一間屋子是不合算的；他祇把信放在他帽子裏保存着，一直等到有人索取；或者他要有時間，他就客氣地送給收信人。

當然，薪金支付給一個在帽子裏做辦公室的郵局是不會多的。那時候還沒有郵票，也沒有包封。有人要寄信，就把信帶給郵務局長，局長就保存好一直等到信差下次來局。有時候發信人付了郵費，於是局長就在信面上寫上一個大而清楚的字‘付訖’。但是郵費很貴，常有發信人不付一些錢，讓全部郵費向信封上開的收信人收取。所以收到一封信不是一樁可喜的事情。郵務局長收集應收的郵資保存着，一直等到總局辦事員來收取。

money that was *due*<sup>1</sup> for postage and kept it until an *agent*<sup>2</sup> from the *general postoffice*<sup>3</sup> called for it.

Mr. Lincoln was the last postmaster that New Salem ever had. People were already moving away from the village and finding better homes in the *more promising*<sup>4</sup> settlements above and below. The amount of mail sent out and received became less with each passing month, and in a little over two years the office was *discontinued*<sup>5</sup>. At this time the young postmaster had on hand about seventeen dollars which had been paid to him for postage. For some reason the agent failed to come after this money, and several years passed before it was called for. In the meanwhile Mr. Lincoln had removed to Springfield; he was in debt, and so poor that he was often in need of the common comforts of life. At last one day, when he least expected it, the agent of the government called at his little law office and presented the *long-neglected*<sup>6</sup> *account*<sup>7</sup>.

“Sit down and wait a minute,” said Mr. Lincoln; and leaving the office, he *straddled*<sup>8</sup> rapidly down the street. Had he gone out to *borrow*<sup>9</sup> the money of some of his friends?

In a few moments he returned with an old blue stocking in his hand.

“Here is the money,” he said. “It has been waiting for you a long time;” and he *poured*<sup>10</sup> from the stocking a great number of copper cents and little pieces of silver, such as the country people had used in paying postage. “I believe it is all here,” he said. And when the agent counted it, he found it to be exactly the sum that was due.

---

1. 應付的; 2. 辦事員, 代理人; 3. 郵政總局; 4. 較有希望的; 5. 停辦;  
6. 久久忽略的; 7. 帳目; 8. 大踏步; 9. 借; 10. 倒出。

林肯是紐賽綸所有郵務局長中最末後的一個。人們早已預備從村裏搬開去到較有希望的上下的殖民地裏邊較好的家去。來往郵件的數目逐月減少，兩年多些後郵局就收歇了。在這個時候年輕的郵務局長手裏有約十七塊錢人家付給他的郵費，因為幾種緣故在這筆款子之後那辦事員不能來，直到幾年以後纔來把它收去。在這時候林肯已經搬到斯潑林非爾特了；他負了債，這樣窮，連生活普通的安適也缺乏。在末後一天，最出他意外的，主管處的辦事員到他的小法律所裏取出長遠而忽略的帳目來。

“請坐下算一算，”林肯說；就離了辦事室很快地跑到街上。他出去向他朋友借錢嗎？

少頃，他手裏拿着一隻舊的藍的長襪回來了。

“這裏是款項”他說“等候你長久了。”他從襪子裏倒出許多銅子和小銀塊，這是鄉裏人用來付郵費的。他說，“我相信都在這裏了。”辦事員數一數恰巧同應繳的數目相符。雖



Notwithstanding his great *poverty*<sup>1</sup> and his frequent need, Mr. Lincoln had not touched a cent of the money that he was holding in trust for the government. "I never use any man's money but my own," he said.

## XXII. FOLLOWING THE SURVEYOR'S CHAIN

Abraham Lincoln was now nearly twenty-five years of age. Never for a day had he given up the idea of becoming a lawyer; and every spare moment was spent in study. But he must have food to eat, and a place to sleep; and to earn money to pay for these, he still had to work hard with his hands. One day when he was splitting rails in the woods, word came to him that Mr. Calhoun, the county surveyor, was at his *boarding place*<sup>2</sup> and wished to see him. He shouldered his ax and maul, and with long *strides*<sup>3</sup> made his way back to the village, wondering what the surveyor could want with him.

"Abe, do you know anything about surveying?" asked Mr. Calhoun.

Young Lincoln was *obliged to confess*<sup>4</sup> that although he had once read a book on that subject, he did not know much about it. Then Mr. Calhoun told him that he was *overcrowded*<sup>5</sup> with work and must have help. If Lincoln would take the little book which he had, and study it until he had mastered the principal rules, he would make him *assistant surveyor*<sup>6</sup> and pay him good *wages*<sup>7</sup>. Lincoln looked at the book and thought that he had mastered many things more difficult.

"I will do my best," he said; "and when I am ready I

1. 窮困; 2. 寓所; 3. 大步; 4. 被迫自認; 5. 太繁; 6. 助理測量員; 7. 薪金。

然他的極度窮困和常常缺乏，林肯先生從沒有把爲政府裏保存的款項動用過一分錢。他說，“除了我自己的，我從來不用任何人的錢。

## 二二 跟隨測量員的鏈子

亞伯拉罕林肯現在近二十五歲了。他沒有一天放棄過做律師的志願；閒空的時間都用在研究上。但是他必須要吃東西，再有一個睡覺的地方；要掙出錢來付這些需要，他依舊必得用他的雙手勞苦工作。有一天他正在林子裏劈木頭，有人傳話給他，說邑中的測量員卡爾杭先生在他的寓所要看他。他就捐起他的斧頭和木槌，跋涉回村，懷疑着這測量員會要他什麼。

卡爾杭先生問道，“亞伯，你懂得測量嗎？”

少年林肯祇得自承他雖然讀過一本這種書，但明白得不多。於是卡爾杭先生告訴他自己工作太繁必須要找一個助手。

will report to you.”

The schoolmaster, Menton Graham, offered to help him with the *knotty problems*<sup>1</sup>; and after six weeks of hard study, Lincoln was ready for the work of a sur-



Lincoln the Surveyor

veyor. With the money which he had saved he bought a horse and a pair of saddlebags, a *compass*<sup>2</sup> and *chain*<sup>3</sup>, and other things needful in his business. The county was a large one, and there was much to be done, first in this part, then in that. A new village called Petersburg had been laid out two miles below New Salem, and Lincoln was sent down to survey and *mark off*<sup>4</sup> the *lots*<sup>5</sup>

1. 困難問題； 2. 羅盤； 3. 測量鏈； 4. 劃定； 5. 地基。

倘使林肯願意拿他的書去研習，等到貫通了主要的規例，他願意請他做測量助手付給優厚的薪資。林肯看了這本書，默忖他已經貫通了不少更難的事情。

“我要竭盡我的能力。”他說，“待我準備好了來報告你。”

學校教師孟登格拉罕幫着他解決困難問題；用了六個星期的苦讀，林肯準備着擔任測量員的工作。用了他省下的錢他買了一匹馬和一對鞍囊，一個羅盤和測量鏈，還有別的事務上需要的東西。這個鄉區是廣大的，有許多工作要做的，先在這邊，再在那邊。一個新的鄉村叫做彼得堡的位於紐賽綸下去二英里，林肯被派去測量并劃定地基和街道。許多農場的界線須要決定，界石要建立好。新的道路須要劃出，舊的須加以改良。對這種工作，年輕的測量員有許多要做的。

and streets. The *boundary lines*<sup>1</sup> of many farms were to be determined and the *corner stones*<sup>2</sup> set in place. New roads were to be marked out, and old ones were to be improved. And in work of this kind the young surveyor found plenty to do.

This business brought him into *contact*<sup>3</sup> with all kinds of people, and he made many acquaintances in every part of the county. Although it took him away from his law studies for a while, it was the best possible preparation for the *career*<sup>4</sup> that was now beginning to open before him.

Every one who knew him soon became his *fast*<sup>5</sup> friend; for to the settlers on the prairie he seemed to have all the *virtues*<sup>6</sup> and *accomplishments*<sup>7</sup> that were *desirable*<sup>8</sup> in any man. He not only knew much about books, but he understood *woodcraft*<sup>9</sup> better than any hunter or backwoodsman in that region. He was a good judge of horses, and as the *umpire*<sup>10</sup> of a horse race he had no equal. His strength was a thing to be wondered at even in that country of strong men. It was said that at the mill in New Salem he once lifted a box of stones weighing more than a thousand pounds; and in wrestling, leaping, and other *feats*<sup>11</sup> of strength in which the people of a newly settled region delight, he was the *admiration*<sup>12</sup> of all.

Although during the greater part of his life he had been in *constant*<sup>13</sup> contact with rudeness and *vulgarity*<sup>14</sup>, yet his manners were free from *coarseness*<sup>15</sup>, and his language from *uncleanness*<sup>16</sup> and *profanity*<sup>17</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Any other person thus standing *aloof*<sup>18</sup> from the bad habits so common to the

1. 界線； 2. 界石； 3. 接觸； 4. 事業； 5. 忠實的； 6. 美德； 7. 成就；  
8. 悅意的； 9. 射獵之技； 10. 公證人； 11. 武藝； 12. 稱譽； 13. 長久的；  
14. 粗俗； 15. 粗鄙； 16. 褻瀆； 17. 褻瀆之語； 18. 漠視。

這一種事業使他同各種的人接觸，他就認識了一邑內各部份的許多人。雖然這使他短時期脫離了法律的研習，但却是他今後發展事業的最有用的準備。

誰認識了他立刻變成他的忠實朋友；因為在草原上的移民看來，他有任何人喜愛的美德和成就。他不單是知道許多關於書本的智識，而且也懂得射獵的技能，較之那區域中的獵人和林居者更佳。他是一個善於判斷馬的人，做賽馬的公正人無人能出其右。他的膂力就是全國強有力的人也要驚奇的。人家說他有一次在紐賽綸的磨坊旁邊，曾手舉一箱一千多磅重的石頭；而對於新殖民地人民愛好的角力，縱跳等武技，他都為人稱譽的。

雖然他一生的大部份時間常常接觸的是拙陋和粗俗，而他的態度還是不染粗俗之氣，言談不帶醜態和輕褻之語。別人這樣對林子裏人普通有的壞習慣袖手旁觀，自視高人一等，就

backwoods would have been treated with *scorn*<sup>1</sup> and *abuse*<sup>2</sup>, as one trying to appear better than his fellows. But with Lincoln the matter was quite otherwise. He never did anything in a *boastful*<sup>3</sup> way, and neither in manner nor in word did he claim for himself *superiority*<sup>4</sup> over others. Yet the *uncultured*<sup>5</sup> people with whom he was cast knew that he was their *superior*<sup>6</sup>, and while they themselves did not practice virtue, they were proud and pleased to see it practiced by him.

### XXIII. ENTERING POLITICS IN EARNEST

While busy surveying farms and making new acquaintances, Abraham Lincoln still kept thinking of the future.

1833 Hardly a day passed that he did not do something to increase his knowledge and improve his mind. He was almost the only man in New Salem who was a regular *subscriber*<sup>7</sup> to a newspaper; and among all his acquaintances there was no one who knew as much about politics as he.

The name of Henry Clay had always a strange *charm*<sup>8</sup> for him. We have seen how, when a mere child in the wretched half-faced camp at Pigeon Creek, he read the story of the poor "mill boy of the Slashes." He had then and there *adopted*<sup>9</sup> Henry Clay as his ideal of *pluck*<sup>10</sup> and *perseverance*<sup>11</sup>. When he grew up to manhood, he chose the same person as his *political leader*<sup>12</sup>. At New Salem he was the constant reader of Henry Clay's newspaper, the *Louisville Journal*<sup>13</sup>.

It was a great pleasure to him on Saturday afternoons

1. 嘲笑; 2. 詬罵; 3. 誇張; 4. 卓越; 5. 未受教育的; 6. 高級者; 7. 定閱者; 8. 魔力; 9. 選擇; 10. 勇毅; 11. 堅忍; 12. 政治領袖; 13. 日報, 雜誌。

要出以冷嘲熱諷，但林肯却絕對不同。他做事毫不誇大，語言態度絕不自稱勝過衆人。而未受教育的人一見他就知道超越儕輩，他們所不能實行的美德一見林肯實行了就引爲欣幸。

### 二三 熱情中踏進政黨之爭

在忙着測量農田和找新相識的時候，亞伯拉罕林肯仍舊想到將來。很少的一天他不想到增加他的學問和改進他的思想。他在紐賽綸差不多是惟一報紙定閱者；在他所有相識中間沒有一個知道政治像他這樣多的。

他對於亨利克廉的名字常常有一種奇異的魔力。我們已經看見他剛在童年時在披奇盎灣的半露的帳幕裏面讀“飽嘗辛酸受盡鞭辱的孩子。”他在那個時候那個地方就以亨利克廉爲勇敢堅忍的模範。他成人後選擇同一的人做他的政治領袖。在紐賽綸他是亨利克廉辦的報紙，路易斯維爾日報的長期讀者。

他視爲快意的是在星期六下午坐在村店門前空箱上面向



to sit on an empty goods box in front of the village store and read the news to a group of listening farmers; and then he would explain the *editorials*<sup>1</sup> in the Journal, and cause great *mirth*<sup>2</sup> by *quoting*<sup>3</sup> the *bright*<sup>4</sup>, *witty*<sup>5</sup> sayings which were then a *prominent feature*<sup>6</sup> of that *able paper*<sup>7</sup>.



Henry Clay

He took much pains<sup>8</sup> to keep *abreast*<sup>8</sup> of the public questions of the day, and he was the *oracle*<sup>9</sup> to whom all his neighbors went for *information*<sup>10</sup>. "If you want to learn anything about politics," they would say, "go and ask Abe Lincoln. He'll tell you all that's worth knowing."

What were some of the things that he talked about and explained to his little Saturday *audience*<sup>11</sup> at the village store? Let us see.

There were then, as there are now, two great political parties; and nearly every man in the country "belonged" to one or the other of these parties. They were known as the *Democratic party*<sup>12</sup> and the *Whig party*<sup>13</sup>. The Democratic party had been in existence many years; people said that it was founded (although under a slightly different

1. 社論; 2. 欣喜; 3. 援引; 4. 漂亮的; 5. 滑稽的; 6. 著名的特色; 7. 權威報紙; 8. 相並; 9. 先知; 10. 通告; 11. 聽衆; 12. 民主黨; 13. 自由黨。

農人聽衆讀新聞；於是他解釋日報的社論，講報上特有的漂亮，滑稽的話引人發笑。那種話也是當時那權威報紙著名的特色。他努力用工夫趕上時代潮流，他是應鄰人請教的先知。他們常說，“倘使你要知道些政治，問亞伯林肯去。他要告訴你那些值得去知道的。”

他向他的星期六村店前小聽衆講的是什麼？讓我們看。

那個時候像現在一樣，有二個大政黨；差不多每一個國民都隸屬於二黨中的一個。這二個黨是民主黨和自由黨。民主黨已成立多年；人家說該黨是湯姆斯傑弗遜所創立（雖然名義略有不同）。至於自由黨是很新的；實在的，它纔成立，領導人是亨利克廉。

那個時候民主黨的領袖是查哲魯傑克遜，是合衆國的大總統，他早已做過一任總統，現在已近第二任期中間了。因

name) by the great Thomas Jefferson. The Whig party, on the other hand, was very new; indeed, it had just been formed, and the *foremost*<sup>1</sup> man in its ranks was Henry Clay.

The leader of the Democratic party at that time was Andrew Jackson, the President of the United States. He had already served one term as President, and was now near the middle of his second term. In order to understand the great questions of the time, young Lincoln sometimes found it necessary to *refer*<sup>2</sup> to some of the events of Jackson's first term. In order to understand the *influences*<sup>3</sup> which shaped the political life of Abraham Lincoln, it will be well for us to follow a similar course.

At Jackson's first election—which took place in 1828—there were no Whigs, but those who *opposed*<sup>4</sup> him called themselves National Republicans. The leaders of the National Republicans were Henry Clay and Daniel Webster. Their *candidate for the presidency*<sup>5</sup> was John Quincy Adams.

The chief question between the parties at that time, as at several times since, was the *tariff*<sup>6</sup> or *tax*<sup>7</sup> on goods brought into this country from foreign lands. Did a high tariff *promote*<sup>8</sup> national *prosperity*<sup>9</sup>, or did it not? The answer to this question was given quite differently by different persons: it depended upon the place in which one lived and the business in which he was employed; it was *dictated by personal interest*<sup>10</sup> rather than by *patriotism*<sup>11</sup>.

In the North—particularly in the New England states—a great many people were engaged in *manufacturing*<sup>12</sup>; and they believed that a high tariff would *prevent*<sup>13</sup> many foreign goods from being brought to our country, and thus

---

1. 最高; 2. 參考; 3. 勢力; 4. 反對; 5. 總統候選人; 6. 關稅; 7. 稅;  
8. 增進; 9. 繁榮; 10. 憑個人利益而定; 11. 愛國心; 12. 工業; 13. 阻止。

爲要明白這時候的大問題，少年林肯有時候覺得必須要參考傑克遜第一任時期的事業。因爲要明白形成亞伯拉罕林肯政治生活的勢力，我們也應當注意同樣的事實。

在傑克遜第一任時期選舉的時候。—— 1828年舉行——沒有自由黨，不過反對他的黨員自稱國家民主黨。國家民主黨的領袖是亨利克廉和鄧尼惠勃斯脫。總統候選人是約翰坤先愛鄧姆斯，

那時候和此後幾次一樣。兩黨間的主要問題是關稅，或從外國進口的貨物稅。高度的關稅是不是能增進國家的繁榮，還是不能呢？不同的人對這問題的答覆就大不相同：它基於一個人住的地方和經營的事業；憑着它的個人利益，不是憑着愛國心而定。

在北部——尤其是在新英格蘭州——多數人從事工業；他們相信高度關稅要阻止許多外國貨進口，所以能替本國貨

make a better market and more general demand for American goods. The result of this would be more work and better wages for the workingmen.

But in the South there were no *manufactories*<sup>1</sup> and but few mills of any kind. Nearly all the labor was done by slaves and the chief products were sugar, cotton, and tobacco. The people of that section believed that a high protective tariff would be an injury to them; it would increase the price of such goods as they did not make, but were obliged to buy; it would make no better market for the things they had to sell.

Just before the election of Jackson, *Congress*<sup>2</sup> had passed an *act*<sup>3</sup> increasing the tariff on woolen manufactures, iron goods, and many other articles. The act was intended most of all to *benefit*<sup>4</sup> the woolen industry in the North; and it was favored by great numbers of people who thought that it would also benefit the country at large. In the South, and especially in South Carolina, the feeling against it was very bitter. When Andrew Jackson became President, it was supposed that his influence would cause the law to be *repealed*<sup>5</sup>; but its friends were numerous and powerful, and it remained in force.

Toward the end of Jackson's first term the *dissatisfaction*<sup>6</sup> became greater. The people of South Carolina met in *convention*<sup>7</sup> and adopted what has since been known as the *Nullification Ordinance*<sup>8</sup>. This was 1832 a *resolution*<sup>9</sup> asserting that the tariff act was *null*<sup>10</sup> and *void*<sup>11</sup> in South Carolina, and declaring that if the United States government *attempted*<sup>12</sup> to *enforce*<sup>13</sup> it there, the state would

1. 工廠; 2. 議會; 3. 法律; 4. 加惠; 5. 廢除; 6. 不滿意; 7. 會議; 8. 廢止法令; 9. 議決案; 10. 無效; 11. 排除; 12. 試行; 13. 強迫實行; 14. 脫離。

造成一個更好的市場和更大的銷路。它的結果可使工人能得較多的工作和較厚的工資。

但在南部，沒有什麼工廠，祇有幾個磨坊。差不多所有工作都是奴隸們做的，主要的產品是糖，棉花和烟葉。在那個區域內的人民相信高度關稅對於他們是有害的；它要提高他們所不能自製而必須購買的貨物價格；同時他們所必需售賣的貨物市場就要沒有起色了。

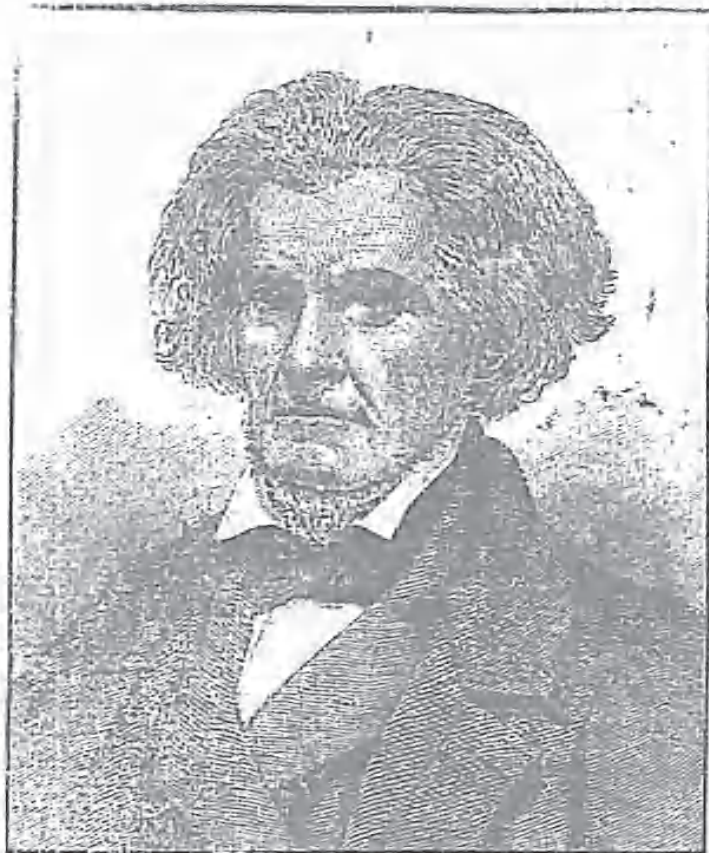
剛在傑克遜選舉以前，議會通過一條增加羊毛製品，鐵器，和其他貨物關稅的法律。這條法律的目的大意是要使北部毛織工業受到利益；這條法律為大多數人民所擁護，他們理想全國都要受到利益。而在南部，愈其是在南卡羅來納，民情反對很激昂。盎掘魯傑克遜任大總統的時候，都以為他的力量可以使這一條法律廢除；但是贊助這條法律的人很多很有勢力，因此仍舊被迫保留。

傑克遜第一次任期將滿的時候，不滿的情形擴大了，南卡羅來納的人民集會決議所謂“廢止法令。”這是一件議決案提出關稅法律在南卡羅來納不生效力，又提議倘使合衆國政府設法強迫實行這條法律，該州就同聯邦脫離關係。

*secede*<sup>1</sup> from the Union.

It was believed that the President, who was a Southern man and opposed to a high tariff, would quietly *permit*<sup>2</sup> the South Carolinians to have their own way. People were surprised, therefore, when on the 10th of December he *issued*<sup>3</sup> a *proclamation*<sup>4</sup> against the *nullifiers*<sup>5</sup>.

“The *Constitution*<sup>6</sup> of the United States,” he said, “forms a government, not a *league*<sup>7</sup>. Our Constitution does not con-



John C. Calhoun

tain the *absurdity*<sup>8</sup> of giving power to make laws, and another power to resist them. To say that any state may at pleasure *secede* from the Union is to say that the United States are not a nation.”

Throughout the North, this action of President Jackson was heartily *approved*<sup>9</sup> even by many who were not Democrats and had voted against him.

But the South Carolinians

held their ground. John C. Calhoun, the *Vice President*<sup>10</sup> of the United States, was a South Carolinian and the leader of the nullifiers. He at once *resigned*<sup>11</sup> his *position*<sup>12</sup> in order that he might do greater service to his state.

Troublesome times seemed to be at hand. Congress passed a law *instructing*<sup>13</sup> the President to force the state of

1. 脫離； 2. 准許； 3. 發表； 4. 宣言； 5. 廢法者； 6. 憲法； 7. 同盟；  
8. 謬見； 9. 歡悅，中意； 10. 副總統； 11. 辭去； 12. 職位； 13. 咨請。

一般人都相信，一個生長南部而又是反對高度關稅的人做了大總統，就要容許南卡羅來納人行其所好。所以人民對於他在十二月十日發表反對主張廢法者的宣言表示驚異。

他說，“合衆國憲法產生一個政府，不是一個聯盟。我們的憲法並沒有包含以權力立法，同時以權力毀法的悖謬意義，要是說任何一州可以任意脫離聯邦，無異說合衆國不是一個國家。”

在北部，傑克遜總統的行爲到處受到熱烈擁護，就是許多不是民主黨而投反對票的也是如此。但是南卡羅來納還是保持他們的立場。約翰卡爾杭，合衆國副總統，是南卡羅來納人又是廢法者的領袖。他立即辭去職位，以便爲本州盡更大的義務。

爲難的時候就在目前了。國會通過一條法律咨請總統強逼南卡羅來納服從合衆國法律。倘使他施行這件議案，內戰一



South Carolina to obey the laws of the United States. If he should attempt to do this, *civil war*<sup>1</sup> would certainly follow.

But at this *perilous*<sup>2</sup> moment Henry Clay of Kentucky came forward with a *compromise bill*<sup>3</sup>. Henry Clay was noted for doing such things. More than once, when *sectional*<sup>4</sup> feeling had *threatened*<sup>5</sup> to destroy the very life of our nation, he had found a way to please both parties and restore *harmony*<sup>6</sup> and peace. "Come, my friends," he would say, "we cannot all have what we want. But we can meet on middle ground, and each one, by giving up only a little to the other, may gain more than can possibly be gotten by *strife*<sup>7</sup>." And it was by such friendly services as this that the Union was *preserved*<sup>8</sup> through more than one *crisis*<sup>9</sup>, and Clay became known in history as the Great *Pacificator*<sup>10</sup>.

The compromise which he *suggested*<sup>11</sup> at this time *provided that*<sup>12</sup> South Carolina should give up her nullification *scheme*<sup>13</sup> and stay *peaceably*<sup>14</sup> in the Union, while on the other hand, the *odious*<sup>15</sup> tariff should be *reduced*<sup>16</sup> little by little for ten years, or until every section of the country should be satisfied with it.

This was a simple and easy way of settling an ugly dispute, and everybody was glad to agree to it. South Carolina showed her *loyalty*<sup>17</sup> by obeying a law which she thought *harmful*<sup>18</sup> to the interests of her people. The friends of high tariff showed their loyalty by bending to the wishes of their fellow-citizens whose circumstances were not the same as their own.

---

1. 內戰； 2. 危險的； 3. 調停條文； 4. 部分的； 5. 威脅； 6. 和睦； 7. 戰爭； 8. 持續； 9. 危機； 10. 和事者； 11. 提議； 12. 假設； 13. 計劃； 14. 和平地； 15. 可厭的； 16. 減小； 17. 忠誠； 18. 損害。

定要隨着。

在這個危險的時候，黎塔啓州的亨利克廉帶了調停的牒文到前方去。亨利克廉是以辦這種事件聞名的。不止一次，部分的民情威脅着並對國家生命加以破壞的時候，他獲得一種可以得到兩方面歡心的方法，重建親睦和平的關係。他要說，“來罷，朋友們，我們不能得到我們所要求的全部。但是我們可以在以折衷地位上妥協，而彼此都對他人讓步一些，所獲得的可以比較用鬭爭可得的要來得多。”經過像這樣的友好的貢獻，聯邦得在幾次危機中存續着，克廉在歷史上就以偉大的和事者聞名了。

這時候他建議的調停方法是教南卡羅來納放棄他們廢法的計畫，同聯邦和平相處，另一方面，這不受歡迎的高稅應在十年之內逐漸減小，一直等到國內各部分都滿意為止。

這是一個解決難題的簡單易行辦法，為各人所喜歡贊同的。南卡羅來納服從他們認為有損於她們的人民的法律以表示忠誠。擁護高度關稅的人民曲從環境和他們相異的同胞們的意志以表示忠誠。

We shall find, however, that it was many years before the South Carolinians were ready to give up the idea that their state might *withdraw*<sup>1</sup> from the Union whenever she chose to do so. In the earlier history of our country, loyalty to *one's* state was held to be more *praiseworthy*<sup>2</sup> than loyalty to the Union. This was true in the North as well as in the South, and it gave rise to the *doctrine*<sup>3</sup> of *States' Rights*<sup>4</sup>, which regarded the United States as a league and not as a nation. "The state first, the United States second"—that was the *original idea*<sup>5</sup> of patriotism, and it was the idea which John C. Calhoun and his followers believed to be the true one. But it was not the doctrine of Andrew Jackson; it was not the doctrine of Henry Clay.

We may imagine Abraham Lincoln *discussing*<sup>6</sup> these matters with his farmer friends at New Salem, and supporting his *arguments*<sup>7</sup> by reading *extracts*<sup>8</sup> from the Louisville Journal. They were important issues at that time, and every voter in the country had his opinion about them.

Andrew Jackson—"Old Hickory" as his friends liked to call him—was a great *favorite*<sup>9</sup> in the West; and in Illinois most of the people were Democrats. His second election (in 1832) was a famous victory. The National Republican party, with Henry Clay as its candidate, had made a strong fight against him; but it was beaten so badly that its leaders found it necessary to *disband*<sup>10</sup> in order that a new party might be formed under another name.

Two years later, therefore, the Whig party was *organized*<sup>11</sup>. It was intended to attract to its ranks all who, for

---

1. 退出; 2. 值得讚美的; 3. 主義; 4. 州權; 5. 根本主張; 6. 討論;  
7. 議論; 8. 精華; 9. 寵愛者; 10. 解散; 11. 組織。

雖是如此，我們要看，南卡羅來納人經過許多年纔準備放棄本州脫離聯邦的觀念。當他們選定要如此去做的時候，在我國早年的歷史上，對本州的忠誠認為比較對國家的忠誠更值得讚美。這在南部如此，在北部也是如此，因此就發生州權主義，這種主義認合衆國是一個聯盟而不是一個國家，“本州第一，合衆國第二”——這是熱血份子的根本主張，這也是約翰卡爾杭和他黨徒所信服，視為真理的主義，但這不是盎掘羅傑克遜的主義；也不是亨利克廉的主義。

我們可以想像亞伯拉罕林肯同他的農友們在紐賽倫討論時事問題的情形，讀了魯易斯維爾日報上的精華而確立他的理論。這個日報是那時候一種重要的報紙，國內各選舉投票人都對這種日報生出主張。

盎掘魯傑克遜——他的朋友稱他為老歇考利——是西方人民的深寵者；而在伊利諾斯大部分人民是民主黨。他的第二次選舉在（1832年）是有名的勝利。國家民主黨，候選人是亨利克廉，曾向他作強烈攻擊；但遭慘敗，他們的領袖覺得須要解散了，在另一個名義之下另組新黨。

因此兩年以後，自由黨組成了。用意是在吸收因任何理由

any reason, disliked the policy of President Jackson. It included not only those who had formerly called themselves National Republicans, but also the nullifiers and states'-rights men of the South, and many dissatisfied Democrats. The leaders of this new party were Henry Clay of Kentucky, Daniel Webster of Massachusetts, and John C. Calhoun of South Carolina. These three men were the political *giants*<sup>1</sup> of that time; and they are to be remembered as probably the ablest *statesmen*<sup>2</sup> that our country has ever known. On many important questions they held the most widely differing opinions; and it was only in their *opposition*<sup>3</sup> to the *high-handed measures*<sup>4</sup> of Andrew Jackson that they were ever really in agreement.

It was with this new party, as represented by his political ideal, Henry Clay, that Abraham Lincoln, at the age of twenty-five, *allied*<sup>5</sup> himself.

---

1. 偉人； 2. 政治家； 3. 反對； 4. 高壓手段； 5. 聯合，同盟。

而反對傑克遜總統的各階層成分。它不獨包含國家民主黨黨員，也有南部的廢法派和州權主義者，和許多不滿意的民主黨黨員。新黨的領袖有黎塔啓的亨利克廉，馬薩諸塞的鄧尼爾惠勃斯脫，南卡羅來納的約翰卡爾杭。這三個人是那時候的政治上偉大人物；他們恐怕是我們國家有史以來最有能力的政治家了。

在許多重要問題上他們堅持着大不相同的主張；祇有在他們對盜掘魯傑克遜高壓手段表示反對態度中，他們是真正合作的。

亞伯拉罕林肯在廿五歲的時候，就加入他的政治模範亨利克廉代表的新黨。

## BOOK THE SECOND—PROBATION

### I. A MEMBER OF THE LEGISLATURE<sup>1</sup>

IN 1834 there was another state election in Illinois, and Abraham Lincoln again announced himself as a candidate for the legislature.

At that time it was not customary for parties to hold political conventions, as they do now, to make up the ticket which is to be voted for at the coming election. If a man wanted an office, he *informed*<sup>2</sup> the public that he was a candidate, and he declared that if he should be elected he would support or oppose certain measures. This plan made it possible for a great many candidates to present themselves for the same office, and the votes were sometimes very *scattering*<sup>3</sup>. But the convention system was beginning to be adopted in some states. It not only avoided the *inconveniende*<sup>4</sup> of too many candidates, but it drew a more *distinci*<sup>5</sup> line between the parties. It was favored especially by the Jackson Democrats; but the Whigs—and among them Abraham Lincoln—were slow to approve of it.

Mr. Lincoln had made so many acquaintances within the past year that there was now little need for him to tell the people who he was or what were his *principles*<sup>6</sup>. Almost every man who knew him was eager to vote for him; and he was elected by a large *majority*<sup>7</sup>.

He was only twenty-five years old—a *homely*<sup>8</sup>, awkward fellow who knew little of the ways of the world;

---

1. 議會; 2. 通知; 3. 分散; 4. 不便; 5. 清楚; 6. 主義; 7. 大多數; 8. 樸素。

## 第二卷——見習時期

### 一 議會議員

在 1834 年伊利諾斯舉行另一次州選，亞伯拉罕林肯又宣告自己是議會候選人。

在那個時候政黨不慣於舉行政治集會，像他們現在的辦法，來組成將到的選舉中所投的選舉票，倘有人願取得地位，他就通知大眾他是一個候選人，他又提出倘使他當選，他就要維持或反對某項主張。這種計劃使多數候選人能夠介紹自己當同樣的職位，選舉票有時候很分散。但是集會制度在有幾個州內開始實行了。它不但免去過多候選人的不便，也引出兩黨間清楚的界線。它格外為傑克遜民主黨員所贊同；但是自由黨——亞伯拉罕林肯在其中——慢慢也贊同了。

林肯先生在過去一年中已經認識了這麼多朋友所以不大需要告訴人民他是誰或他的主義是什麼了。差不多知道他的都興奮地投他的票，他已為大多數人所選舉了。



but by reason of his true worth and his *untiring perseverance*<sup>1</sup>, he had at this early age reached one of the most honorable positions in his state. He had now come to the first dividing line in his life: the years that were past had been his *period*<sup>2</sup> of preparation; the years that were to come would be periods of probation and *achievement*<sup>3</sup>.

The capital of Illinois at that time was Vandalia, a small town sixty or seventy miles southeast of Springfield. When the time came for Mr. Lincoln to start to the legislature, he found himself without money; and his *threadbare*<sup>4</sup> coat and *ill-fitting*<sup>5</sup> trousers were not such as a *law-maker*<sup>6</sup> might wear with *credit*<sup>7</sup>. But his friends were ready and eager to help him; and so, one day early in winter, feeling very strange in a *brand new*<sup>8</sup> suit of jeans, he set out for the capital.

He did not distinguish himself at that *session*<sup>9</sup> of the legislature. He made no speeches, he *proposed*<sup>10</sup> no new laws. But he was a listener and learner, and was ready with his vote in favor of whatever measure he thought would be best for the people of the state. He became acquainted with men of culture and *intelligence*<sup>11</sup>; he learned some of the ways of *refined*<sup>12</sup> society; and he impressed everybody with the fact that he was a quiet and sensible young man who was determined to make the best of everything that came in his way.

The session was a short one, and in a few weeks Mr. Lincoln was back among his old friends at New Salem.

Between studying law and surveying farms and roads, the summer months seemed very short to Mr. Lincoln.

---

1. 不倦的耐性; 2. 时期; 3. 成就; 4. 破旧的; 5. 不合式的; 6. 立法员; 7. 声誉; 8. 簇新的; 9. 会期; 10. 提議; 11. 智慧; 12. 文雅。

他祇有二十五歲——一個樸質不雅和而於世故缺乏閱歷的人；但因為他的真實價值和他的不倦的耐性，他在少年時就在他本州內達到最受人尊敬的地位之一了。他現在已經來到他一生的分界線：過去的年代是他的預備時期；未來的年代是他的見習時期和成功時期。

那時候伊利諾斯的省會是文台利亞，斯潑林非爾特東南六七十英里的一個小鎮。林肯先生開始走進議會的時候，他覺得自己沒有錢；他的破舊衣服和不合式的褲子不是一個有命譽的立法員穿的。但是他的朋友們熱誠地預備幫助他；所以一個冬天，他很奇異地穿了一套簇新衣服，動身上省了。

他在議會開會的時期並不顯露頭角，他不作演說詞，不提出新法律。但他是一個聽講者和學習者，常常準備投票贊同任何他以為最有益於人民的議案。他被一般有教育和智慧的人所認識；他學習到幾種文雅社會的方式。他以一個沉靜靈敏和堅決對任何遇到的事件努力的少年，深印衆人腦海。

開會期間是短的，幾個星期後林肯先生就回到他的在紐賽倫的朋儕中間去了。

在研究法律和測量農田和過路的中間，夏月在林肯先生

and another autumn passed *unmarked*<sup>1</sup> by any *unusual*<sup>2</sup> happening. At the beginning of winter, he was again among the lawmakers at Vandalia.

\* \* \*

It was at this second session of the legislature that Mr. Lincoln first met the man who was to be for many years his most powerful political *rival*<sup>3</sup>. That man was Stephen A. Douglas, a young lawyer from Morgan County, who had lately been appointed *circuit attorney*<sup>4</sup>.

Mr. Douglas was at that time only twenty-two years old. Like Lincoln, he was poor; but he had had opportunities of a kind which Mr. Lincoln had never known.

Douglas was born at Brandon, Vermont, and when a mere babe had lost his father. His mother, who was a woman of culture, did all that she could to give him a good education. She taught him at home. When he was older she sent him to a small country school through the winter months; but during the rest of the year he had to work on the farm.

He soon learned all that the district schoolmaster could teach him, and was anxious to know more; but his mother was too poor to send him to *college*<sup>5</sup>. At the age of fifteen he learned *cabinet-making*<sup>6</sup>, and by the practice of this trade he earned money enough to pay his *tuition*<sup>7</sup> at an *academy*<sup>8</sup> for nearly a year.

Soon after this young Douglas's mother married again, and when he was seventeen, he went to live with her near Canandaigua, New York, whither she had removed with her husband. There Douglas taught a short term of

---

1. 毫無痕跡； 2. 非常的； 3. 對敵； 4. 巡回辯護士； 5. 專門學校； 6. 木器雕刻術； 7. 學費； 8. 專門學校。

看來是很短的，另一個秋天沒有發出非常事件而過去了。在冬天開始，他又在文台利亞的立法員中間了。

\* \* \*

這是議會的第二次集會期間林肯初遇到他以後多年的政治的勁敵。那人是史緝芬道格來斯，毛根郡來的少年律師，他近來被任巡迴辯護士。道格來斯先生那時候祇有二十二歲，像林肯一樣，他是窮的；但他有林肯從來沒有的機會。

道格來斯生於勃冷鄧，凡爾蒙脫，襁褓中沒了父親。他的母親是一個受有教育的婦人，盡了她能力給他良好的教育。她在家中教她的兒子。他稍長，她又送他到一個小的鄉村學校中過冬季；但是在餘下的時期他須要在田間工作。

他迅速地學好了鄉區教師所能教他的，又急於求進益；但是他的母親貧窮，不能送他進專科學校。在十五歲的時候，他學了木器雕刻術；經營了這一種營業；他獲得充分的錢付他人專科學校近一年的費用。

在這時期以後，少年道格來斯的母親重行結婚，十七歲時他同她住居於紐約州坎拿大加附近，她同她的丈夫已遷居於

school, after which he attended an academy a few weeks, and then began the study of law. Having learned some of the first principles of his *profession*<sup>1</sup>, he made up his mind to seek his fortune in the West.

Late in the autumn of 1833, he arrived at the village of Winchester, in Illinois, with no money in his pockets save three silver "levies" (37½ cents), and no friend to whom he could apply for help. Like Abraham Lincoln, however,



Stephen A. Douglas

he was not the man to be cast down by *trifles*<sup>2</sup>. He braced himself manfully, and went right forward. Within three days he had made himself so well known to the people of Winchester that they chose him to teach their village school.

At the end of the year he went to Jacksonville; and in the very month that he was twenty-one, he was *licensed*<sup>3</sup> to practice law in the courts of

Illinois. Two weeks thereafter he made a public speech in defense of President Jackson which so *wrought upon*<sup>4</sup> his hearers that he at once became the most *popular*<sup>5</sup> man in that part of the country.

That speech won for him the office of circuit attorney.

<sup>1</sup>. 職業; <sup>2</sup>. 瑣事; <sup>3</sup>. 准許; <sup>4</sup>. 激起; <sup>5</sup>. 孚衆望的。

此地。道格來斯短期的在學校裏任教，此後又在專科學校讀了幾個星期，於是開始研究法律。學了他的專業的初步理論，他決意在西方覓取他的新的幸運。

不久在 1833 年秋天，他到了伊利諾斯州文卻斯脫的鄉村裏面，袋裏祇有三個利維（37½ 分），沒有什麼可以求助的朋友。但像亞伯拉罕林肯一樣，他不因瑣事而頹喪的。他勇敢地興奮着，直向前進。在三天裏邊他已使自己爲文卻斯脫的人民耳熟能詳，他們就聘他到村校任教。

在年終他到了傑克遜維爾，即在那個月內他二十一歲了，他受准許在伊利諾斯法庭上執行法律辯護。兩星期後他作了一個公開演說替傑克遜總統辯護，那事激動聽衆而使他在國內的一區域內成爲最受歡迎的人。

那一次演詞，使他取得巡迴辯護士的職位。

## II. BETWEEN VANDALIA AND NEW SALEM

The second session of the legislature of 1835—1836 was but little longer than the first, for it ended about the middle of January. Mr. Lincoln made but little progress toward winning distinction. Nevertheless he *delivered*<sup>1</sup> one or two short speeches which were listened to with attention; and he talked so well on matters of public interest that everybody admired his *sound judgment*<sup>2</sup> and the courage with which he defended his *convictions*<sup>3</sup>.

With the ending of the session the term for which he was elected expired. He returned to New Salem and announced himself as a candidate for reelection.

This was the year also for the presidential election, when some one must be chosen to succeed Andrew Jackson, whose second term would expire on the 4th of the following March. The *campaign*<sup>4</sup> in Sangamon County was carried on with much *vigor*<sup>5</sup>, and Mr. Lincoln distinguished himself as a strong *opponent*<sup>6</sup> of the Jackson democracy.

"I go," he said, "for all *sharing the privileges*<sup>7</sup> of the government who assist in bearing its burdens. Consequently, I go for admitting all whites to the *right of suffrage*<sup>8</sup> who pay taxes or bear arms (by no means excluding females). . . . Whether elected or not, I go for *distributing the proceeds*<sup>9</sup> of the sales of the public lands to the several states, to *enable*<sup>10</sup> our state, in common with others, to *dig canals*<sup>11</sup> and construct railroads without borrowing money and paying *interest*<sup>12</sup> on it."

It is well to remember that there were at that time no

---

1. 演說； 2. 正確判斷力； 3. 信心； 4. 競選運動； 5. 精力； 6. 反對者；  
7. 共享特權； 8. 參政權； 9. 分配收入； 10. 使； 11. 開運河； 12. 利息。

## 二 在文台利亞和紐賽綸間

1835—1836年的第二次議會集會不過比第一次時間略為長些，因為它約在正月月中旬結束。林肯先生祇有些微的進步以顯露才能，雖是這樣，他發表了一兩次簡短的演說為聽衆所注意；他對於公共利益的事情講得這樣好，使人人贊揚他的正確的判斷力和為他的信心辯護的勇氣。

這一次會期結束時他任期屆滿了。他回到紐賽綸宣告自己是重行選舉的候選人。

這時候也是選舉大總統的一年，必須選出一個人來繼續亞掘魯傑克遜的地位，第二任任期原定三月四日屆滿。遜格們佈的競選運動聚精會神地舉行着，林肯以傑克遜民主政治的強有力對抗者顯露頭角。

他說，“我為享有治權共負義務的全體人民而往。自然我也為確認全體納稅荷鎗的白人參政權利(女性當然包括在內)而往。當選或不當選，我都為分配出賣公共土地所得款項與各州，使本州與他州同樣能不舉債不付息開濬運河及建築鐵路而往。”

記住在那時候伊利諾斯州還沒有鐵路，州邑尚在幼稚。大



railroads in Illinois. The state was yet in its *infancy*<sup>1</sup>. The great prairies were for the most part still *unoccupied*<sup>2</sup>; and in the northern section of the state there were wide stretches of *unclaimed*<sup>3</sup> lands, broken only here and there by *straggling*<sup>4</sup>, feeble settlements. But *immigrants*<sup>5</sup> from the older states were coming in rapidly, and great changes were beginning to be made. It was just the time for an *energetic*<sup>6</sup> young man to step to the front and make his influence felt; and in Illinois there were two such men, Lincoln and Douglas.

Abraham Lincoln spent more than half of the summer in traveling from one part of his district to another and making speeches—"stumping it," as people in the West would say. Sometimes he walked from town to town; sometimes he rode *astride*<sup>7</sup> of a farm horse which he described as being "plainly marked with *harness*<sup>8</sup>" and as "having lost some of its *shoes*<sup>9</sup>."

His speeches were so interesting and convincing, and they were delivered with such force and *ease*<sup>10</sup>, that he soon became known as one of the foremost orators of the state.

### III. RAG BARONS<sup>11</sup> vs<sup>12</sup>. SONS OF TOIL<sup>13</sup>

It was a *favorite plea*<sup>14</sup> of the Democrats that theirs was the party of the common people—that it was the party of the sons of toil, the plain farmer and the humble laborer; and they *ridiculed*<sup>15</sup> the Whigs as being the party of the *kid-gloved gentry*<sup>16</sup>—of the rich *speculator*<sup>17</sup> and the *bloated aristocrat*<sup>18</sup>. All this had much weight among the hard-

1. 幼稚時代； 2. 未經佔領； 3. 無人索取之； 4. 分散的； 5. 移民； 6. 能幹的； 7. 跨坐； 8. 馬具； 9. 馬蹄鐵； 10. 撫慰； 11. 貴族(男爵)； 12. 拉丁語 Versus 之縮寫，與英語之 against 同； 13. 勞働子弟； 14. 可愛的答辯； 15. 譏嘲； 16. 帶羊皮手套之紳士； 17. 投機商人； 18. 虛浮的貴族。

草原大部份尙未經佔用；州的北部有廣大的無主土地，爲東零西散毫無力量的殖民地所分割。但是從各舊州邑來的移民很迅速地遷入，大的變化就開始出現了。這正是能幹的青年踏進前方，使他的勢力左右一切的時候；在伊利諾斯州有兩個這樣的人，林肯和道格來斯。

亞伯拉罕林肯費了夏季的一半光陰以上周遊各處舉行演說——西部的人民說的，“踏上演講台。”有時候他在市鎮間步行來往；有時候他乘農場上的馬，他描寫着像“用馬具清楚地戳痕跡，”“失了幾個馬蹄鐵。”

他的演詞這樣興味濃厚和使人信任，因此發出這樣的力量和撫慰，他不久就以州中第一流演說家聞名了。

### 三 襤褸貴族對抗勞動子民

這是民主黨寶貴的答辯說他們的黨是平民大眾的黨——勞力者，低賤的工人和簡樸的農人的黨；他們譏自由黨爲戴山羊皮手套的紳士的黨——有錢的投機商人和虛浮的貴族的

handed pioneers of the West; and it gained many votes for Andrew Jackson and his friends.

Among the Democratic speakers in Sangamon County there was a certain *lusty*<sup>1</sup>, *bustling*<sup>2</sup> little *dandy*<sup>3</sup> known as *Colonel*<sup>4</sup> Dick Taylor. When in town he took great pride in appearing well dressed. His clothing was of the most *fashionable cut*<sup>5</sup>. He wore kid gloves and *patent*<sup>6</sup> *leather boots*<sup>7</sup>, and delighted in a *gaudy display*<sup>8</sup> of *diamond*<sup>9</sup> *shirt studs*<sup>10</sup> and a gold watch chain with costly *seals*<sup>11</sup> and *cha:ms*<sup>12</sup>. But when he went into the country to address the plain farmers and *warn*<sup>13</sup> them against the Whigs, he *cunningly*<sup>14</sup> put on a long linen "*duster*<sup>15</sup>" to *conceal*<sup>16</sup> all this *finery*<sup>17</sup> of which he was so fond. He could then make his hearers believe that he too was a humble workingman, earning his bread by the *sweat of his brow*<sup>18</sup>, and therefore in hearty sympathy with the "common people."

On a certain day Colonel Taylor and Mr. Lincoln were to speak at the same political meeting. A great many farmers were there, eager to hear the questions of the day *discussed*<sup>19</sup>. A few of them were Whigs; but most were Democrats, and "Old Hickory" was their *idol*<sup>20</sup>.

Mr. Lincoln was dressed in a suit of coarse jeans; his coat was too large, his trousers were too short, his blue "hickory" shirt had neither *collar*<sup>21</sup> nor *cuffs*<sup>22</sup>, his cowhide boots were strangers to polish. Colonel Taylor, with his linen duster buttoned closely around him, also appeared to be a very plain man indeed.

---

1. 滋事的; 2. 忙亂的; 3. 綉袴子; 4. 上校; 5. 時髦的式樣; 6. 特色的; 7. 皮鞋; 8. 顯眼的華飾; 9. 金鑲鑽; 10. 鈕扣; 11. 印章; 12. 表墜; 13. 鼓動; 14. 狡詐地; 15. 罩衫; 16. 掩蓋; 17. 裝飾品; 18. 額汗; 19. 討論; 20. 崇拜的偶像; 21. 硬領; 22. 褶襠。

黨。這許多話對西部勞動的開墾者發生很大的力量；替盎掘魯傑克遜和他的朋友得了許多票數。

在民主黨的演說者裏面，有一個遇事張皇的執袴子，狄克泰樓上校。在市鎮上他以華服自誇。他的衣服是最時髦的式樣。他戴着羊皮手套，穿着特色的皮鞋，以炫人的金剛鑽衣扣和黃金的表鍊掛着珍貴的印章和表墜等飾物沾沾自喜。但是他到鄉村去向樸素的農人演說，鼓動他們反對自由黨的時候，他狡猾地穿上長麻布的罩衫，以掩蓋他所以愛好的裝飾品。於是他可以使聽衆相信他也是一個微賤的勞工，以額汗掙出麵包，所以是平民的衷心同情者。

某日，泰樓和林肯要向同一政治集合演說。大多數農人都到場，急切的要聽這一天討論的事情。自由黨員佔少數；大多數是民主黨，以“老歇考連”做崇拜的偶像。

林肯穿着粗布衣服；他的褂子太大，他的褲子太短，他的藍襯衫沒有硬領，也沒有褶袖。他的皮鞋從未擦過鞋油。而泰樓校官穿着布的罩衫周圍扣緊了鈕扣，看上去實在也是一個樸素無華的人。

The colonel spoke first. He began by praising the wisdom of President Jackson. Then he spoke briefly of the tariff and of the internal improvements and of the great things which the Democratic party had done for the state of Illinois. As he *enlarged*<sup>1</sup> upon this, he informed the listening farmers that the Democrats—of whom he was one of the humblest—were the very “bone and *sinew*<sup>2</sup> of the land;” that they were the laborers, the producers; that they were the plain people, the “*hard-handed*<sup>3</sup> sons of toil,” the despisers of luxury; and, further, that they were the *sole promoters*<sup>4</sup> of national prosperity. On the other hand, he described the Whigs as the “silk-stockinged gentry,” the bloated aristocrats with “*lily-white hands*<sup>5</sup>” unused to labor, the “rag barons” who *fare sumptuously*<sup>6</sup> at the expense of the poor. He saw that his words were having an effect upon his hearers. He *waxed*<sup>7</sup> very *eloquent*<sup>8</sup>, and in his wild *enthusiasm*<sup>9</sup> made the most *violent gestures*<sup>10</sup>, *pacing*<sup>11</sup> the platform and sawing the air with his arms.

At the very *climax*<sup>12</sup> of his speech a sudden movement loosed the buttons from his worn duster. A *gust*<sup>13</sup> of wind blew the long *tails*<sup>14</sup> apart and exposed to view the faultless *attire*<sup>15</sup> of the *elegant*<sup>16</sup> dandy—his *ruffled shirt*<sup>17</sup> front, his diamond studs, and his gold watch chain with *sparkling pendants*<sup>18</sup>. Taylor was so taken aback that he *paused*<sup>19</sup> in his *harangue*<sup>20</sup>, and before he could say another word, Lincoln arose and stepped forward. Pointing to the finely dressed colonel, he cried out: “*Behold*<sup>21</sup> the hard-handed

1. 引伸； 2. 筋肉； 3. 耕手； 4. 唯一開創者； 5. 白嫩的手； 6. 奢侈度日； 7. 變成； 8. 善辯論； 9. 熱誠； 10. 劇烈姿勢； 11. 疾行； 12. 最高峯； 13. 疾風； 14. 裙； 15. 服飾； 16. 華美； 17. 襖袖的襯衫； 18. 燦爛的表墜； 19. 暫停； 20. 滔滔的演說； 21. 注意。

校官先演說，他開頭就稱贊傑克遜總統的智能，於是簡單地說到關稅和內部改進以及民主黨爲伊利諾斯州做的大事。他又把演詞引伸開來，他告訴農人聽衆說，民主黨員——他是最卑賤黨員之一——是真正這地方的骨幹和筋肉；他們是勞工，生產者；他們是胼手的勞苦大眾，辛勤艱苦的子民，奢侈的不屑爲者；更進一層說，他們是國家繁榮的唯一的開倡者。另一方面，他描摹自由黨員爲穿絲襪的紳士，不慣勞動的雙手白嫩<sub>的</sub>誇大狂的貴族，剝削貧人奢侈度日的不像樣的爵士。他見他的話對聽衆發生了影響，他越說越辯才橫溢，他的高漲的熱誠更生出劇烈的姿勢，手舞足蹈在講台上迴旋。

在他演詞的最高峯匆促的動作把他舊罩衫上的鈕扣鬆開了。一陣大風吹開了他長衣襟露出花花公子的真相——他的褶綉的襪衣前方，他的鑽石的飾鈕，他的帶着耀眼的垂飾的金表鍊。泰樓就退後暫停他的歪曲的演講，在他再繼續說下去以前，林肯站起來踏步向前。指着衣服華好的校官，他喊道：“注意這個辛勤艱苦的子民！看着，朋友們，這骨幹和筋肉的標本。”於是他站在衆人都能看見的地方，把他的露着骨頭的大

son of toil! Look, my friends, at this *specimen*<sup>1</sup> of bone and sinew." Then, standing where all could see him, he laid his great *bony*<sup>2</sup> hands upon his own breast and said: "But here is your rag baron with the lily-white hands! Here, at your service, is one of your silk-stockinged gentry! Yes, I suppose that I am even a bloated aristocrat!"

He needed to say no more. The crowd burst into shouts of laughter and *applause*<sup>3</sup>. He had won the day.

The colonel, in great *confusion*<sup>4</sup>, retired from the platform; and it was many a day before he heard the last of the "rag barons" and the "hard-handed sons of toil."

\* \* \*

The Democratic candidate for the presidency that year was Martin Van Buren, who had been Vice President during Jackson's second term. His supporters were assured of his fitness for the office by his declaration that he would "follow in the footsteps of his *predecessor*<sup>5</sup>." The Whigs very foolishly divided their votes among four candidates, and of course were badly beaten. The election again placed the power in the hands of the Democrats, and it was settled that "Old Hickory's" policy would *control*<sup>6</sup> the government for at least four years longer.

In some of the state and *local*<sup>7</sup> elections, however, the Democrats suffered great losses, and this encouraged the Whigs to persevere in their opposition.

Sangamon County, Illinois, was *entitled*<sup>8</sup> to send nine *delegates*<sup>9</sup> to the state legislature—two *senators*<sup>10</sup> and seven *representatives*<sup>11</sup>. When the election came off, it was found that the nine chosen were all Whigs; and of these, Mr.

---

1. 標本; 2. 露骨的; 3. 喝采; 4. 手忙脚亂; 5. 前任; 6. 管理; 7. 地方的; 8. 應得; 9. 議員; 10. 參議員(上院議員); 11. 衆議員(下院議員)。

手放在胸膛前面說道：“但是這裏是你們的不像樣的雙手白傲的爵士！這裏，爲你們服務的，是你們的穿絲襪子的紳士中的一個！是的，我想我還是一個虛浮的貴族呵！”

他不須再說什麼了。羣衆驟起狂笑和喝彩。他得到勝利了。

校官舉止慌亂從他的講台上退出來；隔了許多天他總聽見最後的“不像樣的爵士”和“胼手的勞苦子民”的呼聲。

\* \* \*

民主黨的總統候選人是馬丁文蒲綸，他在傑克遜第二任期中當過副總統。他的擁護者決定他的宜於這個職位因爲他宣布他“對前任的設施‘蕭規曹隨’。”自由黨愚拙地把他們的票分給四個候選人，當然是失敗了。這次選舉重新把政權放在民主黨手裏，決定了，“老歌考連”的政策要繼續管理政府四年。

但是在有幾個州選和地方選舉裏邊民主黨受到大失敗，這鼓勵自由黨保持他們的反對地位。

伊利諾斯州遜格們郡應該選送九個議員到州議會——兩個參議員和七個衆議員。選舉開票的時候，發表九個當選人都



Lincoln received a higher number of votes than any other candidate. A very odd thing about this delegation was that each man was more than six feet in height. They were nicknamed the "Long Nine;" and Lincoln, because he was the tallest of all, was called the "Sangamon Chief."

#### IV. AN ATTORNEY AT LAW

When winter came and the legislature met again at Vandalia, Mr. Lincoln was in his old seat. He was looked upon now as one of the leaders among the Whigs, and there were few more active members in the lower house of lawmakers. If all the laws which he *advocated*<sup>1</sup> had been passed, the state would soon have been *bankrupt*<sup>2</sup>.

The people of his county had said, "Vote for a general system of public improvements," and he took them at their word. He voted for railroads where there could be neither freight nor passengers, and for public highways where there was no one to travel them; and he suggested the digging of a ship canal between *Lake Michigan*<sup>3</sup> and the Mississippi along the same route that is now *traversed*<sup>4</sup> by the great Drainage Canal of Chicago. His object in supporting these measures was to increase and develop the trade of the state, and thus bring *capital*<sup>5</sup> into it and *temper*<sup>6</sup> *enterprising*<sup>7</sup> men to become its citizens.

It had been provided by law that the legislature should, at the proper time, select some permanent place for the seat of government—a place as convenient as might be to all of the inhabitants of the state. This duty *devolved*<sup>8</sup> upon the legislature of 1837—1838. Vandalia was but a little village, not easy of *access*<sup>9</sup>, and far from the center

1. 主張; 2. 使破產; 3. 密支安湖(北美五大湖之一); 4. 通過; 5. 資本; 6. 吸引; 7. 有膽識的; 8. 交付; 9. 必由之路。

是自由黨；其中林肯的票比較任何一個候選人多。選舉的特色是每一個當選人都是六尺以上身材。他們受到“九個高個子”的徽號；林肯因為是其中的最高的，人稱“遜格們領袖。”

#### 四 律師

冬季到了，議會在文台利亞重行開會，林肯先生仍在他的舊位置上。他現在被看做自由黨領袖人物之一，沒有幾個較多的活動份子在立法員的下議院裏面。倘使他所主張的法律全部通過了，本州就要宣告破產。他的郡內的人民曾經說，“投改良公共事業制度的票，”他就依着他們的話。他投票主張建築未有貨運也沒有乘客的鐵路，沒有人行的公路；他又建議開挖在密支安湖和密士失必河中間的運河，就是目前支加哥的大傑倫尼其運河沿着的路線。他的目的在繼續進行這個議案是要發展本州商業，輸入資本并使有胆識的人來做州民。

法律規定會議應在適當的時候選出永久的政府所在地。——對全體住民同樣便利的地位。這個責任於1837—1838年交付與議會。文台利亞只是一個小村子，不是衝要之區，離開

of the state. Everybody knew that it could not remain the capital. <sup>1</sup> The Long Nine of Sangamon proposed that Springfield should be the favored place. They chose Mr. Lincoln to manage the *project*<sup>1</sup> in the legislature; and such was his influence with the other members that the measure was carried.

The people of Sangamon County were delighted with what had been done. Many other towns had *aspired*<sup>2</sup> to become the capital; and but for Mr. Lincoln's energy and good management, Springfield would hardly have won the prize. When the Long Nine returned home at the close of the legislature, the citizens of Springfield gave them a public welcome and *entertained*<sup>3</sup> them at a *banquet*<sup>4</sup>.

Among the *toasts*<sup>5</sup> given at this banquet was one in honor of Abraham Lincoln: "He has fulfilled the expectations of his friends, and *disappointed*<sup>6</sup> the hopes of his enemies." This was no doubt pleasing to him, but it was not just what he wanted at that time. It did not answer a question that was causing him great uneasiness.

That question was, What should he do next?

He was now twenty-eight years old. He had not yet begun, except in a very small way, the practice of the profession for which he had been so long trying to prepare himself. He was in debt. He was discouraged, and felt that he had not yet made any real start in life. Should he return to the dead village of New Salem, and again earn his support by surveying farms and doing odd jobs for his neighbors?

William Butler, one of the citizens who had been most anxious to have the capital removed to Springfield, noticed

---

1. 計畫; 2. 渴望; 3. 款待; 4. 筵席; 5. 賀詞; 6. 使沮喪。

州的中心點還遠。人人知道這個地方不能成爲一州的都會。九個高個子提議斯潑林非爾特應爲適合的地址。他們推舉林肯管理議會的計劃；經過他同其他議員的力量，計劃就實現了。

遜格們郡的人民對他們所辦的事業表示欣悅。另各有好幾個市鎮也希望成爲一個州的都會；而如其沒有林肯的才能和合法管理，斯潑林非爾特很難取得首邑地位。九個高個子在議會閉會回到家鄉的時候，斯潑林非爾特的公民公開歡迎，并設盛宴款待。

宴會席上的賀詞是向林肯而發的：“他已經滿足了朋友們的仰望，沮喪了仇讐者的希冀。這當然對於他是引爲快慰的，但這還不是他目前所需要的。因爲這不能答復使他大爲不安的問題。

問題就是，他第二步應當做的是什麼？

他現在是二十八歲了。除了極小的規模之外，他還沒有執行準備已久的律師職業。他負了債務。他失望了，覺得他還沒有真正地作人生的肇始。他要不要回到紐養綸的死村子去，重新測量地皮和替街坊做零雜工作，以維持生活呢？

惠廉勃脫來，一個最切望州會遷到斯潑林非爾特的公民，

the young man's *dejection*<sup>1</sup>.

"Lincoln," he said, "now that the legislature has *adjourned*<sup>2</sup> what are you going to do for a living?"

"I really don't know," was the answer. "If I could afford it, I should like to make my home in Springfield and begin the *practice* of law."

"And why not afford it?" said Mr. Butler. "You shall come to my house, and make your home with me as long as you please."

That was indeed a *generous offer*<sup>3</sup> on the part of Mr. Butler. Abraham Lincoln knew that it was *sincere*<sup>4</sup>, and he accepted it, feeling more grateful than words could express.

In the same year, therefore, that Springfield was chosen as the permanent capital of the state, it was honored by becoming the home of the man that was finally to be its most *illustrious*<sup>5</sup> citizen.

During the next three or four years, Mr. Lincoln took his meals at the house of Mr. Butler; but he lodged in a very plain little room which he shared with a young Kentucky merchant named Joshua Speed.

\* \* \*

Springfield was at that time a mere village of straggling wooden houses, most of which were only *one story*<sup>6</sup> in height. The streets were *wastes*<sup>7</sup> of black dust in dry weather, and *sloughs*<sup>8</sup> of blacker mud in wet weather. There were no *sidewalks*<sup>9</sup>, and the only crossings were those made by throwing blocks of wood into the roadway.

In the big county of Sangamon, from which several other counties have since been *carved*<sup>10</sup>, there were about

---

1. 沮喪； 2. 離會； 3. 慷慨的貢獻； 4. 誠意的； 5. 顯赫的； 6. 一層；  
7. 灰塵； 8. 泥坑； 9. 人行道； 10. 分割。

注意到這少年的沮喪。

他說，“林肯，現在議會已經休會了，你怎樣維持生活呢？”

回答是，“我實在不知道。倘使我能擔負得起，我喜歡在斯潑林非爾特建立家庭并開始執行律師事業。”

勃脫來說“爲什麼不能擔負呢？你到我家裏來，同我一塊過着，你愛住多久就多久。”

那在於勃脫來一方面是慷慨的施與。亞伯拉罕林肯知道這是誠意的，他就接受了，感激有非言語所能形容的。

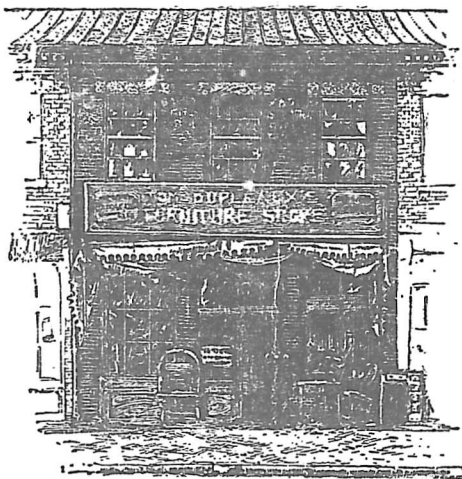
同年，斯潑林非爾特就選定爲一州的永久的首邑，它因爲變了最後成爲偉大市民的家而著名了，

在以後的三四年中，林肯先生在勃脫來家中膳食；但是他住在一個很簡樸的小屋裏，同一個壘塔啓的少年商人約好史披特一起。

斯潑林非爾特在那個時候僅是一個木屋散漫佈置着的村子，大半是平房。街道上在天晴時塵土飛揚，下雨時泥濘沾足。也沒有人行道，交叉處用木塊鋪在路上而成。

eighteen thousand people; and of these, not one tenth were residents of the new state capital. Many of the people had come from Kentucky, and among the better class much attention was paid to *social matters*<sup>1</sup> and to *dress*<sup>2</sup> and (as Lincoln himself quaintly said) there was "a good deal of *flourishing*<sup>3</sup> about in *carriages*<sup>4</sup>."

The rude customs of pioneer days, however, had not entirely disappeared. It was still not uncommon to see men on the street clad in buckskin breeches and shirts of *linsey-woolsey*<sup>5</sup>, with deerskin *moccasins*<sup>6</sup> on their feet and



Law Office of Stuart & Lincoln, upstairs

carrying hunting knives in their belts. The women on the farms dressed very simply in homespun *frocks*<sup>7</sup>; they wore calico sunbonnets to church; and they thought nothing of going barefooted during the warm seasons of the year. Throughout the country there was a *lingering*<sup>8</sup> *pre-judice*<sup>9</sup> against the finery of the "city folks," and many an honest farmer thought that he saw in the growing luxury of the times the causes that would in time bring

1. 社交; 2. 辭令; 3. 炫入的; 4. 姿態; 5. 麻毛交織物; 6. 軟皮鞋;  
7. 婦女之後開跨長衣; 8. 久留的; 9. 偏見。

在遜格們大郡，後來分割出另外幾個郡來的，有一萬八千人民；當然，不到十分之一是新都會的土著。多數人是從墾脫啓來的，在比較上等的階級裏面，很注意到社交和辭令，（林肯自己奇異地說：）“以姿態炫人。”

殖民時期粗獷的風氣還沒有完全消失。在街上看見身穿牡鹿皮褲和手織粗布的襯衫，足登鹿皮靴，皮帶上帶着獵刀的人是不以為奇的。婦女們在農場下穿着簡單的手織布上衣；戴着棉布護目帽到教堂去；她們在暖和的季節赤着脚行若無事。各地鄉間有一種殘留的偏見反對城市裏人的華飾。而許多老實的農夫見到風俗日漸奢侈，以為是總有一天使國家和州邑受到可怕的災殃。

這是很可能的，林肯穿的粗陋的衣服，他的辛勞胼胝的手，他的簡樸的鄉人態度，對於他早年在遜格們郡受人歡迎很有關係。但那是他的真純的良善意識，他的天賦的慈厚胸懷，他的領袖天才贏得伊利諾斯智識份子的尊敬。



*dire*<sup>1</sup> *disaster*<sup>2</sup> to the state and nation.

It is very possible that the rough clothing which Mr. Lincoln wore, his *toil-hardened*<sup>3</sup> hands, and his simple country manners, *had much to do with*<sup>4</sup> his early popularity in Sangamon County. But it was his *sterling*<sup>5</sup> good sense, his *inborn*<sup>6</sup> kindness of heart, and his native qualities as a leader that won for him the *esteem*<sup>7</sup> of the *intelligent*<sup>3</sup> people of Illinois.

He had scarcely become settled in Springfield before Major John T. Stuart, the lawyer who had lent him books and helped him in his studies, asked ~~him~~ to become his *partner*<sup>9</sup>. And so, in a *cramped*<sup>10</sup> and dusty little office overlooking the main street of the village, he *established*<sup>11</sup> himself as the *junior member*<sup>12</sup> of the *firm*<sup>13</sup> of

STUART & LINCOLN

Attorneys-at-Law

## V. HOW LINCOLN RODE THE CIRCUIT

Mr. Stuart was at that time very deeply engaged in politics, for it was the ambition of his life to be elected to Congress. He had been a candidate at the last election, and had been defeated. He was now **1837** *laying his wires*<sup>14</sup> for the next election, and did not take much interest in the practice of law. It followed, therefore, that most of the business of the firm was done by Abraham Lincoln.

1. 可怕的; 2. 災殃; 3. 賸賸; 4. 對……有關; 5. 真純的; 6. 天賦的; 7. 稟賦; 8. 有知識; 9. 合作者; 10. 狹隘的; 11. 就職; 12. 助理者; 13. 事務所; 14. 暗中運動。

他住到斯潑林非爾特之後，借書給他幫助他研究的律師約翰史泰脫少校請他合夥。於是在一間臨村中大街的狹隘而塵埃滿佈的小辦公室內，他當一個助理律師在

史泰脫 林 肯	律 師	事 務 所 裏。
------------	-----	----------

## 五 林肯怎樣周歷裁判區內法定 巡行路線

史泰脫先生在那時候竭力從事政治活動，因為他一生的志願是要在議會當選。他在上次選舉中做了候選人，但是失敗了。他現在暗中運動下次選舉，對執行律務不感多大興趣。因此事務所的大部份營業都由亞伯拉罕林肯辦的。

但是那裏事情並不多，所以有許多的讀書時間——這恰是林肯所需求的。也有許多討論當時政治問題的機會，和說滑稽笑梯的故事和接待無聊朋友的閒暇。對於這些機會和職務

But there was not a great deal to be done, and so there was plenty of time for study—which was just what Mr. Lincoln needed. There were also many occasions for discussing the political questions of the day, and much leisure for the telling of *droll*<sup>1</sup> stories and the *entertainment*<sup>2</sup> of idle friends. To all these duties and opportunities, Lincoln applied himself with the same honest energy that had made him a good rail splitter and a successful surveyor.

It must not be thought that he had retired from the legislature. He was reelected in 1838 and again in 1840, thus serving eight years in that body. But the sessions each year were short, and Mr. Lincoln managed to attend them without neglecting his work as an attorney.

Sometimes this work *required*<sup>3</sup> his *attendance at court*<sup>4</sup> in another county; and it often became necessary to follow the judge to several places in his *judicial district*<sup>5</sup>. This was called “riding the circuit,” and in those early times it was a regular part of every lawyer’s business.

The *courthouses*<sup>6</sup> were rude affairs, often built of logs and almost as comfortless as *barns*<sup>7</sup>. But whenever court was in session at any one of them, the people flocked to it from all the country round; and the courtroom was crowded with interested listeners. Thus it was, that even the most *illiterate*<sup>8</sup> farmers came to have a fair knowledge of the foundation principles of law. The county courts were, in one sense of the word, schools where good citizenship was taught.

For twenty-one years Mr. Lincoln, in his *capacity of attorney*<sup>9</sup>, attended these courts; and within that time he

---

1. 諷諧; 2. 招待; 3. 必需; 4. 出庭; 5. 裁判區; 6. 裁判所; 7. 牲舍; 8. 目不識丁; 9. 律師資格。

上，林肯利用當初一個優越的劈木棒者和成功的測量員的同樣誠懇精力來幹。

不要以為他已經從議會裏退出了。他在 1838 年再當選。1840 年又當選，在那個機關內任職八年之久。但每年的會期是短的，林肯先生設法從事律師事務不懈。

在這種工作裏，有時候他必須上別的郡邑裏出庭；因此常常需要跟隨着法官在他的裁判區內。這叫做“周歷裁判區內法官巡行的路線，”在那時候這是律師的照例工作。

裁判所的房屋是簡陋的工事，用木頭建造得彷彿像牲舍一樣的不安適。但是在任何一個法庭開審的時候，人民從四方各郡邑聚集攏來；裁判室裏擠滿了有興味的聽衆。就是目不識丁的農人也來求一些淺近的法律上基本智識。鄉區法庭的一制意義是教育良好公名的學校。

林肯先生以律師資格出庭二十一年；（他做史泰脫 Mr. Stuart 幫辦律師僅兩三年。後來，又和法官史緝芬羅格 Judge Stephen T. Logan 合作，經歷得稍長久些。在 1843 年又和少年律師威廉霍鄧 William H. Herndon 合組，直到林肯被選

had the management of many important cases. He was by no means a learned lawyer. How could he be, having had no teachers and none of the usual opportunities? But he was well liked by his *fellow-lawyers*<sup>1</sup>; he was respected by the judges on the bench; and he knew very well how to win the sympathies of *juries*<sup>2</sup>. In that new country the cases that came before the courts were, for the most part, of a very simple character; they required no fine *scholarship*<sup>3</sup> to discover all their points. There were no *vast*<sup>4</sup>, *intricate*<sup>5</sup> problems to be solved, such as now require legal *talent*<sup>6</sup> of the highest order. And Mr. Lincoln was seldom on the wrong side of a case. His *conscience*<sup>7</sup> would not permit him to support a cause which he believed to be unjust, or to defend a person whom he knew to be *guilty*<sup>8</sup>.

Those were great times for the lawyers in that Western country. While following the judge on his circuit, they were often obliged to go long distances in all sorts of weather. Sometimes they rode on horseback, with saddlebags *dangling*<sup>9</sup> on either side. Sometimes, when *fees*<sup>10</sup> had not been plentiful, they trudged on foot along grassy *by-paths*<sup>11</sup> or through the black mud of the prairie roads. Usually, when going from county seat to county seat, several lawyers would travel in company. No matter how bitterly they might oppose one another in the courts, they were always kind, *joyial*<sup>12</sup> companions on the road.

There were no bridges over the prairie streams, and these, although dry in summer, were often *foaming*<sup>13</sup> torrents in the spring. The only way to cross them at such

---

1. 同行律師； 2. 陪審官； 3. 學識； 4. 廣大； 5. 繁複； 6. 才能； 7. 良知； 8. 犯罪； 9. 垂掛着擺動； 10. 費； 11. 小路； 12. 愉快的； 13. 起沫的急流。

爲總統。) 那時候他處理許多重要案件。他不能算是一個滿腹書卷的律師。他沒有老師，也沒有普通的機會，怎麼樣能夠呢？但是他也像同行的律師一樣，在座位上受法官的尊敬；他知道怎樣取得陪審員的同情。在那新的鄉村裏到法庭上的案件大概是簡單的性質；他們不需要精湛的學識發現各法律要點。沒有廣大而繁複的問題要解決，像現代的那種，須要高度的法律才能。林肯先生難得在案件錯誤的一方面的。他的良知不允許他扶助他認爲不公正的理由，或是爲他知道是犯罪的人。

那是西部郡邑中律師們重要的時候。在跟隨法官在巡行路線上的時候，他們在任何天氣裏面不得不經行長路程。有時候他們跨着馬，鞍囊在兩邊搖動地挂着。有時候，錢不充足，他們便在長滿草的小路和草原間的泥路上步行。平常從這個郡區席位到那個郡區席位，幾個律師結伴同行。在法庭上他們無論反對得怎麼樣劇烈，在路上總是很愉快的夥伴。

在草原的小河上面沒有什麼橋梁，這些地方在夏季雖是乾着，在春季卻急流噴涌。在那時候走過去惟一的方法是找最

times, was by finding the *shallowest*<sup>1</sup> places and *fording*<sup>2</sup>. The lawyers of Sangamon County when "riding the circuit," often found their way *impeded*<sup>3</sup> by one of these streams. Then Abraham Lincoln, having the longest legs, was sent forward to find how deep the water was. He would take off his boots, roll up his trousers, and *wade*<sup>4</sup> boldly in, looking for a good fording place. When he had found it, he would kindly help the rest of the party across—showing them where to step, and sometimes giving the smaller ones a generous lift with his strong arms.

One summer day several lawyers were returning to Springfield from a neighboring county seat, where they had been attending court. They were riding on horseback, along a narrow wagon way that was bordered on either side by a growth of underwoods, such as *hawthorn*<sup>5</sup> bushes and wild *plum*<sup>6</sup> trees. When nearly through the thicket, they came to a brook, where they stopped to let their horses drink. Then it was noticed that one of their number was missing.

"Where is Lincoln?" they asked.

The man who had been riding with him said that he had stopped at some distance back in order to pick up some young birds that the wind had blown from their nest. No doubt he was *hunting*<sup>7</sup> the nest, to put them into it again.

They rode on slowly, and by and by Lincoln overtook them.

"Well, Abe, did you find that bird's nest?"

"I did," he answered; "although it was no easy thing

---

1. 最淺的; 2. 涉水; 3. 阻礙; 4. 涉水; 5. 山檉; 6. 梅樹; 7. 尋覓。

淺的地方涉水而過。遜格們郡的律師們在周歷法官巡行路線的時候，走這常爲這些水道所阻礙。亞伯拉罕林肯，有最長的腿，派到前面去視察水有多少深。他脫了鞋，捲起褲管，勇敢地踏進水裏尋適宜涉過的地方。他找到以後，就很和善地幫助其餘的同伴越過去——指示給他們什麼地方可以踏步，有時用有力的膀子抗起較小的人。

有一個夏天，幾個律師回到斯潑林非爾特去，從他們聽審的鄰近的法庭席上。他們騎了馬，沿了兩旁長着野梅和山楂叢林的車道。在快要穿過叢莽的時候，他到了一道小河旁，在那邊就讓牲口取飲。注意到一個同伴失散了。

他們問道，“林肯那裏去了？”

於是同他在一起乘馬的說他在後邊拾起被風從巢中刮下來的小鳥。無疑的他正在尋找鳥巢，把牠們放進去。

他們慢慢行着，過了一會林肯趕上他們了。

“好，亞伯，你找到鳥巢沒有？”

他回答道，“我找到了，雖然不是容易。要是我讓那些可



to get at: I could not have slept to-night if I had left those poor creatures on the ground and not restored them to their mother.”

Think of his great, sturdy frame, and then of his gentleness of heart—of his *tenderness*<sup>1</sup> for all things weak and helpless. It was this very tenderness and sympathy that made him the noble man that he was. It was his gentleness that afterward *endeared*<sup>2</sup> him to *multitudes*<sup>3</sup> of his *fellow-beings*<sup>4</sup>.

## VI. A STIRRING<sup>5</sup> CAMPAIGN

The years passed swiftly now, and the time soon came for another presidential election. The Democrats, as a matter of course, *renominated*<sup>6</sup> Martin Van Buren. The Whigs *nominated*<sup>7</sup> William Henry Harrison of Ohio for President, and John Tyler of Virginia for Vice President. 1840

The Democrats declared themselves opposed to any system that would favor the industries of one section of the country at the expense of another section; and they asserted that Congress had no power to *interfere*<sup>8</sup> with the *practice of slaveholding*<sup>9</sup> in any of the states. The Whigs made no declaration of principles. They aimed only at the *overthrow*<sup>10</sup> of the Democratic party and the defeat of Martin Van Buren.

The campaign was the most *remarkable*<sup>11</sup> that had ever been known. Somebody had ridiculed General Harrison by saying that he lived in a log cabin and that all he wanted was a small *pension*<sup>12</sup> from the government and a

---

1. 慈愛； 2. 使人親愛； 3. 羣衆； 4. 友伴； 5. 動人的； 6. 重新推選；  
7. 推選； 8. 干涉； 9. 蓄奴習慣； 10. 打倒； 11. 出奇的，非常的； 12. 年金。

憐的小動物留在地上不能回到他們的母親身邊。我今晚不能睡覺了。”

試想他的偉大強壯的身材，還有他的仁愛的心腸——他的對弱小無助者的慈祥。這種同情和慈愛的心理使他成爲高尚的人格。這種民胞物與的胸懷使他充沛於億兆衆庶。

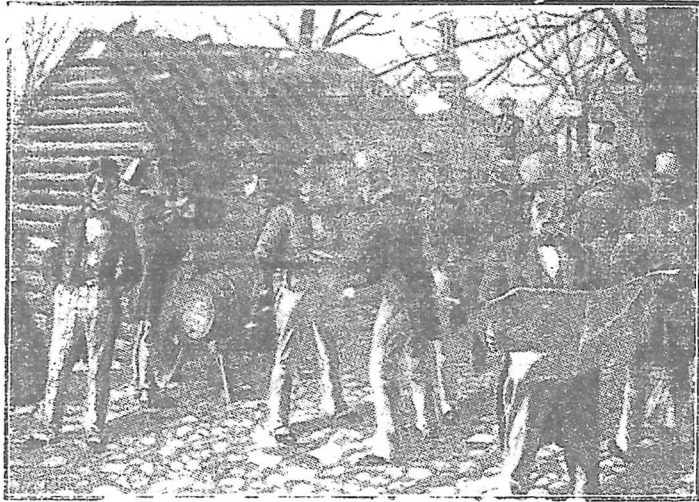
## 六 動人的選舉競爭

一年年很快的過去，另一個選舉總統期來到了。這是當然的，民主黨重選馬丁文部倫，自由黨推選俄亥俄的惠靈亨利哈立生做大總統，味吉尼亞的約翰泰來做副總統。

民主黨主張反對有利於任何使全國某區域得利而使其他各區蒙受損失的工業制度。他們確認識會無權干涉任何州的蓄奴習慣。自由黨沒有宣布政治主張。他們祇以打倒民主黨和擊敗馬丁文部倫爲目的。

這一次非常的競選是前此所未有的。有的人嘲笑哈立生

barrel of hard *cider*<sup>1</sup>. The Whigs made the most of this. They built small log cabins and hauled them around the country to give point to the fact that Harrison was a man of the people. At the door of each of these cabins was a barrel of cider, with a *long-handled drinking gourd*<sup>2</sup> above it, and everybody was welcome to help himself to a



The Log-cabin Campaign—A “Stump Speaking”

draught of the sparkling liquor. There were flag raisings and *barbecues*<sup>3</sup>, “stump speakings” and noisy *rallies*<sup>4</sup> with *brass bands*<sup>5</sup> and *cannon*<sup>6</sup> and blustering speeches. Songs were *composed*<sup>7</sup> and sung, telling about Harrison’s humble life and simple habits. Never before had all classes of people entered so heartily into the business of choosing a President. The “log-cabin campaign,” as it was called,

1. 蘋果酒； 2. 長柄酒瓢； 3. 郊宴； 4. 集合； 5. 銅樂隊； 6. 砲聲； 7. 製作(文字或樂曲)。

將軍說他住在一個木屋內，他的全部需要是政府裏的年金和一桶烈性的蘋果酒。自由黨人利用這一點。他們造了一個小木屋在各處拖着，指示出哈立生就是這一種人。在每一個這樣的小木屋門口放着一桶蘋果酒，上面挂着一個長柄酒瓢，各人走過都歡迎請飲。那裏升着旗，郊宴。“站在木墩上演說”還有帶着銅樂砲聲和大聲呼喝的喧鬧集合。唱出製成的歌，說出哈立生謙遜的生活和簡單的習慣。各階級的人都這樣熱心參加總統選舉是從來沒有的。“木屋的政治運動”當時所稱的，好久被人記憶為緊張的刺激時期，愈其是在西部。

在整個夏季亞伯拉罕林肯忙着為自由黨演說，為哈立生將軍，為他自己——因為他想重新做州議會的候選人。哈立生將軍曾有一次在印第安那鐵潑開諾附近一個大戰役裏面戰敗印第安人。因此他常被稱為“老鐵潑開諾，”他的黨員的戲弄

was long remembered as a time of intense excitement<sup>1</sup>, especially in the West.

All summer long Abraham Lincoln was busy making speeches for the Whig party, for General Harrison, and for himself—for he was again a candidate for the legislature. General Harrison had once defeated the Indians in a fierce<sup>2</sup> battle near Tippecanoe in Indiana. He was therefore often called “Old Tippecanoe,” and the rallying<sup>3</sup> cry of his party was “Tippecanoe and Tyler, too!”

Election day came, and Harrison was chosen President by a very large majority. The Whigs were almost everywhere victorious<sup>4</sup>. Abraham Lincoln was elected to the legislature for the fourth time. Jacksonian democracy became, for the time being, a thing of the past.\*

\* \* \*

The contest<sup>5</sup> between the two great parties had been so full of interest that many people did not even hear of a third party which came into notice for the first time during the campaign of 1840. It was a party which boldly took up as an issue<sup>6</sup> the very question which the other parties were anxious to say nothing about—the question of slavery<sup>7</sup>. Both Whigs and Democrats claimed that any discussion of that subject was unwise and should be avoided.

\*On the 4th of March, 1841, President Harrison was inaugurated, and the Whigs looked forward to at least four years of supremacy in the government of the United States. But their hopes were soon dashed to the ground. Just one month after his inauguration the President died. The Vice President, John Tyler, who succeeded him, was a Southern Whig—a follower of John C. Calhoun—who had but little sympathy with the majority of the party. He was soon in open disagreement with the men who had elected him. The Whig leaders deserted him; and before a year had passed he found himself obliged to lean upon the Democrats for support.

---

1. 刺激; 2. 猛烈的; 3. 鼓弄的; 4. 勝利; 5. 競爭; 6. 爭點; 7. 奴隸制度。

的呼喊也叫做“鐵潑開諾和泰來!”

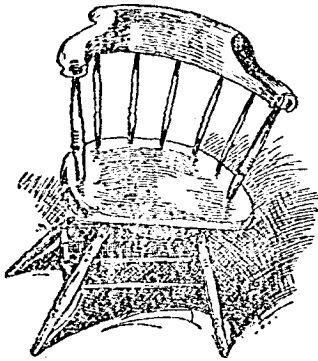
選舉時候到了，哈立生被大多數人推選為大總統。自由黨在各地也都勝利了。亞伯拉罕林肯第四次在州議會裏面當選。傑克桑尼安的民主政治在當時已成陳跡了。\*

兩黨中間的競爭這樣饒有興味，許多人沒有聽見第三黨受人注意在 1840 年競選中。這第三黨是一個大胆地採取別黨所不願意講的唯一的題目——奴隸制度問題——做論點的黨。自由黨和民主黨都認為討論這個是不聰明而應當避免的題目。

\*                     \*                     \*

\*在一千八百四十一年三月四日，哈立生總統行就職禮，看上去自由黨在聯邦政府佔優勢的特權至少可以有四年之久。但是他們的希望立刻歸地無餘。在就職後一月，這位總統逝世了！承繼職位的副總統素來是一個南方的自由黨員，——是 John C. Calhoun 的從者——這黨中的大多數人對他很少同情。他立刻為選舉他的人開始表示不滿。自由黨的領袖捨棄了他；過了一年之後，他覺得不得不依賴民主黨來支持了。

There were a few determined persons, however, who believed that slavery was not only a great *moral evil*<sup>1</sup> but that it was also a constant *menace*<sup>2</sup> to the free *institutions*<sup>3</sup> of our country. Hated as *fanatics*<sup>4</sup> both in the North and in the South, these people grew stronger in numbers and at length determined to *organize*<sup>5</sup> themselves into a political party. They called their *organization*<sup>6</sup> the Liberty party—although others called them by the despised name of *Abolitionists*<sup>7</sup>—



Lincoln's Office Chair

and they *nominated*<sup>8</sup> James G. Birney as their candidate for President. Of course Mr. Birney did not carry a single state nor get a single electoral vote—nobody expected it. But his mere nomination hastened the day when the question of slavery would become the foremost of all political issues.

We know what young Lincoln thought of slavery when at the auction in New Orleans he saw men and women *sold to the highest bidder*<sup>9</sup>. But he was not an Abolitionist: he was opposed to any interference with slavery, for he believed that that would make matters worse instead of better. Thousands of the most earnest friends of the negro believed the same. Slavery, in their opinion, was an *incurable*<sup>10</sup> evil; and they said, "Since it must be endured, let us endure it patiently."

And now, to understand clearly the great work that lay before Mr. Lincoln—all undreamed of as yet—let us take

1. 道德上的罪惡； 2. 威脅； 3. 制度； 4. 狂妄者； 5. 組織； 6. 組織；  
7. 廢止黑奴制者； 8. 推舉； 9. 拍賣； 10. 不可救治的。

但是幾個少數有決心的人，相信奴隸制度不單是道德上的罪惡，也是我們國家自由制度的一種威脅。他們在南北二部被憎為狂妄者，這些人的數目格外增強，最後決定組成一個政治組織。他們稱他們的組織為自由黨——雖然別人稱他一個華蔑的名稱叫做廢止黑奴制者——他們推選傑姆斯勃尼做總統候選人。當然勃尼先生並不代表那一州，也得不到一張選舉票——沒有人希望他當選。但是他的提供當選促進蓄奴制問題成為政治爭點的最先前題。

我們知道少年林肯在紐奧爾連斯拍賣場看見男女們被拍賣的時候對蓄奴制的觀念。但是他不是一個主張廢止黑奴制者；他反對任何干涉蓄奴制，因為他相信那樣要不能改善反使事情更壞。成千的對黑奴表同情者都這樣想。他們的意見蓄奴制是無法改善的罪惡；他們說，“因為這是必須忍受的，讓我們堅忍地耐着。”

現在，切實地明瞭放在林肯前面的偉大工作——全部還沒有夢想到的——讓我們對本題取更精細的考慮。亞伯拉罕



a more careful view of this subject. While Abraham Lincoln is entertaining *clients*<sup>1</sup> in his *dingy*<sup>2</sup> office, or riding the circuit with his brotherattorneys, or making stumpspeeches in support of his chosen party, let us leave him awhile and learn something of the history of the so-called institution of slavery. Let us find out, if we can, how it happened that human *bondage*<sup>3</sup> existed so long in a nation which, to use Mr. Lincoln's words, "was conceived in liberty, and *dedicated*<sup>4</sup> to the proposition that all men are created equal."

### VII. MASTER AND SLAVE

The earliest people of whom we have any account kept slaves. All the great nations that we read about in ancient history were slaveholding nations. Even at the present time in barbarous and half-civilized countries there are many slaves. It was not until within the *memory*<sup>5</sup> of men now living that the majority of *enlightened*<sup>6</sup> people began to think of human bondage as unwise and unjust.

Our *forefathers*<sup>7</sup> for many *generations*<sup>8</sup> regarded negroes and Indians as *inferior*<sup>9</sup> beings having no rights, and therefore fit only to serve those who had the mastery over them.

The first negro slaves in this country were brought to Virginia by a *Dutch*<sup>10</sup> sailing vessel in 1619. There were only twenty of them. They were black savages, but lately from Africa—*half-naked*<sup>11</sup> *brutish*<sup>12</sup>, *repulsive*<sup>13</sup>. The planters on the James River were not eager to buy them—they doubted if such fellows would be *profitable*<sup>14</sup>, but the Dutch traders offered them cheap—threatened to throw them overboard if not bought—and they were taken.

---

1. 事主(託律師告狀者); 2. 幽暗的; 3. 奴隸; 4. 貢獻; 5. 記憶之事;  
6. 傑明的; 7. 祖先; 8. 世代; 9. 下等的; 10. 荷蘭人; 11. 半裸; 12. 愚  
鈍的; 13. 惹人厭惡的; 14. 合用。

林肯在他幽暗的辦事室內招待事主的時候，或是同他的律師弟兄們乘馬經法官巡行路線的時候，或在木墩上支持他的選定的黨作演說的時候，讓我們留下他一會先來認識歷史上所稱的蓄奴制度。讓我們看出來，倘使我們能夠，怎麼樣人類奴隸在林肯先生所說的，“孕育於自由，供獻人類生而平等的主張”的國家中存在這樣長久。

## 七 主和奴

我們有歷史紀錄的最早的人類就蓄養奴隸，我們在古史上讀到的各大民族都是蓄奴的民族。就是現代的野蠻和半開化的國家都有許多奴隸。直到近世大多數開明的人才開始感覺奴隸制度的不智和不公。

我們好幾代的祖先，把黑人和紅人當做沒有人權的下等人，所以祇配服侍統治他們的

主人。

第一批黑奴在我們國內是在 1619 年由荷蘭國人在帆船中載到味吉尼亞。人數不過二十個，他們是黑種野蠻人，才從非洲來——半裸體的，頑鈍，惹人厭惡的。傑姆司河的農人不急切於買他們——他們懷疑這些人是不是合用；但是荷蘭人定了低賤的價格，——脅迫他們倘使賣不掉要扔出舷外——他們有人收去了。

From this <sup>1</sup>small beginning, negro slavery gradually spread into all the *colonies*<sup>1</sup> in the North as well as in the South. It was only in Georgia that human bondage was forbidden by law. "This colony," said its founder, "is established for the *benefit*<sup>2</sup> of free white laboring men. Free labor can never *prosper*<sup>3</sup> where there are slaves." But the early settlers in that colony believed it would be much pleasanter to have negroes do their work than do it themselves. They openly *defied*<sup>4</sup> the law and went into the business of slave trading and slaveholding as though it had never been forbidden. Within less than twenty years the law was *repealed*<sup>5</sup>.

While but few of the American colonists saw any harm in slavery, there were many who thought that no more negroes should be brought from Africa. In Virginia an effort was made to stop the bringing in of more slaves; but many Englishmen were growing rich through the trade in negroes, and the king and *parliament*<sup>6</sup> declared that the colonists should not *meddle*<sup>7</sup> in the matter.

In most of the Northern colonies slavery proved to be unprofitable. Little by little the people ceased to care for an institution which was plainly a *hindrance*<sup>8</sup> to general prosperity. And yet it was not until after the beginning of the Revolutionary War that any steps were taken to do away with negro bondage.

Soon after our country had gained its independence from Great Britain, however, the Northern states began to make an end of the unprofitable and troublesome institution. New Hampshire led the way. It was followed by Pennsylvania, Massachusetts, New Jersey. Soon in all

1. 殖民地; 2. 利益; 3. 發達; 4. 反抗; 5. 廢除; 6. 議院; 7. 干預; 8. 阻礙。

從這一次的小小開端，黑奴制度漸漸擴張到南北各部殖民地。祇在喬其亞蓄奴制爲法律所禁止。它的創始人說，“這個殖民地是爲自由的白種勞動大眾的利益而建立的。自由的勞動不能發達，倘使奴隸制度存在着。”

但是那殖民地上的移民相信有黑奴替他們做工作，比較他們自己做要來得痛快多了。他們公開地不服從這條法律，推行奴隸買賣和奴隸蓄養，好像它是不受禁止的。不到二十年這條法律廢除了。

當少數美利堅移民看出蓄奴制的害處的時候，許多人想無須再從非洲載運黑人來了。在味吉尼亞，用一種力量停止繼續運進奴隸；但是許多英吉利人由黑人的買賣致富，英王和議院提出移民不應干預這件事情。

在大部份北部殖民地蓄奴制證明是無益的。人民漸漸不注意顯然阻礙社會繁榮的制度。但是等到革命戰爭開始以後纔取那消滅黑奴制度的步驟。

在我們國家從大不列顛手裏爭得獨立以後，北部各州立即開始結束無益而困難的制度。紐亨什爾州領導這運動。跟着是賓寧弗尼亞，馬薩諸塞和紐哲爾西。在台來會以北的各州立

the states north of Delaware the negroes had been given their freedom. This was not because the people had come to look upon slavery as a great wrong, but because it was harmful to the interests of the large class of white persons who were obliged to work for their living.

In the South things were different. In the tobacco fields and in the regions where rice and *indigo*<sup>1</sup> were *cultivated*<sup>2</sup>, slavery was profitable. In the *stifling climate*<sup>3</sup> among the lowlands of the Carolinas, the savage blacks worked and flourished where white laborers would have perished. In Virginia and Maryland there were large *plantations*<sup>4</sup> that could not exist without the labor of slaves. In these states slavery seemed to be a necessity.

And yet there were many men in the South who saw the dangers into which the country was surely being led. Washington, Jefferson, Madison, Patrick Henry—great Virginians all—were slaveholders, and yet they would gladly have seen slavery *abolished*<sup>5</sup>. Jefferson wrote and spoke against it.

\*                     \*                     \*

Very soon after the states had become independent of Great Britain, it became necessary for Congress to make laws for the new wild territory between the Ohio River and the Great Lakes. From this region, then a wilderness of woods and prairies, the states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, and Wisconsin have since been formed.

But its great *resources*<sup>6</sup> were then unknown. Thomas Jefferson and some other far-sighted statesmen believed that when it was opened for settlement, people would flock thither and great *commonwealths*<sup>7</sup> would be formed equal

1. 藍靛； 2. 種； 3. 悶窒氣候； 4. 耕地； 5. 廢止； 6. 資源； 7. 共和國。

刻得到自由。這不是因為人民看出蓄奴制的不合理，不過因為有損於不得不為生活而工作的白人的廣大階層的利益。

在南部，事情是不同了。在煙草地和種稻和藍靛的田裏，蓄奴制是有益的。在卡羅來納低地內悶窒的氣候中，野蠻的黑人能工作和旺盛着，而白種工人却要毀滅了。在味吉尼亞和馬里蘭有許多耕地沒有奴隸工作不能存在的。在這些州內蓄奴制似乎必需。

還有許多在南部的人看到國家一定要引起危機。華盛頓，傑佛遜，麥迪遜，派屈力克亨利——都是味吉尼亞人，是握有奴隸的人，但他們還是喜歡廢止蓄奴。傑佛遜著文和演說反對它。

在合衆國脫離大不列顛獨立以後，國會必須為在俄亥俄河和大湖中間新的廣大的領土制定法律。從這個區域內，樹林和草原間，俄亥俄，印第安拿，威斯康星，密芝安，伊利諾斯諸州建立了。

但是它的廣大資源尚未被人知道。湯姆斯傑佛遜和幾個眼光遠大的政治家相信它開放做殖民地的時候，人口要聚集到那邊，大共和國就要成立起來，其地位之重要將與大西洋岸

in importance to any on the Atlantic coast. Should these new states be slave states?

Congress answered this question. In an *ordinance*<sup>1</sup> for the government of the territory it declared that slavery should be forever excluded from that portion of our country. Men from the South united with men from the North in *drafting*<sup>2</sup> and passing this law—a law that was to have far greater *influence*<sup>3</sup> upon the history of the nation than any one could then *foresee*<sup>4</sup>.

South of the Ohio another course was taken, Kentucky was set off from Virginia, and slaves were held there without question or dispute. North Carolina gave up her claims to Tennessee with the express *agreement*<sup>5</sup> that slavery therein should not be forbidden or meddled with. Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana—all were settled by slaveholders, who of course carried their slaves with them to their new homes.

Thus, from the very first, the Ohio River formed the dividing line between freedom and slavery in the West.

The people of the South had always been accustomed to slavery. Some saw its dangers and tried to avoid them by *dealing*<sup>6</sup> wisely and kindly with the negroes, hoping to *postpone*<sup>7</sup> the evil day as long as possible. But the greater number accepted things as they found them, and did not trouble themselves with the question at all.

When the *cotton gin*<sup>8</sup> was invented, and the cultivation of cotton became the chief industry of the South, there was a general demand for more slaves. Many ships, owned in large part by Northerners, were engaged in bringing black savages from Africa to be sold to the

---

1. 命令; 2. 起草; 3. 影響; 4. 預料; 5. 契約; 6. 處理; 7. 遲延; 8. 軋棉機。

的國家相頡頏。這些州應該不應該是蓄奴的州？

議會回答了這個問題。在給領土內政府的命令裏面提出蓄奴制應當永遠不容存在於我們國家的那一部分地土內。南部人同北部人聯合起來草擬并通過這條法律——在國家歷史上發生影響遠較任何人所能預料者為大的法律。

俄亥俄以南取另一種方法，聖塔啓從味亞尼亞分離出來，在那裏奴隸沒有爭論地保存着。北卡羅來納對田納西放棄它的權利用明顯的契約說蓄奴制在那裏不應加以禁止和干預。亞拉巴馬，密士失必，路易斯安那——都由蓄奴者移殖去的，他們當然帶着奴隸同他們一起到他們的新家庭。

因此，從最先起，俄亥俄河成爲自由和奴隸在西部的界線。

南部的人民已經常常習慣於蓄奴制。有的人見到它的危機設法避免，於是溫和地智慧地處理黑人，希冀遲延壞日子的到臨越長越好。但是大多數人找到了事件就接受它，並不以問題困擾自己。

軋棉機發明以後，種植棉花成爲南部的主要實業，更多的奴隸就需要了。許多船舶，大部份是北方商人所有的，是從事於從非洲載回黑奴來賣給南部農民。在 1808 年這種商業被



Southern planters. In 1808 this trade was forbidden by law; but the call for laborers in the great cotton fields increased. With each passing year the South became more and more dependent upon the labor of slaves; with each passing year the interests of the slaveholders became greater and greater, and the condition of the blacks in bondage became more and more hopeless.

Thus the South grew rich through the labor of its slaves; and the North looked on *approvingly*<sup>1</sup> and also grew rich. And everything might have gone on Peaceably enough had it not been for the growing jealousy between the two sections.

\* \* \*

At the time when our present government began there were seven Northern states and six Southern states. Thus the power of the two sections was quite evenly divided in Congress. From that time it was the policy of our statesmen to prevent either section from becoming much stronger than the other. To do this there came to be a sort of *silent understanding*<sup>2</sup> that whenever new states were admitted to the Union, a slave state should be *balanced*<sup>3</sup> against a free state. At first, Vermont, a free state, was *offset*<sup>4</sup> by Kentucky, a slave state. Then the admission of Tennessee was followed by that of Ohio; Louisiana *pre-ceeded*<sup>5</sup> Indiana; and Mississippi was paired with Illinois.

The first trouble *occurred*<sup>5</sup> when Missouri applied for admission into the Union. There were at that time no states west of the Mississippi. The greater part of the vast region *drained*<sup>7</sup> by the Missouri River was unsettled and unknown. Should slavery be permitted

1820

1. 稱善; 2. 默交; 3. 保持平衡; 4. 相抵; 5. 引入; 6. 遞過; 7. 灌溉。

法律所禁止；但在廣大的棉田裏，招收勞工的聲浪增加了。一年年過去，南部格外需要依賴奴隸工作；一年年過去蓄奴者的利益增加起來，而黑奴在奴役的境況更無希望。

於是南部因得奴隸們的勞力而日漸富庶；北部看來很滿意，也很富足。一切都可以和平地過去，倘使二部間沒有生長着嫉妒心。

\* \* \*

我們政府開始的時候，北部有七個州，南部有六個州。所以二部在國會裏面的勢力是很平均的。那時候我們政治家的政策是在阻止任何一方比較另一方強大。這樣做法就生出一種默契，無論那個新州承認加入聯邦的時候，一個蓄奴的州要同一個自由的州保持平衡。起先，凡蒙脫，一個自由州，以蓄奴的州墨塔啓相抵。於是田納西的准許加入隨着是俄亥俄；路易斯安那引入印第安拿；而密士失必和伊利諾斯相對比。

密蘇里准許加入聯邦的時候，遭遇到第一次困難了。那時候密士失必河以西還沒有什麼州。密蘇里河灌溉的廣大區域

in Missouri and the other states afterward to be formed there?

There were men in the North who wished Congress to *restrict*<sup>1</sup> slavery to the eastern side of the Mississippi. There were others who *claimed*<sup>2</sup> that Congress had no *voice*<sup>3</sup> in the matter, and that the people of Missouri must decide the question for themselves. But Maine was about to be admitted as a free state, and the South demanded that the next state must belong to the side of slavery.

The dispute in Congress became very bitter, and there were open threats, even in New England, of breaking up the Union. At last, however, through the efforts of Henry Clay, a compromise was agreed upon. Maine was to be admitted as a free state, and Missouri as a slave state; and slavery should not be permitted in any other part of the country west of the Mississippi except in such states and territories as might be formed south of the *parallel*<sup>4</sup> of *latitude*<sup>5</sup> known as 36° 30'.

The adoption of this compromise was really a great victory for the South. It not only brought another slave state into the Union, but it *settled*<sup>6</sup> all disputes as to whether slavery might not be carried west of the Mississippi and also whether Congress might not determine the question of its *extension*<sup>7</sup>. In the North, even those who did not believe in slavery were quite well satisfied; for this compromise seemed to assure freedom to much the larger part of the great West from which future states might be formed.

Thus the dispute was ended, to the *gratification*<sup>8</sup> of both parties. The slavery question disappeared from politics, and both Democrats and Whigs carefully shunned all

· 1. 限制; 2. 主張; 3. 發言權; 4. 緯線; 5. 緯度; 6. 解決; 7. 擴展; 8. 滿意。

還沒有移殖未被人知道。蓄奴制要不要在密蘇里和其他後來建立的州內存在？

在北部有人願意議會在密士失必河東邊限制蓄奴制，也有人主張議會無權討論，密蘇里州的人民必須自己來決定這問題。曼尼將要被認為自由州，南部要求第二個州必須屬於蓄奴的一方面。議會的辯論變為很激烈，發生了分裂聯邦的公然威脅，就是在紐英格蘭也是這樣。但是最後，經亨利克連的努力，折衷辦法成立。曼尼准許為自由州，密蘇里為蓄奴州；蓄奴制在密士失必以西的地區不准許，除開在緯度 36°30' 的緯線以南的諸州和領土可以成立之外。

這一種調停辦法的採用實在是南部的大勝利。這不單是把另一個蓄奴州帶到聯邦裏面，但也解決了蓄奴制能否在密士失必以西實行，和議會可否取決它的擴展問題的一切爭議。在北部，就是不相信蓄奴制的那些人也十分滿意；因為這一種辦法似乎保證了未來諸州可以建立起來的廣大的西部許多地方的自由制。

於是爭端在雙方滿意之下停息了。蓄奴問題在政治上見不到了，民主黨和自由黨小心地避開它的討論。保持蓄奴制的

discussion of it. The slaveholding power controlled the government. For many years every *official*<sup>1</sup>, from the President down to the humblest village postmaster, was *pledged*<sup>2</sup> to the support of that power. The churches were *dominated*<sup>3</sup> by it. The newspapers dared not oppose it. Even the schools felt its influence, and no text-book could be used that contained *selections*<sup>4</sup> *condemning*<sup>5</sup> human bondage.

\* \* \*

In December, 1833, a few men from ten different states met in Philadelphia and organized the *American Anti-slavery Society*<sup>6</sup>. The members of this society were united in the determination to do away with an institution which they believed was wrong and a menace to the best interests of the country. Only a few of the most *unreasoning*<sup>7</sup> were in favor of any kind of *violence*<sup>8</sup>. All *urged*<sup>9</sup> the use of moral influences. They made speeches, they wrote books, they published *pamphlets*<sup>10</sup>—all for the purpose of keeping the question before the people. Prominent among their leaders were Wendell Phillips, William Lloyd Garrison, and John G. Whittier.

The doings of this society alarmed the slaveholders of the South. They said that the antislavery people told *falsehoods*<sup>11</sup> and made it appear that slavery was a much greater evil than it really was. They believed that it was the purpose of the society to persuade the slaves to rise against their masters and win their freedom by bloodshed and war.

The members of the society were called Abolitionists. They were hated by the people of the South and *perse-*

---

1. 官吏； 2. 誓守； 3. 管理； 4. 選擇物； 5. 指斥； 6. 美國反蓄奴制會；  
7. 無理性的； 8. 暴行； 9. 力勸； 10. 小冊； 11. 誹語。

勢方執掌政府機關，許多年間每一個官吏，從大總統起一直至最低微的鄉村郵局長，都誓守那種勢力的支持。教會也被它管理。報紙不敢反對，就是學校也感覺它的影響，含指斥人奴制的選文的教科書也不得被採用。

1833年十二月，從十個不同的州來的少數人在菲列得爾菲亞集會組成美國反蓄奴制會。會員聯合起來決定廢除他們相信為不合理和妨礙國家公益的法律，祇有少數無理由的人主張任何激烈手段。全體力勸採取道德勢力。他們發表演說，著作書籍，出版小冊——都是把這問題置於人民之前為目的。他們的領袖著名的是溫台爾非列潑斯，威廉勞合茄立遜，和約翰勿蒂爾。

該會的辦法震動南部蓄奴者。他們說反蓄奴的人說誑詞使蓄奴制表現着較實在的情形壞得多。他們相信該會的目的在鼓動奴隸起來反抗他們的主人以流血和戰爭取得自由。

會員們稱為廢止蓄奴制者。他們為南部人民所憎惡，為北

*cut*<sup>1</sup> by the friends of slavery in the North. They were *mobbed*<sup>2</sup> even in Boston, “the *cradle*<sup>3</sup> of American liberty.” The halls in which they were *advertised*<sup>4</sup> to speak were burned. The presses on which their pamphlets were printed were destroyed. Their books, papers, and letters were not permitted to be carried in the United States mails.

But the society went on with its work. New members were added to it every year; and every year the slavery question became more *serious*<sup>5</sup>. Finally, as we have seen, a political party—the Liberty Party—was formed for the purpose of *agitating*<sup>6</sup> that question.

Nevertheless, by far the greater number of thoughtful men in every community held back and remained quiet. They said: “This agitation will only make matters worse. Since slavery is with us, let us make the best of it. All this talk about doing away with it only stirs up ill feeling. It is both foolish and harmful.”

This was what Abraham Lincoln thought. When the matter was brought up for discussion in the legislature at Vandalia, a resolution was passed *denouncing*<sup>7</sup> the “Abolitionists” in the severest terms. Mr. Lincoln and one other of the Long Nine took pains to put their opinions in writing. They said that they believed “the institution of slavery to be founded on both injustice and bad policy, but that the *promulgation*<sup>8</sup> of *abolition doctrines*<sup>9</sup> tended rather to increase than *abate*<sup>10</sup> its evils.”

Such was Lincoln’s first public *utterance*<sup>11</sup> on the great subject which was fast becoming uppermost in the minds of all thoughtful Americans.

---

1. 窘迫； 2. 凌辱； 3. 發源地； 4. 廣告； 5. 劇烈； 6. 鼓吹； 7. 譴責；  
8. 宣傳； 9. 廢奴主義； 10. 除却； 11. 發言。

部贊助蓄奴者所窮迫。他們就是在波士頓，“美利堅自由發源地，”被羣衆凌辱，他們廣告演說的會場被焚燬。他們出版物的印刷所被毀。他們的書籍，報紙，和信件不准從合衆國郵件寄遞。

但是這個會照常工作。每年有新會員加入；蓄奴制問題的討論一年劇烈一年。最後，如我們知道過的，一個政黨——自由黨——組織成立以鼓吹該問題爲目的。

雖然如此，大多數有思想的人在各團體裏面站在後面緘默着。他們說，“這樣鼓吹祇能使事態惡化。因爲蓄奴制與我們一起存在的，讓我們謀一個最善的方法。全部廢除這種制度的話祇能激起不良的印象。它是愚拙而又有害的。”

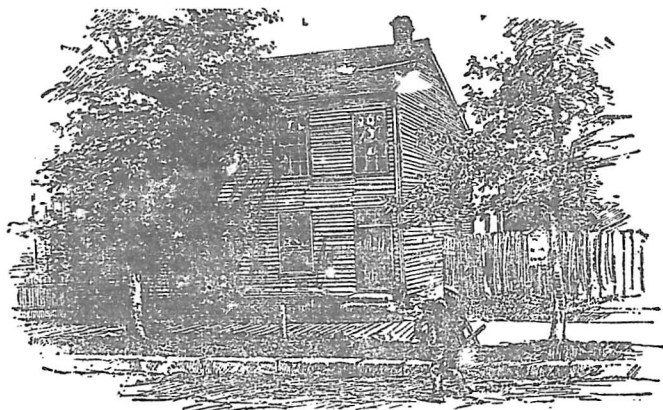
這就是亞伯拉罕林肯所想的。這件事實在文大里亞議會裏面討論的時候，嚴厲指摘“主張廢除蓄奴制者。”林肯先生和九個高個子中的另一人苦心地把意見寫出來。他們說他們相信“蓄奴制的法律建立在不公和不良的政策上面，但是廢奴主義的宣傳寧傾向於增加它的害處而不能除卻害處。

這就是林肯對大問題的公開發言，它立即成爲全體有思想的美利堅人意見的最高點。



VIII. LOVE AND POVERTY<sup>1</sup>

For several years Mr. Lincoln's life in Springfield was very much like that of any other successful Western lawyer. He attended quietly to the business of his office, "rode the circuit" now and then, took an active part in



The Globe Tavern

politics, and did but very little that distinguished him from the common *plodder*<sup>2</sup> in his profession.

At the age of thirty-three he was married to Miss Mary Todd, a young lady from Kentucky who was staying with friends in Springfield. For some 1842 time after their marriage Mr. and Mrs. Lincoln lived in a little *old-fashioned*<sup>3</sup> *hotel*<sup>4</sup>, called the *Globe Tavern*<sup>5</sup>, "paying four dollars a week for room and board. Two or three years later Mr. Lincoln built a small but comfortable *frame house*<sup>6</sup>, and this was their home during the rest

1. 貧窮; 2. 苦役者; 3. 舊式的; 4. 旅館; 5. 全球旅館; 6. 木框屋。

## 八 愛和貧窮

林肯先生幾年中在斯潑林斐爾特的生活很像其他西部成功的律師一樣。他靜心地注意他辦公室的營業，隨時周歷法官的巡行路線，作政治活動，祇稍微和同業的普通苦役者顯出不同。

他在三十三歲的時候同曼麗托特姑娘結婚，她是從斯潑林斐爾特來的同朋友住在一起的少女。他們結婚以後一些時候林肯先生和林肯夫人住在一個小的舊式的“全球旅館”內。付四塊錢一個星期的膳宿費。二三年以後林肯先生造了一所小而舒適的木框屋，這是他們在斯潑林斐爾特此後時期的家庭。

of their life in Springfield.

From the humblest of conditions Mr. Lincoln had raised himself to an honorable place among his fellow-men. He had won *moderate*<sup>1</sup> success as a lawyer; he was known as an able politician; and yet he was what the world calls a poor man. But Mrs. Lincoln said, "I would rather have a good man, with bright *prospects*<sup>2</sup> for success and power and fame, than marry one with all the horses and houses and gold in the world."

### IX. IN RELATION TO TEXAS

Another presidential campaign was *approaching*<sup>3</sup>, and a question of the utmost importance was to be decided. It was this: "Shall Texas be *annexed*<sup>4</sup> to the United States?" The Democrats said, "Yes;" the Whigs said, "No;" the result of the election would be the answer of the country at large.

Texas, as a part of *Mexico*<sup>5</sup>, had belonged to Spain. In 1822 Mexico had freed herself from *Spanish*<sup>6</sup> control and become an independent nation. Texas was then a *Mexican*<sup>7</sup> territory, wild, *uncultivated*<sup>8</sup>, and for the most part *unexplored*<sup>9</sup>. It contained one old Spanish village—San Antonio de Bexar—and perhaps two or three other feeble settlements.

The Mexicans did not seem to think it worth *colonizing*<sup>10</sup>. But so fertile a region could not long remain hidden from American eyes. Moses Austin, a Connecticut *Yankee*<sup>11</sup>, was one of the first to call attention to it. He believed that the neglected territory east of the Rio Grande would

1. 相當的; 2. 希望; 3. 臨近; 4. 歸併; 5. 墨西哥; 6. 西班牙的; 7. 墨西哥的; 8. 未開墾的, 荒蕪的; 9. 未經查勘的; 10. 移殖; 11. 美國人。

林肯先生已從最卑微的環境中得到了在儕輩中有名譽的地位。他取得了律師的相當的成功；一般人知道他是能幹的政治家；而他還是一個世上所稱的窮人。但是林肯夫人說，“我寧願嫁給一個有成功，權力和名譽的光明希望的人，不願嫁給一個帶着全世界所有的動產，不動產和黃金的人。”

## 九 對得撒斯的關係

另一個總統競選快到了，一個十分重要的問題要取決了。它是這樣：“得撒斯應否併入合衆國？”民主黨說，“是；”自由黨說，“否；”選舉的結果就是國內大多數的答復。

得撒斯，墨西哥的一部份，曾經隸屬於西班牙。1822年墨西哥已脫離西班牙而自由，成爲一個獨立國家。於是得撒斯是墨西哥的領土，廣大、荒蕪，大部份沒有經過查勘的。它包含一個古老的西班牙村子——勃克撒的安東尼奧——恐怕還有二三個微弱的殖民區域。

墨西哥人似乎以爲它不值得移殖去的，但是這樣一個肥沃的地不能從美利堅人眼光長久藏着的。毛先斯奧斯丁，一個

some time become the seat of wealth and power. He was so sure of it that he secured from the Mexican government a *grant*<sup>1</sup> of *large tracts of land*<sup>2</sup> in the valley of the Colorado. Before he could do more, however, he died, and his son Stephen took up the *enterprise*<sup>3</sup>.

Stephen Austin founded several colonies of Americans on the lands which his father had secured. Other Americans came and settled at different places in the territory. Southern slaveholders came with their negroes. Cotton plantations were started. Cornfields and *orchards*<sup>4</sup> were planted. From the very beginning it was the feeling of the pioneers that they were founding, not a Mexican province, but an American state.

In 1836, under the *leadership*<sup>5</sup> of Sam Houston of Tennessee, the Texans *rebelled*<sup>6</sup> against Mexico. They set up a government of their own; and they showed themselves to be so earnest and able, that both England and the United States *recognized*<sup>7</sup>. Texas as an independent republic.

The Texans, however, did not wish to remain independent. They wanted their country to become a part of the United States. But President Van Buren was a cautious man, and not in favor of adding more territory to our *domain*<sup>8</sup>. "This country," said the thoughtful statesmen of the time, "is already large enough. She is much better off without Texas than with her."

And so the question of annexation was put off from year to year. The slaveholders of the South became more and more anxious to bring Texas into the Union: for they would gain *thereby*<sup>9</sup> not only a great cotton state

---

1. 容許； 2. 大塊土地； 3. 事業； 4. 果園； 5. 領導； 6. 反叛； 7. 承認； 8. 領域； 9. 因此。

康納鐵克脫的美國人，是一個最先注意它的人。他相信在格蘭得河以東被忽視的領土將來可成爲富源和權力的基礎。他這樣堅決就從墨西哥政府取得哥羅拉多河流域一大塊土地的所有權。但在他能夠再做些事以前，他死了，他的兒子史蒂芬繼續這事業。

史蒂芬奧斯丁在他父親取得的土地上建立了幾個殖民地。其他的美國人移殖過來在這塊領土的各地方，南部的蓄奴者帶着他們的黑奴同來，棉花種植開始了。玉蜀黍田和果園開闢了。在一開始的時候開墾者的意旨不是建立一個墨西哥的省，而是一個美利堅的州。

1836年，在田納西州的桑姆好斯頓領導之下，得撒斯人反叛墨西哥。他們創立了自己的政府；他們顯出自己努力和能幹，英格蘭和合衆國雙方都承認它爲獨立的共和國，

但是得撒斯人不願獨立。他們願意他們的國家成爲合衆國的一部份。但是文部倫總統是一個小心的人，不贊成再增加地土到我們領域。這有思想的政治家說，“這個國家早已夠大了。她沒有得撒斯比有它好得多。”

於是加入的問題一年年的遲延着。南部的蓄奴者越法急

with slavery in it, but two senators and at least one representative in Congress. It would offset some of the gains which the North had lately made. At length rumors<sup>1</sup> were set afloat<sup>2</sup> that the English were planning to get possession of Texas and make it a part of the British Empire. This aroused the war spirit of the West, and the cry was heard on every hand, "We must have Texas at any cost!"

### X. NATIONAL POLITICS IN 1844

It was well understood, therefore, that the election of 1844 would settle the whole question. The Democrats nominated for the presidency James K. Polk of Tennessee. The Whigs nominated Henry Clay of Kentucky. Polk was a man without any reputation<sup>3</sup> save<sup>4</sup> that he was in favor of annexing Texas, no matter what might follow. Clay had been known for half a lifetime<sup>5</sup> as one of the wisest of American statesmen; but now, very unwisely, he failed to speak out boldly either one way or the other.

No man worked harder during that campaign than did Abraham Lincoln. For was not his political *ido*<sup>6</sup> the candidate of his party? He was named as one of the presidential electors in Illinois. He traveled over the state, making speeches *in behalf of*<sup>7</sup> his favorite statesman and against Texan annexation. He visited his boyhood home at Pigeon Creek in Indiana, and spoke before many of his old neighbors, who remembered how, in his youth, he *haraugued*<sup>8</sup> them from stumps and wood piles.

In the meanwhile, Stephen A. Douglas was also making

1. 謠言; 2. 散佈; 3. 聲名; 4. 除; 5. 半生; 6. 崇拜者; 7. 爲; 8. 高聲演說。

切於把得撒斯引進聯邦裏面；因為他們不獨可以得到蓄奴的植棉的大州，還可以增加兩個參議員和一個議會代表。這可以和北部前此所得的相抵。最後，謠言傳播着說英吉利計劃要佔有得撒斯使它成爲不列顛帝國的一部。這件事激起西部的戰爭情緒，口號在各方面喊出來，“我們不惜任何代價取得得撒斯！”

## 十 1844年的國家政治

已經明白了，所以，1844年的選舉將解決全部問題。民主黨提出田納西州的傑姆斯巴爾克的總統資格。自由黨提出聖塔啓州的亨利克連。巴爾克並不是一個有名的人，他就是贊成合併得撒斯，不管什麼結果。克連半生以美利堅最智慧的政治家聞名；但是現在，很不智慧不能勇敢地說出一種方法。

在競選中，沒有別人工作得比較亞伯拉罕林肯工作得努力。爲了他政治上的崇拜者是不是黨的候選人？他稱爲伊利諾斯的總統選舉人。他周歷全州，爲了他所贊助的政治家和反對得撒斯合併發表演說。他拜訪他童年的家在印第安拿披奇遊，向他的許多鄰居演說。他們記得，在他幼時，怎麼樣站在木



speeches in the Illinois counties and doing all that he could to *insure*<sup>1</sup> his own election to Congress and the election of Mr. Polk to the presidency. In some places speeches were made by both Lincoln and Douglas; and it was hard to say which won the most applause or was considered the more eloquent and persuasive.

The result of the election might have been foreseen, but it was most unexpected to the friends of Henry Clay; to Abraham Lincoln it seemed a bitter personal *disappointment*<sup>2</sup>. James K. Polk was elected by a large majority.

The people had spoken their minds about Texas. Congress was free to act; and without waiting for Mr. Polk to take his seat, a resolution was passed providing for annexation. One of the last acts of President Tyler was to *sign*<sup>3</sup> that resolution. Before the end of another year, Texas was admitted to the Union as a slave state.

## XI. CONTENTION<sup>4</sup> WITH MEXICO

The United States claimed that the western boundary of Texas was the Rio Grande. Mexico contended that it was the Nueces River, several miles farther east. The country between the two rivers was for the most part wild and *barren*<sup>5</sup>. It had no *inhabitants*<sup>6</sup>; and it was thought to be so poor and worthless that nobody would ever wish to live there. But still it was worth fighting for, said President Polk.

General Zachary Taylor was in Texas with a part of the United States army. A small body of Mexicans were *encamped*<sup>7</sup> in the disputed territory on this side of the Rio

1. 保證; 2. 失望; 3. 簽定; 4. 爭執; 5. 不毛之地; 6. 居民; 7. 紮營。

墩和木塊上向他們高聲演說。

在這時候，史蒂芬道格拉司也在伊利諾斯各區內發表演說盡力保證他的當選議員和巴爾克先生當選總統的資格。有的地方林肯和道格拉司都發表演說；難以說出那一個更能得大衆稱贊，認為更辯才橫溢。

選舉結果已經可以預測了，但這使亨利克連的朋友失望；而對於亞伯拉罕林肯這是個人慘苦的失望。傑姆斯巴爾克贏得大多數人的選舉票。

民衆們表示出對得撒斯問題的意見。議會有行動的自由；不待巴爾克先生就職，通過了合併的議決案。泰樓總統最後行動之一是簽定那個決議案。另一年年底以前，得撒斯承認爲聯邦的一個蓄奴州。

## 十一 與墨西哥的爭執

合衆國提出得撒斯的西境是以格蘭得河爲界。墨西哥爭爲東邊幾英里的紐西斯河。二條河中間區域大部份是荒漠不毛之地。那裏沒有居民；都以爲是這樣貧瘠的地方沒有人願意在那裏住的。但是巴爾克總統還說這是值得戰爭以取的。

Grande. It was expected that General Taylor would move forward and drive the *intruders*<sup>1</sup> out. But he knew that by so doing he would hasten the beginning of war; and he *hesitated*<sup>2</sup>. He was too good a soldier to wish for war; and he did all that he could to keep peace with his Mexican neighbors.

Nevertheless, President Polk, in his office at Washington, had already determined upon war. He commanded General Taylor to march across the disputed territory and take possession of the east bank of the Rio Grande. General Taylor had no choice but to obey. A large force of Mexicans crossed the Rio Grande to drive him back. A battle was fought on the field of Palo Alto. The Mexicans were defeated, and with great loss fled back into their own country.

The war had *actually*<sup>3</sup> begun. General Taylor went into it now with a determination and rude energy which won for him the nickname of "Rough and Ready." He saw that it was the quickest way to bring the *conflict*<sup>4</sup> to an end. He followed the Mexicans across the river and fought them on their own ground. Battle after battle followed, but victory was always with the Americans.

There were many men, both in the North and in the South, who believed that the war was unjust—that President Polk had forced it upon Mexico, and that its object was the *conquest*<sup>5</sup> of territory from our weaker neighbor. The Whigs as a party had voted against it. But now that it was actually going on, all joined in supporting it. To aid the soldiers in the *field*<sup>6</sup>, to vote supplies for the army, to pray for the victory of American arms, were acts of

1. 侵入者； 2. 遲疑，躊躇； 3. 實際； 4. 爭鬥； 5. 戰利品； 6. 戰場。

柴却連 泰樓 將軍帶領了一部份合衆國軍隊在得撒斯。一小隊的墨西哥人在格蘭得河的這一邊爭執的地方紮營。一般人希望泰樓將軍要向前逐出侵入者。但是他知道要是這樣做法，立刻可以促起戰爭；他遲疑了。他是一個對於戰爭態度最好的軍人；他盡其所能同墨西哥的鄰人樹立和平。

雖是這樣，在華盛頓職位上的巴爾克總統早已決定戰爭。他命令泰樓將軍進兵經爭執的區域佔據格蘭得河東岸。泰樓將軍沒有抉擇的餘地，服從了命令。墨西哥的大軍渡過格蘭得河來逐他出去。戰爭在派洛阿爾托地方開始。墨西哥人打了敗仗，受重大損失後逃回本國。

戰爭實際上已開始了。泰樓將軍以絕大的決心和勇毅踏進去，使他取得“粗裏細”的外號。他看出了結束戰爭最迅速的途徑。他渡河趕上墨西哥人，在他們自己的土地上打他們。一次一次的戰事接着，但勝利總是屬於美利堅人。

在南部和北部，都有許多人相信，這個戰爭是不公道的——巴爾克壓迫墨西哥，目的是從弱小的鄰邦掠得土地。自由黨人曾經投票反對。但是現在戰事已經實際上進行了，於是全

patriotism; and the Whigs were just as patriotic as the Democrats.

It is no part of our purpose to try to follow the war through its long succession of bloody battles and American *triumphs*<sup>1</sup>. It ended, as had been foreseen, in the *humiliation*<sup>2</sup> and defeat of Mexico. The *ownership*<sup>3</sup> of the land between the Rio Grande and the Nueces was forever settled. Much more, the vast region now *comprising*<sup>4</sup> New Mexico, Utah, Arizona, Nevada, California, and a part of Colorado was *transferred*<sup>5</sup> to the United States.

The war had been brought about chiefly by the politicians of the South in their efforts to strengthen the slave power. They hoped now to secure the extension of slavery into all the new territories that had been acquired by it. Mexico, when obliged to give these territories up, had asked our government to promise that no slaves should be held within their limits. But the United States *minister*<sup>6</sup>, who acted as the government's *agent*<sup>7</sup>, refused. "If these territories were covered with gold a foot thick," he said, "and if they were then offered to us upon the single condition that slavery should be excluded therefrom, I would not entertain the idea."

## XII. ONE TERM IN CONGRESS

While the American armies were marching to victory in Mexico, the time was drawing near for the election of a new Congress. Of the several Congressional districts in Illinois there was only one in which the Whigs had anything like a majority. That one was the  
 1846 Springfield district, and Abraham Lincoln was

1. 勝利; 2. 屈辱; 3. 所有權; 4. 包含; 5. 轉移入; 6. 公使; 7. 代理人。

體一致支持着。爲幫助戰場上的兵士起見，投票供給軍隊，祈禱美利堅的軍事勝利，是愛國的行動；自由黨和民主黨都一樣的愛國。

經過長時間繼續的血戰和美國的勝利，我們不再以戰爭爲目的了。墨西哥戰敗屈辱是預料的結果。格蘭得和紐西斯河中間土地的所有權就永遠決定了，還加上包含新墨西哥，烏台，亞利桑那，內華達，加利福尼，和哥羅拉多一部份的廣大區域都轉移入合衆國了。

這次戰事是由南部的政治家主謀發動，以擴張蓄奴權力。他們現在希望使蓄奴制延展到所有攫得的新領土內。墨西哥被迫放棄他們的領土以後，要求我們的政府允許在他們的土地內不要蓄奴。但是作爲政府代理人的合衆國的公使拒絕了。他說：“假使這領土上鋪滿了一尺厚的黃金，而他們給我們一個簡單的條件蓄奴制要除外，我不能接受這個意思。”

## 十二 在議會中的一時期

正在美利堅軍隊戰勝墨西哥的時候，新議會選舉的時期

nominated there as the Whig candidate. The Democrats nominated Peter Cartwright, a pioneer *Methodist*<sup>1</sup> preacher who had been well known in the district since its earliest settlement.

Mr. Lincoln was still a poor man. To pay his expenses while he was making speeches throughout the country his Whig friends gave him a *purse*<sup>2</sup> of \$200. The election came off in August, and he was successful, having the largest majority ever given to a Whig candidate in that district. A few days afterward his friends were surprised to receive a letter from him in which was inclosed \$199.25. In the letter he said: "I have ridden my own horse. My friends have entertained me at night. My only *outlay*<sup>3</sup> has been seventy-five cents, for some *cider*<sup>4</sup> which I bought for some *farm hands*<sup>5</sup>."

\* \* \*

When Mr. Lincoln took his seat in Congress, he found there many men whose names are now famous in the history of our country.

There was John Quincy Adams, eighty years of age, and very near to the close of his life, who had served the nation as its sixth President and had since been in Congress the most distinguished *champion*<sup>6</sup> of the antislavery cause.

There was the scholarly and *accomplished*<sup>7</sup> Robert C. Winthrop, the Speaker of the *House*<sup>8</sup>, who early recognized in Mr. Lincoln a *shrewdness*<sup>9</sup> and *sagacity*<sup>10</sup> possessed by few other men of the time.

There was Andrew Johnson, once an *unlettered tailor*<sup>11</sup> of Tennessee, but now one of her most active politicians,

---

1. 嚴守教規的； 2. 錢袋； 3. 費用； 4. 蘋果汁； 5. 田工； 6. 擁護者；  
7. 勳雅； 8. 議會； 9. 敏慧； 10. 英明； 11. 不學無術的衣匠。

漸近了。在伊利諾斯的幾個議會選舉區域內，祇有一個是自由黨似乎可以得到多數選票的。那一個區域就是斯潑林斐爾特區，亞伯拉罕林肯被指定為那邊的自由黨代表。共和黨指定彼得卡得爾拉特為代表，在早年殖民時期這區域裏聞名的一個拓荒的嚴守教規的宣教師。

林肯先生依舊是一個窮漢。為應付他在周游境內演說的費用，他的自由黨朋友給他二百塊錢的一個錢袋。選舉在八月間始，他成功了，得到自由黨代表在那個區域內從來未有的大多數。幾天以後他的朋友驚奇地收到他的一封信，在信裏附了一百九十九元二角半錢。他在信內說：“我騎了我自己的馬。我的朋友在晚上款待了我，我的僅有的消費祇有七角五分，是我為田工們買了些蘋果酒喝。”

\* \* \*

林肯在議會裏取得了一個位置，他遇到許多人，他們的大名現在在我們國史內是很著聞的。

有一個叫做魁先亞當司的，八十歲的老者，很近他生命的結束了。他曾充第六任大總統，在議會裏是反對蓄奴制案內最特出的擁護者。

有一個風度文雅的學者洛勃特文色洛潑，議會裏的演說



and destined to become the seventeenth President of the United States.

There was Alexander H. Stephens of Georgia, the *intellectual*<sup>1</sup> giant of the South, who in later years would become, against his better judgment, a leader of the foes of the Union, and the Vice President of the Confederate states.

There in the *Senate*<sup>2</sup> for the first time, was Mr. Lincoln's fellow-citizen and *lifelong*<sup>3</sup> *rival*<sup>4</sup>, Stephen A. Douglas, soon to be famous as the "Little Giant" of the democracy, and one of the foremost men in the nation.

There, too, approaching the end of his career, was Daniel Webster of Massachusetts, the man of *supreme*<sup>5</sup> *intellect*<sup>6</sup>, the greatest of American orators, the grandest of American statesmen.

There, of about the same age as Webster, was John C. Calhoun, *stanchest*<sup>7</sup> of patriots as he understood patriotism, a lover of the Union, but loving South Carolina better, the *defender of nullification*<sup>8</sup>, the first among the champions of the South.

There was John A. Dix, antislavery candidate for governor of New York, who, thirteen years later as *Secretary of the Treasury*<sup>9</sup> under a Democratic President, was to *immortalize*<sup>10</sup> himself in a *telegraphic*<sup>11</sup> *dispatch*<sup>12</sup>: "If any one attempts to *haul down*<sup>13</sup> the American flag, shoot him on the spot."

There, on the *eve*<sup>14</sup> of completing his thirty years in Congress, was Thomas H. Benton of Missouri, *duelist*<sup>15</sup>,

---

1. 靈智的； 2. 參議院； 3. 終身的； 4. 敵手； 5. 至高無上的； 6. 靈才； 7. 最忠信的； 8. 廢止法案擁護者； 9. 財政部秘書； 10. 流芳百世； 11. 電報的； 12. 公文； 13. 落下； 14. 前夕； 15. 鬥士。

家，他早經林肯先生認為當時罕有的敏慧英明的人物。

有一個查傑羅約翰孫，曾做過田納西不學無術的成衣匠，但是現在是議會中最活動的政治家之一，預期為合衆國第十七任大總統。

有一個喬治亞的亞歷山大史蒂芬，南方的智星，他後來將成為合衆國敵對組織的領袖，聯邦的副總統。

有一個起先在參議院的，林肯先生的同鄉和終身的敵手，史蒂芬道格拉斯，不久就以民主黨“小偉人”著名，國家的先導者之一。

又有一個，將近他一身事業的末期，是馬薩諸塞的鄧尼威勃斯脫，一個才能特出，美利堅最偉大的演說家，美利堅最偉大的政治家。

有一個與威勃斯脫差不多同年的，是約翰蓋爾霍，是為衆人所知的愛國主義者，最忠實的合衆國的愛國者，但是更愛南卡羅來納，廢止法案的擁護者，南部的第一流人物。

有一個叫做約翰狄克斯，紐約州長的反蓄奴制的候補人，他十三年以後任民主黨總統手下財政部秘書的時候，在下面一通電文中使他成不朽之名：“任何人嘗試落下美國的旗的，用鎗彈打下他來。”

還有一個，在完成他三十年議會時期的前夕，是密蘇里湯

statseman, *vigorous*<sup>1</sup> *advocate*<sup>2</sup> of the Mexican War, and stern opposer of the foes of the Union.

There was John P. Hale of New Hampshire, elected to Congress as a Democrat, and yet one of the most fearless enemies of slavery and of the annexation of Mexican territory.

And there, fresh from the battlefields of Mexico, was Jefferson Davis, soldier, cotton planter, and rising politician, a man hitherto but little known, yet destined soon to be the great standard *bearer*<sup>3</sup> of the slave power in America.

Seldom in the history of our country, perhaps never, have so many intellectual giants been brought together in the halls of Congress. They represented every shade of political opinion, from the extremest defender of slavery to the most *zealous*<sup>4</sup> friend of *universal*<sup>5</sup> freedom. Some had already *achieved*<sup>6</sup> fame; their work was almost done; they would soon belong to the past. Others were just entering the *arena*<sup>7</sup>; the race for them was still to be run; they belonged to the future.

Into this company of *notables*<sup>8</sup> Abraham Lincoln entered with the *confidence*<sup>9</sup> of one who knew that he was in the right place. His manners, his speech, his clothing, all marked him as a man from the new West. But the older members of Congress were not slow to see that the tall, *ungainly*<sup>10</sup> young Whig from Illinois was a person of no *mean ability*<sup>11</sup>.

His voice was heard quite often in the House of Representatives. He was more active than is usual with new members. "I find speaking here and *elsewhere*<sup>12</sup> about the

---

1. 激烈的; 2. 贊助人; 3. 負貴者; 4. 熱心的; 5. 普遍的; 6. 成就;  
7. 運動場; 8. 著名的; 9. 深信; 10. 粗拙的; 11. 才能平庸; 12. 別處。

姆斯彭登，一個騎士，政治家，墨西哥戰爭的激烈贊助者，聯邦敵人的嚴厲反對者。

有一個是紐罕什爾的約翰海爾，當選民主黨議員，但還是一個蓄奴制和合併墨西哥領土之無畏的敵人。

有一個新近從墨西哥戰地來的，是極勿生大衛斯，軍人，植棉者，新生的政治家，目前尚無習習名，但是不久就成為美利堅奴隸武力的主要的負責者。

我們國家有史以來所未有的，這麼多的智能卓越的偉人聚集在議會的會場裏面。他們代表政治主張的各方面，從蓄奴制的極端的擁護者至全人類自由的熱誠友人。有些已享盛名；他們的工作早已完成；他們就要成為過去的人物。另外些人則踏進運動場，他們才開始競賽，他們是屬於未來的。

在著名人物的同伴中間亞伯拉罕林肯踏了進來，誰都能知道他是公道一方面的人。他的態度，他的演詞，他的裝束，都顯出他是從新的西部來的。但是議會的舊議員早就看出這個伊利諾斯來的高大粗拙的少年自由黨員，不是一尋常的人。

他的聲音常常在代表的會場裏面聽到的。他比較平常的薪人員更為活潑。他寫給他家鄉的朋友的信上說，“我在這裏

same thing," he wrote home to his friends. "I was about as *badly scared*<sup>1</sup>, and no more, than when I speak in court."

One of the most notable things that he did was to *introduce a resolution*<sup>2</sup> calling upon the President to give an *account*<sup>3</sup> of the beginning and progress of the Mexican War. He supported the resolution by a speech, which was so *pithy*<sup>4</sup> and *withal*<sup>5</sup> so sensible and *unanswerable*<sup>6</sup>, that it won for him the reputation of being one of the *smartest debaters*<sup>7</sup> in Congress.



Lincoln's Inkstand and Pen

Almost every day during his two winters in Washington things came to his notice that were *contrary*<sup>8</sup> to his ideas of right and of justice, and made him feel ashamed for his country. Almost within the shadow of the *capitol*<sup>9</sup>, he saw gangs of

negroes in chains driven through the streets and *spurred*<sup>10</sup> on by the whips of *merciless*<sup>11</sup> slave drivers. He saw men, women, and children sold at auction, and taken by force to the wharves or the railroad station to be shipped to the cotton fields in the far South. To him whose heart was ever stirred with pity for the humblest creatures in distress, these sights were very painful. His pride, also, as an American citizen, was touched; for in the capital of

1. 嚴重地創痕; 2. 提出一個決議; 3. 報告; 4. 有力的; 5. 並且; 6. 不能答辯; 7. 最利口的辯士; 8. 相反; 9. 華盛頓國會議事廳; 10. 驅使; 11. 殘忍。

和別處說的是關於同樣的事情，我是同樣的受着嚴重的創痕，如同在法庭上一樣。”

他所做的最聞名的事情就是提出要求對總統發表關於墨西哥戰事開始和進行的報告的議決案。他堅持這個決議案用這麼有力量而且有意義無置辯餘地的演詞。使他取得議會中最利口的辯士的名譽。

在他的在華盛頓的兩個冬季，差不多每一天發生引他注意與他的公道和正義的意見相反的事情，使他認為邦家之羞。差不多在議事廳的黑影中，他看見成羣的黑奴被鐵鍊鎖着被殘忍的趕奴者的鞭子抽着驅策經過街頭。他看見男人，女人，小孩，被拍賣，被迫送到火車站或船埠裝到遠南的棉花田裏去。他的心靈受不幸的弱者所激盪，根觸起同情的悲感，這些景象對於他極度的慘痛。他以一個美利堅公民的自尊心，深深地感動了；因為在世界上任何另一個文明國家的京都裏面，找

no other civilized country in the world could such scenes, *worthy of a barbaric age*<sup>1</sup>, be *witnessed*<sup>2</sup>.

But what could he do? He still believed that any agitation of the slavery question would make matters worse instead of better. No man was more strongly opposed to the slave system than he, and yet he would not join the ranks of the Abolitionists. He *argued*<sup>3</sup> that slavery should be let alone in the states where it existed and the people wanted it; but that in the capital, which belonged to the entire nation, it ought at least to be restricted. And so, in the end, he introduced into Congress a *bill*<sup>4</sup> for the gradual doing away of slavery in the District of Columbia.

The bill was a very *mild*<sup>5</sup> one—so mild that the Abolitionists would have nothing to do with it. The members from the South understood it to be an antislavery measure, and refused to listen to it. In the end the whole matter was allowed to *drop*<sup>6</sup>, and Mr. Lincoln's bill was never even voted upon.

\* \* \*

The Mexican War had produced two popular heroes, General Zachary Taylor and General Winfield Scott.

1848 Both of these men had been opposed to the manner in which President Polk forced war upon Mexico. They were loyal soldiers, however, and when the conflict was once actually begun, they gave their aid with such courageous spirit that the course of each was an unbroken series of victories.

To the Whigs General Taylor seemed an ideal candidate for the presidency. Among the Whig members of Con-

---

1. 與未開化時代相同； 2. 證明； 3. 辯論； 4. 案； 5. 溫和； 6. 中止。

不出這種事情來，與未開化時代的現象相同，是可以證明的。

但是他能做什麼呢？他還是相信任何對於蓄奴問題的煽動祇能使事情更壞，不能改善，沒有別人能像他這樣反對蓄奴，但他還是不願意加入廢除蓄奴的一方面。他辯論着蓄奴制祇能在已經存在而人民需要的州內保存；但是在屬於全體國家的京都裏面至少是應當限制的。因此，最後，他向議會提出漸漸在哥倫比亞區域內廢止蓄奴案。

這一個提案是極溫和的——這樣溫和主張廢止蓄奴者不願意對它做什麼行動。南部的議員知道這是反對蓄奴的，就拒絕聽取。最後全案撤回，林肯先生的提案沒有人投票。

墨西哥戰爭產生了兩個孚衆望的英雄，柴卻連和樓將軍和溫斐爾特司各脫將軍。在巴爾克總統強硬主張墨西哥出戰的一役都被人反對，但他們是忠心耿耿的軍人。當戰爭一發生，他們出以奮勇的精神，各爭取不斷的勝利。

對於自由黨員，泰樓將軍似乎是一個總統資格的標準候



gress a club was formed for the purpose of bringing about his nomination and aiding in his election. Of this club there were few more active members than Abraham Lincoln of Illinois and Alexander H. Stephens of Georgia. General Taylor was a *blunt-spoken*<sup>1</sup>, *rough-mannered*<sup>2</sup> soldier, with but few of the qualities of a great statesman; but he was the *military*<sup>3</sup> hero of the hour, and the man most likely to win the votes of the people.

The Democratic party nominated Lewis Cass of Michigan. Some of the antislavery Democrats of the North formed themselves into a new party, called the *Free-soil party*<sup>4</sup>, and nominated Martin Van Buren.

The members of the Free-soil party were not all Abolitionists. They did not oppose slavery itself, but they opposed its extension. They held that no more slave states should be added to the Union, and their battle cry was "Free Soil, Free Labor, and Free Speech." In their ranks were men whose names have since become famous in history: Charles Sumner of Massachusetts, *renowned*<sup>5</sup> as an orator and fearless champion of liberty; William Cullen Bryant of New York, America's first poet and most distinguished *journalist*<sup>6</sup>; Salmon P. Chase of Ohio, destined to become the *Chief Justice*<sup>7</sup> of the United States; and many others.

The Whig party took no decided stand on the slavery question, although some of its leaders declared that it was the real Free-soil party.

Abraham Lincoln, as usual, entered into the campaign with much earnestness and *enthusiasm*<sup>8</sup>. He *delivered*<sup>9</sup> a few speeches in New England and New York, where his

1. 口齒遲鈍的； 2. 舉止粗魯的； 3. 軍事的； 4. 自由國家黨； 5. 著名的； 6. 新聞記者； 7. 最高法院院長； 8. 熱心； 9. 發言，演說。

選人。在自由黨議員中間組成了一個俱樂部以促成他的當選。這個俱樂部有少數的幾個比較伊利諾斯的亞伯拉罕林肯和喬治亞的亞力山大司蒂芬更活動的議員。泰樓將軍是口齒遲鈍，態度粗率的軍人，祇有很少的大政治家風度；但他是當代的軍事英雄，最能贏得民衆選票的人。

民主黨推選密執安的魯威斯卡斯。有些北部反蓄奴制的民主黨員成立了一個新黨叫做自由國家黨，推選馬丁文波倫。

自由國家黨黨員並不都是廢除蓄奴者。他們不反對蓄奴制本身，不過他們反對其擴大。他們抱持不再有蓄奴的州加入聯邦，他們鬪爭的口號是“土地自由，工作自由，言論自由。”在他們的隊伍裏有幾個人成爲歷史上著名的人物：馬塞薩諾的卻爾斯生納，是演說家和自由的無畏鬪士；紐約州的威廉可倫勃蒂盎，美利堅第一個詩人和最著名的新聞記者；俄亥俄州的薩爾猛費斯，預定是合衆國最高法院院長；還有許多別人。

自由黨對於蓄奴問題沒有決定的立場，雖是它的幾個領袖宣佈這是實在的自由國家黨。

亞伯拉罕林肯像平常一樣，加入競選以很大的熱誠和切望。他在紐約州和新英格蘭州發表少數的演說，在那裏聽衆以“西陲樹林裏的演說家”的眼光看他以爲娛樂，而不是要聽他

hearers came rather to see and be amused by the "backwoods orator from the wild West" than to listen to his arguments<sup>1</sup>. He then returned to Illinois, and spent the remainder<sup>2</sup> of the summer in urging the people of his own state to support the Whig candidates. The result of the election was very pleasing to him, for General Taylor was the successful candidate.

### XIII. LINCOLN RETURNS TO PRIVATE LIFE<sup>3</sup>

It was Mr. Lincoln's hope that the new President would appreciate<sup>4</sup> his services to the party, and would appoint him to a good office. He had set his heart on becoming *Commissioner of the General Land Office*<sup>5</sup> at Washington. But, when Congress adjourned<sup>6</sup>, and he applied for the place, he was disappointed to find that it had been promised to another.

To General Taylor, the tall, awkward member from Illinois was only a Western politician who served the party in his own state and would be satisfied with almost any reward. "There is the *governorship*' of Oregon Territory," said he to Lincoln; "you shall have the appointment<sup>8</sup> to that place if you wish it."

Mr. Lincoln was not sure that he wished it. Oregon seemed at that time to be almost out of the world. It was reached only by a long journey, in boats and wagons, up the Missouri and across the great plains and over the *Rocky Mountains*<sup>9</sup>, or by the still longer journey round by the *isthmus of Panama*<sup>10</sup>. And then there were but

---

1. 辯詞； 2. 餘暇； 3. 私生活； 4. 尊重； 5. 土地局長； 6. 閉會； 7. 州長； 8. 任命； 9. 落磯山； 10. 巴拿馬地峽。

的辯辭。他於是回到伊利諾斯州，鼓動他本州的民衆擁護自由黨候選人來過那夏季的餘暇。選舉的結果他頗引以爲樂，因爲泰樓將軍是成功的候選人。

### 十三 林肯回返私生活

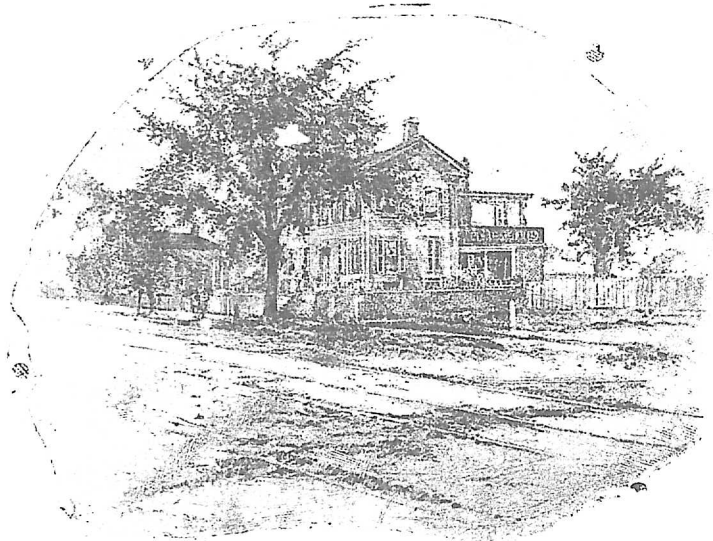
這是林肯的希望 新任大總統 要重視他黨內的工作成績，而將給他一個好的位置。他存心當華盛頓的土地局長。但是在議會的時候，他請求這個位置。但是他失望地發覺已允許了別人。

對於泰樓將軍，這個從伊利諾斯來的粗笨的高個子不過是一個西部的政治家，在他本州內做黨的工作，任何酬報都可使他滿意。他對林肯說，“有俄勒岡的州長位置空着，倘使你願意，你可以受這一個委任。”

林肯先生決不定他願意擔任這個位置。俄勒岡在那時候看來似乎是世界以外的地方。它須經驚遠的路程才能達到，舟

very few inhabitants in the territory, and what could an ambitious man do there? He *hesitated*<sup>1</sup>. He would wait until he had *consulted*<sup>2</sup> his folks at home.

When he returned to Springfield and *announced*<sup>3</sup> that he had been offered the governorship of Oregon, the question was answered at once and wisely by Mrs. Lincoln. She



Lincoln's Home in Springfield

was as far west as she wished to be, she said, and as for *frontier*<sup>4</sup> life, she had had quite enough of it.

Mr. Lincoln, therefore, *declined*<sup>5</sup> the President's offer, gave up all thoughts of a government appointment, and returned quietly to the practice of law.

The business in his attorney's office had fallen away while he was at Washington, and he found it necessary

1. 躊躇； 2. 商議； 3. 發表, 公布； 4. 邊疆； 5. 拒絕。

車勞頓，上密蘇里，經大曠野和越落機山，或經更長的路程繞過巴拿馬峽。那邊的領土祇有很少數的住民。一個有大志的人在那裏有什麼事可做的？他躊躇了。他祇能等候同他的家裏人商議以後。

在他回到斯潑林斐爾特，發表他已膺俄勒岡州長之命以後，這問題就由林肯夫人立刻智慧地加以答復。她無論怎樣遠的西部都願意去，她說，對於邊疆生活，她已經過够了。

林肯先生因此拒絕了總統的邀請，放棄了一切政府委任的想望，安靜地回到法律事務的生活。

他的律師業務當他在華盛頓的時候已經衰落了，他覺得必須從基礎做起。但斯潑林斐爾特的人都知道他，所以不久他就恢復已失去的業務。他在合衆國京都的兩年工夫沒有使他驕傲。因為以後的十年中，一直到他當選為大總統，他過着最簡單謙遜的生活。

to begin almost at the bottom again. But everybody in Springfield knew him, and he was not long in *regainin*<sup>1</sup> all the practice he had lost. His two years in the capital of the United States had not made him proud. For the next ten years, and indeed until after he had been elected President, he lived in the simplest and most *unpretending*<sup>2</sup> way.

His law practice was not so heavy as to keep him all the time at his office. He therefore spent many leisure hours at home with his family. Often when the weather was fine he might be seen, without coat or hat, *trundling*<sup>3</sup> one of his children up and down the board sidewalk in front of his house. *Visitors*<sup>4</sup> would sometimes surprise him lying flat on the floor in the narrow hallway, reading aloud from some favorite book, or having a "*rough-and-tumble*<sup>5</sup>" *romp*<sup>6</sup> with his boys. He always attended to the keeping and feeding of his horse; he drove the cow from the pasture, and milked her; he sawed and split the wood and carried in the *kindlings*<sup>7</sup> for the household fires; in short, he was his own servant, and was never ashamed to do any kind of labor that seemed necessary to be done.

Strangers seeing the ungainly, plainly clad man,—his coat too large, his trousers too short, his shoes unpolished,—playing with his children and doing his own *chore*<sup>8</sup>, would never have guessed that within ten years he would be the first man in our republic. His friends and neighbors, however, knew well enough that there was within him a greatness of mind and a force of character which might at any day put him in the front ranks of American citizens.

1. 重獲, 恢復; 2. 謙遜的; 3. 使轉動; 4. 拜訪者; 5. 翻筋斗; 6. 玩耍; 7. 柴薪; 8. 雜役。

他的法律業務，不是這樣重使他費全部的光陰於辦事室。因此他消磨許多閒暇在家庭中同他的家族團聚。天氣好的時候常常可以看見不衫不冠，扶着他一個小孩子在他房屋前廊下使他旋轉。拜訪他的人有時看着他躺在過道的地板上，高聲朗誦愛好的書籍，或是同他的孩童們做翻筋斗的嬉戲，要引以為異。他常常喂養馬匹；他放牛於牧場，擠出牛乳；他鋸砍木頭以供燃料；簡短地說，他是他自己的僕人，做一切必須做的工作不以為恥。

生客看見這衣着樸陋的人，——他的外褂太大，他的褲子太短，他的鞋沒有擦亮，——同他的孩子們嬉戲和做自己的雜役，決不會想到十年中他要成為我們共和國的元首。但是他的朋友和鄰居很知道在他的內心有偉大的意志和堅固的人格，在任何時候可以把他的位置在美利堅國民的前列。



#### XIV. NEW PHASES<sup>1</sup> OF THE SLAVERY QUESTION

During those quiet years at Springfield Mr. Lincoln did not lose his interest in public affairs. His *keen*<sup>2</sup> foresight showed him that great changes must soon take place in this country, and he watched the progress of *events*<sup>3</sup> very closely. The news from Washington was a daily subject of *inquiry*<sup>4</sup> and study.

For a time this news centered around the question of admitting California into the Union.

California was a part of the territory which had been acquired from Mexico. Soon after the close of the war gold was discovered there. Men from all parts of the world, but chiefly from the Northern states, hastened thither. They had no slaves; they did not wish to have them. In a few months the territory had a larger population than some of the Atlantic states. The people met in convention, and *petitioned*<sup>5</sup> Congress to admit California into the Union as a free state.

A part of California was farther south than the line which the *Missouri Compromise*<sup>6</sup> had indicated as the boundary between freedom and slavery. Of all the lands acquired from Mexico, it was the best *adapted*<sup>7</sup> to slave labor; and Southern politicians had expected that it would belong to the South. If admitted as a free state, the balance of power in Congress would be disturbed. There

1850 was no prospect of a new slave state to restore that balance. The North would be decidedly stronger than the South. For these reasons the Southern members of Congress refused to admit California. The

1. 現象; 2. 敏銳的; 3. 大事; 4. 考查; 5. 請願; 6. 密蘇里調解案; 7. 宜於。

## 十四 蓄奴問題的新現象

在斯潑林斐爾特安靜的年頭中間，林肯先生並不失去對於公衆事業的興趣。他的敏銳的目光看出很大的變化必定會在這個國家內發生，他很密切地觀察局勢的推移。從華盛頓來的新聞是每日研究的題目。

有一個時候新聞集中於承認加利福尼併入聯邦的問題。

加利福尼是從墨西哥得來的一部分領土。就在戰事以後，黃金從那裏發現了。從世界各部份來的人，主要的是北部諸州，急促地趕去。他們沒有奴隸；他們不願意有奴隸。在幾個月裏邊這個領土上有了比大西洋諸州更多的人口。民衆集會請願議會允許加利福尼加入聯邦爲自由州。

加利福尼的一部分是遠在密蘇里調解案所指稱的自由和蓄奴折衷界線之南。所有從墨西哥兼併來的領土，認爲宜於蓄奴工作；南部的政治家希望這是應當屬於南部的。倘使認爲一個自由州，議會裏面的平衡勢力就要打破了。那時沒有建立新蓄奴州的希望以重立平衡。北部將要決定着較強於南。爲這幾種理由南部議員拒絕承認加利福尼州。北部的議員堅持原議，

Northern members *persisted*<sup>1</sup>, and for ten months the question was debated with great bitterness on both sides.

The dispute had gone so far that there seemed to be no peaceable way of settling it. There were threats from some of the Southern states to *withdraw*<sup>2</sup> from the Union. Nevertheless, to *preserve*<sup>3</sup> the Union was the chief thought and care of every patriotic statesman as well of the South as of the North.

At the very darkest hour of that trying time Henry Clay, the Great Pacificator, arose in the Senate and proposed a plan for settling this dispute and all other troublesome questions relating to slavery in the United States. He urged a compromise, just as he had urged the Missouri Compromise thirty years before. In order to satisfy the North, this compromise provided for the immediate admission of California as a free state. In order to *conciliate*<sup>4</sup> the South, it declared that there should be no interference with slavery in the other territories acquired from Mexico. It also provided that Congress should pass a very strict law requiring the citizens of the free states to aid in returning runaway slaves to their masters; and it *arranged*<sup>5</sup> for the *regulation*<sup>6</sup> and final abolition of the practice of trading in slaves in the District of Columbia.

Mr. Clay's compromise measure was supported by Daniel Webster in the last great speech of his life. It was opposed by John C. Calhoun in a speech which proved to be his last also. Webster spoke earnestly against the very thought of *secession*<sup>7</sup> from the Union. "There can be no such thing as a peaceable secession," he said. "who is so foolish as to expect to see such a thing? To break up this great

---

1. 堅持； 2. 脫離，退出； 3. 維護； 4. 修好； 5. 處理； 6. 條例； 7. 脫離。

本問題經雙方激烈辯論歷十閱月之久。

爭論這樣激烈地進行着，似乎沒有和平的方法足以解決這個問題。在南部諸州裏面發生退出聯邦的威脅。雖是這樣，南北部的忠誠政治家的意見都主張保持邦國的完整。

當決定之際的最黑暗的一剎那，偉大的調和家，亨利克連，從上議院站出來提出一個解決這個爭議，和其他合衆國內關於蓄奴的困難問題。他陳述一種調和辦法，像三十年前他所陳密蘇里調停方案一樣。爲使北部滿意起見，這方案主張加利福尼亞立即承認爲一自由州。而爲調洽南部起見，主張對其他從墨西哥兼併過來的領土，蓄奴制不加干涉。這方案又主張議會應當通過一條法律須要自由州的國民協助送回逃亡的奴隸到他們的主人那裏；又規定在哥倫比亞區域內奴隸買賣的禁止。

克連先生的調停爲鄧尼韋勃斯脫所擁護在他一生的末次演說辭裏面。它爲約翰加而杭所反對也證明是在他一次末次演說裏面。韋勃斯脫嚴重地反對脫離聯邦。他說，“和平的脫離是沒有的。誰是這樣笨希望發生這樣的事情？分離偉大的政

government! To *dismember*<sup>1</sup> this glorious country! No, sir! No, sir! There will be no secession. Gentlemen are not serious when they talk of secession.”

Calhoun's speech, on the other hand, was full of *gloomy forebodings*<sup>2</sup>. He was anxious to preserve the Union if at the same time the states of the South should not be *deprived*<sup>3</sup> of any of the rights that belonged to them. But the South, he said, was every day losing ground; she was excluded from the common territory of the United States; she was *overburdened*<sup>4</sup> with taxes; if the balance of power in Congress should be destroyed, her last hope would be taken away. And he declared that the *agitation*<sup>5</sup> on the subject of slavery, if not soon prevented, would end in *disunion*<sup>6</sup>.

A bill which *embodied*<sup>7</sup> Mr. Clay's ideas of compromise was soon afterward presented to Congress in due form. It seemed to provide the only means for putting an end to the *vexing*<sup>8</sup> questions that were then before the country, and men of both sections united in its support. It was finally passed, and became known in history as the “Compromise of 1850.”

“There will be no more agitation,” said Daniel Webster. “These measures are a finality, and we shall have peace.”

“I have determined never to make another speech upon the slavery question,” said Stephen A. Douglas. “So long as our *opponents*<sup>9</sup> do not agitate for *repeal*<sup>10</sup> or *modification*<sup>11</sup>, why should we agitate for any purpose? This compromise is a final settlement.”

---

1. 割裂； 2. 不詳的預言； 3. 剝奪； 4. 負擔過重； 5. 煽動，遊說； 6. 分裂； 7. 使成一體，制定； 8. 紛擾的； 9. 反對派； 10. 廢止； 11. 修改。

府！割裂光榮的國家！否，列位！否，列位？不要有脫離運動。先生們在講脫離的時候是未加考慮。”

加而杭的演說，在另一方面，是充滿了不祥的預言。他很熱心於保持聯邦，倘使同時屬於南部諸州的主權不被剝奪。他說，但是南部每天喪失土地；它被擯於合衆國領土以外；它擔負過重的捐稅；倘使議會的平衡勢力再被破壞，它就連最後希望都被奪了。他又提議蓄奴問題的討論如不立即停止，結果就要分裂。

克連先生制定的調停意見書，以後立即以合法手續呈送議會。這看來是唯一的方法可以結束國家當前的紛擾問題，兩方面的人士聯合擁護這個意見。最後本案通過了，在歷史上開名為“1850年的調停案。”

“不再有爭論了，”鄧尼韋勃斯脫說，“這些解決案是最後的，我們要有和平。”

“我已經決定不再作蓄奴問題的演說，”司蒂芬道格拉斯說，“只要我們的反對派不討論廢止或修改，爲什麼我們要另想討論？這一個調停案是末次的解決。”

In Congress the agitation did cease for a time, and senators and representatives turned their minds to other subjects and tried to forget the troublesome *topic*<sup>1</sup>. But among the people the *excitement*<sup>2</sup> about slavery did not die away. The compromise failed to please either the North or the South. The North did not like the *Fugitive Slave Law*<sup>3</sup> which obliged the citizens of free states to become slave hunters. The South was alarmed, because through the admission of California it would lose its old-time control of Congress. Each section *distrusted*<sup>4</sup> the other more than before; each *misunderstood*<sup>5</sup> the character and aims of the other. And so, as the months passed by, the *gulf*<sup>6</sup> between them grew wider and wider, and the question of slavery became more and more serious.

In the meanwhile, death was busy among the leaders in the councils of the nation. John Quincy Adams, with the words "I am content" on his lips, had passed away in 1848, and had not seen the beginning of this new phase of the great question. Calhoun died in 1850, a few days after his speech in the Senate. Clay and Webster survived but two years longer, statesmen, both, the like of whom this country may never see again. During the sixteen years of its existence the Whig party, with which all these great men were allied, had elected two Presidents. The first had died within a month after his *inauguration*<sup>7</sup>; the second, General Taylor, after serving through half his term and four months more, had also died.

President Taylor was succeeded by the Vice President, Millard Fillmore of New York. It was Mr. Fillmore who signed and approved the famous Compromise Act of 1850.

1. 論題; 2. 刺激; 3. 逮捕奴隸法規; 4. 不信任; 5. 誤會; 6. 溝隙; 7. 就職。

在議會裏邊這個討論停止了一個相當時期，參議員和代表腦筋轉向別的問題，把這煩惱的論題設法忘卻。但是在民衆中間蓄奴問題的刺激並沒有消滅。調停方案使北部和南部都不能滿意。北部不喜歡強迫自由州公民變成搜捕奴隸的逋逃奴隸法規。南部驚動了，因為加利福尼的允准加入失掉了從前對於議會的控制。每一邊不信任另一邊比較以前更甚；每一邊誤會了另一邊的行為和目的。因此，一個一個月過去，他們中間裂痕漸漸擴大，而蓄奴問題越發嚴重了。

在這當兒，死亡在國家的議會中忙着發生。約翰金先亞當姆斥際說着“我滿意了，”他在 1848 年逝世了，沒有看見重大問題新現象的開始。加而杭 1850 年也死了，在他發表參議院裏演說詞後幾天。克連和韋勃斯脫又活了兩年，像這樣的政治家這個國家永不能再見了。在十六年中間，聯合這些大人物的自由黨舉出了兩個總統。第一個在他就職以後一個月就死了；第二個，秦樓將軍，存在着任期的一半和四個月，也死了。

秦樓總統卒後由副總統紐約州的密勒恢而摩繼任。署名批准有名的 1850 年的調停法案的就是這個恢而摩先生。



When the time came for another presidential election, neither of the two great parties was yet ready to take a  
1852 decided stand on the question that was dividing the country. The Democrats nominated Franklin Pierce of New Hampshire. The Whigs chose General Winfield Scott, the *surviving*<sup>1</sup> hero of the Mexican War. Both parties *endeavored*<sup>2</sup> to say as little about slavery as possible. In the South, however, the Whig party was quite generally distrusted, and the Democrats were regarded as the only safe friends of that section. The Free-soil party, which was *pledged*<sup>3</sup> to oppose the extension of slavery into the territories, nominated John P. Hale of New Hampshire.

The campaign was a very quiet one; for how could it be otherwise when the leading parties were silent in regard to the only question of importance before the country. Mr. Lincoln was again named as an elector on the Whig ticket in his state. "I am a standing candidate for Whig elector," he said, "but I seldom elect anybody." His heart was not in the campaign, and he made but few speeches. He was in despair. The future of the country seemed to him dark and hopeless. "What is to be done?" he asked. "Is anything to be done? Who can do anything? And how is it to be done? Do you ever think of these things?"

In November, as everybody had expected, Franklin Pierce was elected President of the United States. Among Northern Democrats the South could not have found a *firmer*<sup>4</sup> friend. In his first *message*<sup>5</sup> to Congress he declared that the Compromise of 1850 had settled all

1. 餘生的; 2. 竭力; 3. 保證; 4. 更親密的; 5. 大總統報告國會的信。

另一次總統選舉來到了，兩黨都沒有準備提出劃分國民派別的問題做立場。民主黨以紐罕什爾的佛蘭克庇亞士為候選人。自由黨選出墨西哥戰事餘生的文斐爾特司各脫。兩黨都竭力減省關於蓄奴問題的議論。但是南部對自由黨大都不表信任。民主黨在那個區域內，是認為唯一的穩當朋友。堅持反對蓄奴制推行於該區域的自由國家黨提出紐罕什爾的約翰海爾。

這一次競選是很安靜的；因為領導的黨對國家當前緊要問題噤不作聲了，怎麼還能有別種表現。林肯先生在本州內重新被推為自由黨選票的候選人。他說“我是自由黨選票的候選代表，但是我絕不選舉任何人。”他不在競選上用心思，他僅作了沒有幾次演說。他在心灰意懶中。他看國家的未來似乎黑暗和無希望。他問道，“要做的事是什麼？有要做的事沒有？誰能做些事？事情怎麼樣去做？你曾經想到那些事嗎？”

當十一月間，像衆人所盼望的，佛蘭克庇亞士當選為美利堅合衆國的大總統。在北部的民主黨人中間，南方人不能找到一個更親密的朋友。在他致議會的第一信中他提出 1850 年

disputes growing out of the question of slavery, and that during his *administration*<sup>1</sup> there should be no further agitation of the subject.

Not twelve months had passed, however, before an agitation began that was not to cease until slavery was abolished.

### XV. A BILL THAT PROVED TO BE A FIREBRAND<sup>2</sup>

The prairie lands and great plains lying west of Missouri and Iowa were still almost without inhabitants. The region was known as the Missouri territory, but it had no organized government, and was *subject*<sup>3</sup> merely to the general laws of the United States. In the year 1844 a movement was *set on foot*<sup>4</sup> by the *War Department*<sup>5</sup> to form a vast and permanent Indian reservation in the West. It was proposed that the whole of the so-called Missouri territory should be given up to the various tribes then living in the United States, and that the government should pledge itself not to include any portion of it in any state or territory "so long as grass should grow, and water run."

Stephen A. Douglas of Illinois had just then taken his seat for the first time in Congress. The proposal of this plan gave him an opportunity to make himself heard.

"If an Indian country is thus established along the western borders of the states," he said, "all *communication*<sup>6</sup> with Oregon and the Pacific coast will be forever cut off. Besides this, the growth and expansion of the United States must stop with the western boundary lines of Missouri and Iowa." And, to prevent the carrying out

1. 管轄, 統治; 2. 煽動者; 3. 使服從; 4. 發起; 5. 軍政部; 6. 交通。

的調停方案解決了一切蓄奴制問題的爭議，在他的統治中不會發生鼓動這個問題的事實了。

雖是這樣，不到十二個月過去，不安的情形又發生在騷動開始以前，直到蓄奴制廢除為止。

## 十五 證明爲煽動者的議案

密蘇里和伊阿華以西的游牧區和大平原還是差不多沒有居民，這個區域稱爲密蘇里區，但是沒有組織的政府，僅僅服從合衆國普通法律。1844年，軍政部發起一種運動，使在西部樹立一個印第安人的保留地。它提議密蘇里區的全部須讓給在合衆國生存的各種族，政府須保證不以它任何一部分的地域在“草能生長水能奔流之時”列入各州之內。

伊利諾斯的史蒂芬道格拉司恰在這時候初次取得議會議席。這個計畫的提出給他一個表現自己的機會。

他說，“倘使印第安國家這樣在合衆國西陲邊境成立了，一切對俄勒岡和太平洋海邊的交通就永遠割斷了。此外，合衆國的滋長和擴展就停滯於密蘇里和伊阿華二州的邊界上了。”爲阻止這個計畫的實現，他把組成包括問題中一切地域的大

of the scheme, he introduced into Congress a bill to organize a great territory, including all the region in question. The bill was not voted upon, but so long as it was before Congress the War Department could do nothing toward *converting*<sup>1</sup> that region into an Indian reservation.

At every session of Congress for ten successive years, Mr. Douglas introduced the same or a similar bill for organizing the Missouri territory. In the meanwhile a few straggling pioneers made themselves homes in the valleys of the Platte and the Kansas rivers. For their own protection they wished to have some sort of government in which they themselves, as American citizens, might take an active part. This fact gave to Mr. Douglas another argument for urging the adoption of his bill.

But the members of Congress did not seem to feel much interest in the matter. All of the territory in question was north of the line named in the Missouri Compromise as the line between freedom and slavery. Why should Southern senators and representatives take an interest in territory from which slavery was excluded? As for the Northern members of Congress, they appeared to be well satisfied to *let matters rest*<sup>2</sup> as they were.

At length, in 1854, Mr. Douglas introduced a new bill, different in some important *features*<sup>3</sup> from any that he had proposed before. This bill provided that two territories—Kansas and Nebraska—should be organized; that the Missouri Compromise should be declared of no effect; and that the people of each territory should decide for themselves whether it should become a slave or a free state.

The plan was pleasing to many because it seemed to

---

1. 改變； 2. 將事闕起； 3. 着眼點。

領土的議案提出於議會。這個議案沒有表決，但自議案提在議會後，軍政部不能實行改變那個區域爲印第安保留地了。

在連續的十年中每次議會開會，道格拉斯先生提出組織密蘇里領土的同樣議案。當是時，少數散漫的拓荒者建立家宅於普拉特河和堪薩斯河流域。爲了他們的自衛，他們願意有種像美利堅公民一樣的他們能參加主體的政府。這個事實給予道格拉斯先生另一陳請採取他的議案的演辭。

但是議會中的議員，似乎對於這件事沒有感覺多大興趣。問題內所有領土都在密蘇里調停方案所稱爲自由與蓄奴分界線以北。爲什麼南部參議員和代表對蓄奴制受排斥的領土內發生興味。對於北部的議員，他們似乎以讓這事件擱起爲滿足了。

最後，在 1854 年，道格拉斯先生提出一個與以前所提的在要點上相異的新議案。這議案規定兩個領域——堪薩斯和內布拉斯加——應予組織；於密蘇里調停案應不斷定結果，每個區域的人民應自己取決應成爲自由或蓄奴的州。

這個計畫能受衆人歡迎，因爲給人民管理自己家事的權

give to the people the power to manage their own home affairs. It was pleasing to others because it seemed to open a way by which the South might recover her influence in Congress. It was proposed by a free-state senator; it could not be adopted without the votes of several free-state congressmen; and yet it was plainly designed to serve the interests of the slaveholding power. It would open to slavery a region greater in extent than the original thirteen states of the Union *combined*<sup>1</sup>.

When the bill was passed, the excitement throughout the North was such as had never before been known. Men said that Mr. Douglas wished to be the next Democratic candidate for the presidency, and that he

1854 had caused this law to be made in order to gain the votes of the Southern people. When Congress adjourned and he went home, he found that very many of his old friends had *deserted*<sup>2</sup> him. The people of his state were against him. He saw the signs of their displeasure on every hand. When he arrived in Chicago, the flags were flying at half *mast*<sup>3</sup>, and the bells were *tolling*<sup>4</sup> as at a funeral service. He attempted to speak in his own defense, but his neighbors refused to listen to him. The few people who gathered around the platform on which he stood were *defiant*<sup>5</sup>. They asked him questions which made him angry; then they *denounced*<sup>6</sup> him as a Northern man with Southern principles, who had sold himself to the slaveholding power. When he tried to answer them, they made such an *uproar*<sup>7</sup> that he could not be heard. Finally, he was obliged to go home without having explained his course to any one.

---

1. 聯合; 2. 離棄; 3. 桿; 4. 敲鐘; 5. 輕蔑的; 6. 斥責; 7. 喧囂。

力。它也受其餘的人民歡迎因爲這似乎開了一條南部人可以恢復議會中勢力的門路。這是自由州參議員所提議的；沒有幾個自由州議員的票決是不能採用的；而這還明顯地企圖蓄奴制的採用。它給蓄奴制開闢了比較原來聯邦的十三州合併起來還大的一個區域。

這個議案通過的時候，對北部刺激的重大是從來未有的。人家說道格拉斯要做下次總統選舉的候選人，他提出的法案是爲要取得南部人民的票子。議會閉會後他回到本鄉，他看出他的許多老友都離棄他。他本州的人民反對他。他看見各方面他們不快。他到芝加哥的時候，國徽昇半旗，鳴鐘如奏喪曲。他設法爲自己辯護，但是他的鄰人拒絕聽講。環繞他講台的聽衆都表示輕藐態度。他們問他的問題使他生氣；於是他們斥責他爲出賣給蓄奴制的南部主義的北部人。當他嘗試答復他們的時候，他們狂呼使他不能爲別人聽見。最後，他只好回家沒有把他的進行指陳給任何人。



Mr. Douglas had every reason for wishing to regain and hold the friendship of the people of Illinois. His entire future depended upon it. He therefore spent the summer and fall in visiting the most important towns of the state and making speeches on the last phase of the great question. His chief care was to explain his course with *reference*<sup>1</sup> to the *Kansas-Nebraska Act*<sup>2</sup>; and by *skillful*<sup>3</sup> reasoning he persuaded many of his hearers that the act was not so bad a thing as it had been represented.

The Southern states, he said, would never have *consented*<sup>4</sup> to the settling of those territories, so long as their citizens were not permitted to move there and hold their slaves. They had the power in Congress to oblige the government to make and *observe*<sup>5</sup> certain treaties with the Indian tribes; and should these treaties result in turning over the whole Missouri region to the Indians, that part of our country would be forever closed against all white settlers. A great many people in the North and in the South were anxious to seek homes in those territories, and were only waiting to be assured that they would be protected there. The South was willing to give up the idea of making an Indian country of the territories, provided the North would consent to open them for settlement and to give the settlers from the Southern states equal rights with the settlers from the Northern states. The *emigrant*<sup>6</sup> from Massachusetts might carry all his property into any territory; why might not the emigrant from South Carolina do likewise, even though a great part of his property consisted of slaves?

Mr. Douglas claimed therefore that the repeal of the Mis-

---

1. 論及; 2. 堪薩斯內普拉斯加法案; 3. 巧妙的; 4. 准許; 5. 遵守; 6. 移民,

道格拉斯有各種理由，願意重行取得伊利諾斯人民的友誼，他的全部的將來事業依賴它。因此他費一個夏季去拜會本州的重要市鎮并對這個大問題的重要方面發表演詞。他重要的注意點是解釋他的程序，以堪薩斯內普拉斯加法案為依據；又用巧妙的理由，陳述這個法案並不是像表現的這樣壞，以說服許多聽眾。

他說，南部諸州只要他們的公民不准遷移到那邊并保持他們的奴隸，是不許可移殖到那些領土上的。他們有權在議會中強制政府與印第安種訂立某種協約；那些協約應否變更全部區域使入於印第安人之手，那一部分國土將永久排斥所有白種殖民。北部和南部的人民都熱望在那些地方尋覓家宅，祇等待他們在那邊的保衛得到保證。南部人可以放棄在領土內建立印第安國家的主張，倘使北部人准許開放給他們做殖民地而給南部人與北部人同等的權利。從馬薩諸賽去的殖民可以帶了他們的財產到各處去；為什麼從南卡羅來納去的殖民不能同樣的辦，雖然他的一大部份財產包括奴隸。

道格拉斯因此又主張密蘇里調停案的廢止是有利於北部

souri Compromise was as beneficial to the North as to the South, and that it was an act of justice to all. But the point upon which he laid the greatest *stress*<sup>1</sup> was this: the Kansas-Nebraska Bill gave to the people of the territories the right to decide for themselves whether they would have slavery or not. The people, and not Congress, were the *sovereign*<sup>2</sup> power in their own domains. All this reasoning seemed to be very fair and just, and Mr. Douglas succeeded in not only winning back a great number of his old friends, but in securing many new ones. That the people should be their own sovereigns was only another way of saying that the people should have the right to make their own laws—and that was what the patriots in the Revolution had fought for. And so the Douglas Democrats, as they came to be called, adopted “*Popular Sovereignty*”<sup>3</sup> as their *watchword*<sup>4</sup>.

In October, the Illinois *agricultural fair*<sup>5</sup> was held in Springfield, and Mr. Douglas made a great speech to the farmers who had gathered there from different parts of the state. On the following day Abraham Lincoln replied to that speech. He reviewed all of Mr. Douglas’s arguments. “He attacked the Nebraska bill with unusual warmth and energy,” says a *newspaper reporter*<sup>6</sup> who was present. “He felt upon his soul the truths burn which he uttered. He *quivered*<sup>7</sup> with *emotion*<sup>8</sup>. The whole house was still as death. He *exhibited*<sup>9</sup> the bill in all its *aspects*<sup>10</sup> to show its *humbuggery*<sup>11</sup> and *falsehood*<sup>12</sup>, and, when it was thus torn to rags, cut into slips, and held up to the gaze of the vast *audience*<sup>13</sup>, a kind of scorn was visible upon the face of the crowd and upon the lips of

1. 力量； 2. 自立的； 3. 大眾主權； 4. 口號； 5. 農業集會； 6. 訪員；  
7. 顫抖； 8. 情緒； 9. 顯示； 10. 形色； 11. 欺騙； 12. 荒謬； 13. 聽衆。

也同樣有利於南部，這是對大眾公平的方案。但是他加以最大的著重的要點是：堪薩斯內普拉斯加議案，給予領土上的人民自己取決有蓄奴制與否的權利。人民，不是議會，是他們領域內的主宰，所有的理由都很公平。道格拉斯先生不僅成功了贏回大多數的老友，但還得到新的。因為人民要做主宰不過是人民有立法權的另外一種說法——那是革命家所爭的。所以道格拉斯民主黨人，他們要被稱的名字，取“大眾主權”為他們的口號。

十月中，伊利諾斯農業集會在斯潑林斐爾特舉行，道格拉斯對從該州各地來集會的農民作了一個廣大的演說。翌日亞伯拉罕林肯對那個演說作一個答詞。他重述道格拉斯的議論。“他攻擊內普拉斯加議案用異常的熱情和力量。”一個在場的報館訪員說。“他覺得他所說的話燃灼起他的熱情，他情緒震動着。整個的屋宇還是死寂。他在各方面顯示這個議案以表明它的欺騙和謬誤，當這議案撕成片，割成條，而現於衆人面前的時候，一種譏笑的態度在羣衆的面上和最龍辯的演說家唇

their most *eloquent speaker*<sup>1</sup>. At the conclusion of the speech every man felt that it was unanswerable—that no human power could overthrow it or *trample*<sup>2</sup> it under foot.”

One passage in this famous speech was often *quoted*<sup>3</sup> afterward by the friends of freedom to show the shallowness of Douglas's doctrine of Popular Sovereignty. “I admit,” said Mr. Lincoln, “that the emigrant to Kansas and Nebraska is competent to govern himself; but [and here the speaker rose to his full height] I *deny*<sup>4</sup> his right to govern any other person without that person's consent.”

Mr. Douglas was present during the whole of the speech. At its close he hastily stepped to the front of the platform, and said that the speaker had *abused*<sup>5</sup> him, “though in a perfectly courteous manner.” Every one could see that he felt himself thoroughly beaten. He tried to reply to some of Lincoln's arguments, but his usual *self-confidence*<sup>6</sup> and *bravado*<sup>7</sup> were wanting. He spoke for several minutes in a *faltering*<sup>8</sup>, *rambling*<sup>9</sup> way, without touching upon any point of importance, and then announced that he would answer Mr. Lincoln in the evening. But when evening came he failed to appear, and the promised reply was never made.

A few days later, Douglas made a speech at Peoria where he was again answered by Lincoln, each speaking three hours to an *immense concourse*<sup>10</sup> of people. Douglas seemed to be losing faith in his cause; he spoke with *embarrassment*<sup>11</sup>, as though *conscious*<sup>12</sup> of defeat. Lincoln's speech was not so full of feeling as that at Springfield had been, but his arguments were even stronger. At the close of the debate, Douglas said to Lincoln: “You understand

---

1. 善於辭令者； 2. 踐踏； 3. 引證； 4. 否認； 5. 侮辱； 6. 自信； 7. 虛張聲勢； 8. 支吾； 9. 漫談； 10. 廣大的集合； 11 阻礙； 12. 自知的。

上顯出來。在演詞的結論各人都覺得它是不能置答一詞——就是人力所不能推翻和踐踏於足下的。”

他的著名的演詞後來常常被自由主義的朋友們引證以表示道格拉斯大衆主權主義的淺薄。林肯先生說，“我承認，到堪薩斯和內普拉斯加的移民是宜於管理他自己；但是（這裏演說者全身站直起來）我否認他的管理別人而不得到那人同意的權利。”

道格拉斯先生在全篇演詞中在場。講完的時候他急跨上講台，說演講者侮辱了他，“雖是用完全禮貌的態度。”各人都覺得他自己已完全失敗了。他沒法答復林肯的幾段辯詞，但是他的自信和聲勢已挫。他講了幾分鐘支吾其詞，沒有觸及要點，於是聲言要在晚上答復林肯先生。但是晚上來了 he 沒有出現，承諾的答辭永未發出。

幾天以後，道格拉斯在底奧拉演說又遇到林肯的答復，每人講了三點鐘對羣衆的廣大集會。道格拉斯似乎失去了信用；他演講有了阻礙，好像自知失敗了。林肯的演詞不是像在斯潑林斐爾特這樣充滿感情，但是他的議論還更強有力。在辯通終結的時候，道格拉斯對林肯說：“他明白領土內的蓄奴問題比

this question of slavery in the territories better than all the opposition in the Senate of the United States. I cannot make anything by debating it with you. You, Mr. Lincoln, have here and at Springfield given me more trouble than all the opposition in the Senate combined." He then proposed that both should return home and make no more speeches during that campaign. Lincoln consented to do this; but when he heard, a few days later, that Douglas had broken his agreement and had spoken at a political meeting in another part of the state, he again entered the field.

The election was for members of the state legislature, and this legislature was to choose a United States senator. The majority of the voters in Illinois had always been Democrats; but this year, owing partly to the people's dissatisfaction with Stephen A. Douglas, and partly to the influence of Abraham Lincoln, there was a great change. In the new legislature there were men of three parties—Democrats, Whigs, and *Anti-Nebraska Democrats*<sup>1</sup> (or Democrats opposed to Mr. Douglas's course). The three parties were nearly equal in strength, and no one had a majority over the other two.

When the time came for choosing a United States senator, the Democrats nominated General Shields, a soldier of the Mexican War; the Anti-Nebraska Democrats nominated Lyman Trumbull; the Whigs nominated Abraham Lincoln. Since the parties were so nearly equal, no candidate could receive a majority of votes unless some who did not belong to his party should vote for him. When the Democrats found that they

---

1. 反內普拉斯加民主黨。

較所有合衆國參議員的反對論調都強。我不能對你的辯論置一詞。你，林肯先生，在此地和在斯潑林斐爾時給我的困難比較所有參議員聯合起來的反對都多。”他於是提議兩方面應當回家而在這個運動中不要再發言；林肯允可這樣辦；但是當他幾天以後聽見道格拉斯破壞了這個約定在該州的別部分政治集合上發表了演說，他重新踏進論壇。

這次選舉是爲了州議會的議員，從這個議會裏選出合衆國參議員。投票者的大多數本來是民主黨；但是這一年，一部分因爲人民對於司蒂芬道格拉斯的不滿意，一部分是亞伯拉罕林肯的勢力，有了大的變動。在新的議會裏有三黨的人——民主黨，自由黨，和反內普拉斯加民主黨（或是反對道格拉斯先生議程的民主黨）。這三黨差不多力量相等，沒有一黨有在另外兩黨之上的多數。

選舉合衆國參議員的時候到了，民主黨推舉希爾特將軍，墨西哥戰事中的一個軍人；反內普拉斯加民主黨推舉立門屈倫勃爾；自由黨推舉亞伯拉罕林肯。因爲三黨是差不多相等，沒有一個代表可以得到選票的多數除非不屬於他的黨的人選舉他。當民主黨覺出他們不能選舉希爾特，他們掉下他推舉拳



could not elect Shields, they dropped him and nominated Joel A. Matheson, a gentleman who had never said whether he favored or opposed the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. They did this hoping to win the votes of the Anti-Nebraska Democrats.

Mr. Lincoln would have been glad to receive the nomination; for to be a United States senator was his dearest ambition. But he saw now that, unless the Whigs and the Anti-Nebraskas united, a Democrat would be chosen and Douglas would be *triumphant*<sup>1</sup>. He therefore begged his friends to leave him and cast their *ballots*<sup>2</sup> for Mr. Trumbull, who, although a Democrat, was *unalterably*<sup>3</sup> opposed to the Kansas-Nebraska Bill and to the extension of slavery. They finally consented, although it is said that some of them shed tears in doing so. Mr. Trumbull was chosen, and Democratic rule in Illinois was at an end.

This wise, *self-sacrificing*<sup>4</sup> act of Mr. Lincoln won him many friends; and when, soon afterward, the Whigs and Anti-Nebraskas and Free-soilers were united in a single party, he became by general consent their leader.

#### XVI. THE WAR IN KANSAS

When the Kansas-Nebraska Bill was passed by Congress on the 8th of May, 1854, a cannon was fired on *Capitol Hill*<sup>5</sup> in Washington to announce the fact. Everybody believed that the slave power had gained a great victory; but, as matters turned out, the *booming*<sup>6</sup> of the cannon really *heralded*<sup>7</sup> the beginning of the end of slavery. Its friends had gone one step too far.

The news was quickly carried to the different sections

---

1. 勝利; 2. 投票紙; 3. 不變的; 4. 自我犧牲; 5. 歐爾國會議事廳;  
6. 隆隆聲; 7. 傳訃。

埃而麥斯生，一個從來沒有說出他是贊成或反對堪薩斯內普拉斯加議案的一個紳士。他們這樣辦希望取勝反內普拉斯加民主黨的選票。

林肯先生應當喜歡接受這個推舉；因為做一個合衆國參議員是他的最高的志願。但是他現在看出除非自由黨和反內普拉斯加聯合起來，民主黨應當當選而道格拉斯要成爲勝利者。他於是請求他的朋友離開他而把他們的票投屈倫勃爾先生，他雖是一個民主黨，是不變的反對堪薩斯內普拉斯加議案和蓄奴制的擴張。他們結果允諾了，雖然據說他們中有幾個爲這樣而流淚的。屈倫勃爾當選了，而民主黨在伊利諾斯的統治是完結了。

林肯的這個聰明而自我犧牲的舉動，贏得許多朋友的同情；不久，自由黨員和反內普拉斯加黨員和自由國家黨員聯合爲一黨，他由一致的同意成爲他們的領袖。

## 十六 在堪薩斯的戰爭

當 1854 年五月八日堪薩斯內普拉斯加議案在國會中通過的時候，在華盛頓州的首邑歇爾炮火燃放以爲這個舉動的宣布。人人都相信蓄奴權將要得到大勝利；但是，事實轉變的結果，炮聲響亮實在是傳達蓄奴制結束的開始。它的朋友走得太遠一步了。

這個新聞迅速地帶到合衆國的各處宣布大戰已經在殖民

of the Union announcing that the great West had been opened up for settlement, and that the settlers in each territory should themselves choose whether they would have slavery or freedom. The antislavery people in the North determined at once that Kansas should be free—and if Kansas, then the rest of the West also. The slaveholders of the South, and especially of Missouri, resolved, with equal determination, that Kansas should be made a slave state.

Then a wild race began for the possession of the territory. The slaveholders were the first in the field. Large numbers of Missourians hurried across the state border and settled themselves upon the lands in the eastern part of Kansas. Some took their families and slaves, built themselves homes in the new territory, and expected to stay there. But many more went only for a short time, to *stake out land claims*<sup>1</sup> and live in tents or *temporary huts*<sup>2</sup>, until by their votes they could make Kansas a slave state. They were called "*squatters*<sup>3</sup>," and they intended, as soon as they had gained their purpose, to return to their homes in Missouri.

The free-state men—as those were called who opposed the Kansas-Nebraska Bill—were determined not to be *outdone*<sup>4</sup>. Societies were formed throughout the North for the purpose of *hurrying*<sup>5</sup> emigrants into Kansas. Soon numerous companies of "*movers*<sup>6</sup>," with their families and household goods, were on their way to the new lands in the West, every one pledged to do all that he could to prevent the extension of slavery. They were obliged to go by a *roundabout route*<sup>7</sup> through Iowa and Nebraska; for the slave-

---

1. 樹立土地標誌； 2. 臨時的茅舍； 3. 爲欲佔有土地而居於公地的人；  
4. 超越； 5. 催促； 6. 移民； 7. 迂曲的路線。

地開始，每一個地方的殖民應當自己選擇他們究竟蓄奴還是自由。在北部反蓄奴制的人民立即決定堪薩斯應當自由——倘使堪薩斯這樣，於是西部其餘的地方也是這樣。南部的蓄奴者，特別在密蘇里，用了同樣的判斷，決定堪薩斯應當成爲一個蓄奴的州。

於是廣大的人種開始佔有土地。蓄奴者在田地上最先。許多密蘇里人急促經過州的邊界移殖到堪薩斯的東部。有幾個帶了他們的家眷和奴隸，建築他們的家宅在新的土地上，希望在那邊住下去。但是許多人去一個短時期，在土地上樹立標誌，住宿在帳幕或茅舍內，以待他們能投票取決使堪薩斯成爲一個蓄奴的州。他們稱爲“爲欲佔有土地而居於公地的人，”他們意欲在達到目的後，就回到他們在密蘇里的家中。

自由州的人——反對堪薩斯內普拉斯加議案的人的稱呼——決定不能教他人超越。鼓勵移民到堪薩斯的團體在北部各地都成立了。立刻有許多移民結隊帶着家族和家具，在他們到西部新地的路上，他們各自堅主竭力阻止蓄奴制的擴張。他們迫得繞道穿過伊利華和內普拉斯加；因爲密蘇里的蓄奴

holders of Missouri had forbidden them to pass through their state. They went in wagons, on horseback, and on foot, for there were no railroads west of the Mississippi. It required many weeks to make the journey; and as the long trains moved slowly onward across the Western prairies, their hopes and fixed determination were voiced by the poet of freedom, John G. Whittier:—

“We cross the prairies, as of old  
The *Pilgrims*<sup>1</sup> crossed the sea,  
To make the West, as they the East  
The *homestead*<sup>2</sup> of the free.

“We go to rear a wall of men  
One Freedom’s Southern line,  
And plant beside the cotton tree  
The *rugged*<sup>3</sup> Northern pine<sup>4</sup>.

“We go to plant her common schools  
On distant prairie *swells*<sup>5</sup>.  
And give the *Sabbath*<sup>6</sup> of the wilds  
The music of her bells.”

The free-state people made themselves homes in the valley of the Kansas River and founded the towns of Lawrence and Topeka. The slave-state people and the squatters had taken up the lands farther north and were established in Leavenworth and all along the Missouri border.

The two parties seemed to be almost equal in strength. The free-state men were, for the most part, *peace-loving*<sup>7</sup> farmers, who wished to settle the great question *lawfully*<sup>8</sup> by their votes; but they were determined to have *fair play*<sup>9</sup>

1. 參詣聖廟寺廟者； 2. 家園； 3. 粗糙的； 4. 松樹； 5. 平岡； 6. 安息日，聖日； 7. 愛好和平的； 8. 合法地； 9. 平等待遇，等等機會。

者禁止他們通過。他們乘車，跨馬，步行，因為在密士失必以西還沒有鐵路。需要許多星期完畢行程；像很長的火車緩緩蠕動穿越西部草原，他們的希望和堅定的意志可從自由詩人約翰忽脫的詩裏發表出來：——

“我們穿過草原，好像從前  
過海去參詣聖地的人，  
使西部像他們在東部  
自由的家園一樣。

“我們去豎起人樁  
在自由的兩邊界線上，  
在種棉花以外  
還有北方粗糙的蒼松。

“我們去建築公立學校  
在遼遠的草原岡上，  
給荒野的安息日以  
音樂的鐘聲。”

自由州人民營家於堪薩斯河流域，建立了勞倫斯和託潑加。蓄奴州人民和欲佔有土地而居公地的人取得更遠的北邊建立在李溫渥司和所有密蘇里邊界的地方。

這兩黨似乎差不多勢力相等。自由州的人大都是愛好和平的農夫，他們願意解決這個大問題用合法的手續投票取決；

at all hazards<sup>1</sup>. Many of the slave-state men came armed with *bowie knives*<sup>2</sup> and *shotguns*<sup>3</sup>, intending to *override*<sup>4</sup> all opposition; they also wished to settle the question at the ballot box, but they expected every vote to be on their side.

There could be no such thing as peace between the two parties. Eight hundred slave-state men, led by a United States *marshal*<sup>5</sup>, marched upon Lawrence. They destroyed the antislavery printing presses there, burned some of the houses, and *pillaged*<sup>6</sup> others. The free-state men were roused to *madness*<sup>7</sup> and determined to have *revenge*<sup>8</sup>. They killed some of the most *obnoxious*<sup>9</sup> of their enemies, and then prepared themselves for defense.

Thus *civil war*<sup>10</sup> was begun. On both sides the passions of excited and determined men were roused to the highest pitch. Houses were burned; men were *waylaid*<sup>11</sup> and killed; there were *false imprisonments*<sup>12</sup>, and *daring rescues*<sup>13</sup>, there were battles on a *small scale*<sup>14</sup>; and, as the strange conflict went on, each party became more and more determined to overcome its opponent. The cry of "bleeding Kansas" was heard throughout the North, and thousands of men who had hitherto been silent on the question of slavery became *outspoken advocates of freedom*<sup>15</sup>.

When the time came for elections, several hundred Missourians, led by a United States senator, crossed the line and cast their ballots as though they were citizens of the territory. A legislature was chosen, composed entirely of slave-state men. This legislature adopted a state constitution *precisely*<sup>16</sup> like that of Missouri, with slavery as its

1. 冒萬險； 2. 美國西省人所用長刀； 3. 鎗； 4. 踐踏； 5. 大將； 6. 搶掠； 7. 瘋狂； 8. 報復； 9. 難逃譴責的； 10. 內戰； 11. 擱板； 12. 不法監禁； 13. 奮勇救人； 14. 小規模； 15. 敢言的自由擁護者； 16. 不差分毫的。

但是他們必須冒萬險以取得均等機會。許多蓄奴州的人武裝帶着刀鎗，意欲踐踏一切的反對者。他們也願意在投票箱中解決這個問題，但是他們希望每一票都在他們的一方面。

在兩黨中間不能有和平。八百個蓄奴州人，由合衆國大將軍帶領着，向勞倫斯出發。他們搗毀了反蓄奴的印刷所，燒了幾處房屋，搶掠，自由州人熱狂了，決意報復。他們殺死了幾個仇人中的最兇惡的，並準備自衛。

內戰開始了，雙方的激昂堅決的份子熱情奮發到沸點。房屋遭燒燬；無辜者受攔劫殺戮，或無端監禁，也有奮勇救人的；有小規模的戰爭；奇特的鬥爭繼續下去，每一方面要取勝敵人的意志愈益堅決。“流血的堪薩斯”的呼聲遍於北部，成千向來對蓄奴問題默不發言的人都變成自由的熱烈贊助者。

選舉時期又到了，幾百個密蘇里人，由一個合衆國國會參議員率領着，經過了界線投票，好像本來是那個領土內的公民一樣。完全由蓄奴州人組成的州議會是選出了。這個議會規定的憲法完全與密蘇里相仿，以蓄奴為主。針鋒相對地，



chief feature. To offset this, the free-state men held a convention at Topeka, and declared that the legislature had been elected not by citizens of Kansas but by Missourians, and therefore it had no right to form any laws for Kansas. They issued a call for a new election; and another legislature was chosen which adopted a free-state constitution and *petitioned*<sup>1</sup> Congress to admit Kansas into the Union.

And now Franklin Pierce, the President of the United States, came forward to settle the dispute. He declared that the slave-state legislature was the true lawmaking power of the territory. He said that the action of the free-state men in electing another legislature and forming a free-state constitution was nothing short of *rebellion*<sup>2</sup> against the government. He issued a *proclamation*<sup>3</sup> warning all persons against disturbing the peace of Kansas, and sent a body of soldiers into the territory to enforce the laws made by the slave-state legislature. When the free-state legislature attempted to meet at Topeka, its members were driven away by United States troops. Nevertheless, Kansas was not yet admitted into the Union.

“Where now, Mr. Stephen A. Douglas,” said the people of the North—“where now is your *doctrine*<sup>4</sup> of popular sovereignty? Is not slavery being forced upon the people of Kansas, without their consent and against the will of the most of them?”

## XVII. RULE OR RUIN<sup>5</sup>

In Ripon, Wisconsin, a joint meeting of Whigs and *Free-soilers*<sup>6</sup> and Anti-Nebraska Democrats was held in

1. 請願； 2. 反叛； 3. 訓令； 4. 主義； 5. 治亂； 6. 反對擴張奴隸制黨員。

自由州人在託潑加集會，宣告議會選自密蘇里人，不是由堪薩斯公民，因此無權為堪薩斯立法。他們發出新選舉的通告；另一個議會產生，採用自由州憲法，呈請國會准許堪薩斯加入聯邦。

現在佛蘭克林庇亞士，合衆國總統，出來解決爭端。他宣布蓄奴州議會是該領域內的有真正立法權的主體。他說自由州人選舉另一議會的行動與反叛政府無異。他發出訓令警告人民不得破壞堪薩斯的和平，派軍隊到該區域內強制執行蓄奴州議會訂的法律。當自由州議會設法在託潑加集會的時候，議員被合衆國軍隊驅散。堪薩斯仍舊不准加入聯邦。

北部人民說，“在那裏，司蒂芬道格拉斯——你的大衆主權主義那裏去了？是不是蓄奴制違背了大多數人的公意，可以在堪薩斯強制執行。

## 十七 治理或紊亂

在立本，威士廉新，一個自由黨員和自由國家黨員和反內普拉斯加民主黨的集會在一個村內的禮拜堂中舉行。他們說，

one of the churches of the village. "Let us forget all *minor*<sup>1</sup> differences of opinion," said they, "and unite on the one question of opposition to the extension of slavery into the territories. Let us work no longer as three parties, but as one." They therefore decided that a new political party should be organized—a party to which all persons opposed to the *aggressions*<sup>2</sup> of the slave power might belong; and it was suggested that that party should be called "*Republican*<sup>3</sup>." The action of this little village convention had its influence elsewhere; and soon there was a general movement for a union of the various smaller parties into one.

In Michigan, on the 6th of July, a state convention of Whigs and Free-soilers adopted a series of resolutions against the Kansas-Nebraska Act, and formed a new organization to which was given the name of the "*Republican party*<sup>4</sup>." Before the end of another year the people of fifteen states had declared themselves opposed to the extension of slavery; and of the one hundred and forty-two representatives in Congress from the Northern states, only twenty-two continued to *uphold*<sup>5</sup> the course of Stephen A. Douglas in making it possible for the territories to become slave states.

\* \* \*

While men in the North were thus combining to oppose a system which they believed dangerous to the country as a whole, other events were taking place which aroused them to still greater efforts.

In Boston, an escaped slave was discovered. The court decided that the *wretched*<sup>6</sup> negro should be delivered to his

---

1. 細微的; 2. 集合; 3. 共和; 4. 共和黨; 5. 支持; 6. 不幸的, 可憐的。

“讓我們忘記微小不同的意見，在反對蓄奴制擴張到區域內的一個問題下面聯合起來。我們不要再分三個黨派各做各的，但要合而為一。”因此他們決定組織一個新黨——全人類反對奴權隸屬的集合體；建議這個黨應稱為“共和。”這一個小村子裏集會的行動風靡各處；許多較小的黨聯合為一，成為普遍的運動了。

在密歇根，七月六日，自由黨員和自由國家黨員的全州大會採用反對堪薩斯內普拉斯加的議決案的各件議決案，組成一個新組織取名“共和黨。”次年年底前五州的人民提議反對蓄奴制的擴展；從四十二個北部各州國會代表中祇有廿二個繼續擁護司蒂芬道格拉斯的能使領土成為蓄奴州的議案。

北部人民這樣聯合起來反對他們信為危害整個國家的制度的時候，另外一種事實發生鼓舞他們使成更強大的力量。

在波士頓，一個逃亡的奴隸找到了。法庭判決這個可憐的黑人應當送回他的主人。贊成廢除黑奴制者設法救濟他。騷動

master. An attempt was made by Abolitionists to rescue him. A riot<sup>1</sup> followed; the courthouse was attacked; blood was shed; the militia<sup>2</sup> of Boston were called out<sup>3</sup>. Then the city marshal<sup>4</sup>; with a hundred civil officers of Boston, guarding the chained slave, marched out of the courthouse in a hollow square formed by United States troops. They marched down State Street to the harbor<sup>5</sup>, and put the trembling fugitive<sup>6</sup> on board of a United States cutter<sup>7</sup> which President Pierce had sent to carry him back to bondage. It was a day to be remembered in Boston. People began then to believe that the slave power would never be content until every state in the Union was under its control.

In a city of Belgium, on an October day, three American politicians met to discuss a question of the greatest interest to the slave power. They were James Buchanan of Pennsylvania, John Y. Mason of Virginia, and Pierre Soulé of Louisiana. They were respectively<sup>8</sup> the ministers of the United States to England, France, and Spain. The question which they discussed was this: "How can the United States gain possession of Cuba?" Behind that question there was still another: "What can be done to extend slavery into new territories, so as to increase the number of slave states in the Union and make the slave power forever supreme<sup>9</sup>?"

Cuba was an ideal country for slavery, and sugar growers and cotton planters in the South had suggested that it ought to be made a part of the United States. The three statesmen were pleased with the thought. "The Union can never enjoy repose<sup>10</sup> nor possess reliable<sup>11</sup>

---

1. 騷動; 2. 民團; 3. 召集; 4. 警官, 陸軍大將; 5. 港口; 6. 亡命者;  
7. 緝私船; 8. 分隸於; 9. 至高的; 10. 安靜; 11. 可靠的。

接着進行；法庭被攻擊；流了血；波士敦的民團召集了。於是城市的警官，和百數的波士敦文官，守着這個鎖着的奴隸，合衆國軍隊列成中空方陣步出法庭。他們越過州道到港口，把這戰慄的亡命者押送下庇亞士總統派來帶他回境的緝私船。這是在波士敦可紀念的日子。人民相信蓄奴權非達到各州都置在統治之下不止。

在比利時的一個城內，三個美利堅政治家集議討論蓄奴權擴到最大限度的問題。他們三人是本薛佛尼的極姆斯波却能，味吉尼亞的約翰麥生，魯易士那的庇亞士沙爾。他們是合衆國駐英，法，西的公使。他們討論的問題是“怎樣能使合衆國佔有古巴？”在這個問題以後還有另一個問題：“怎樣可以使蓄奴權擴張到新領土上，以增加蓄奴州的數目使蓄奴權永遠取超越地位。”

古巴是一個理想的蓄奴國，而南方的植糖者和種棉者都建議它應當是合衆國領土的一部。這三個公使愛好這理想。他們說“聯邦決不能享到安靜也不能保有可靠的產業，倘使古

*security*<sup>1</sup>,” they said, “so long as Cuba is not embraced within its boundaries.” They therefore wrote to President Pierce and urged him to offer Spain one hundred and twenty millions of dollars for the island. But what if Spain should refuse to sell it? Then, declare war upon her, and take it by force.

When this proposition was made known, the people of the North were *indignant*<sup>2</sup>. Take a hundred and twenty millions of dollars from the public *treasury*<sup>3</sup> to extend slavery and the slave power? Never! Rob Spain unjustly of her possessions, and perhaps *involve*<sup>4</sup> the United States in war with half the nations of Europe? Never!

And so a *multitude*<sup>5</sup> of Northern voters, who had formerly *sympathized*<sup>6</sup> with the South, joined the ranks of Free-soilers and Abolitionists.

In the Senate of the United States, Charles Sumner of Massachusetts delivered the strongest speech that had ever been made against the slave power. His **1856** speech, which in truth was a violent one, was *entitled*<sup>7</sup> “*The Crime against Kansas*,” and in it he made a bitter attack upon South Carolina and upon Senator Butler of that state as largely *responsible*<sup>8</sup> for the evils of which he complained. Two days later, as Sumner was sitting at his desk in the Senate Chamber, Preston S. Brooks, a representative from South Carolina, strode down the *aisle*<sup>10</sup> and stood suddenly before him.

“I have read your speech twice over carefully,” said Brooks. “It is a *libel*<sup>11</sup> upon South Carolina and upon Mr. Butler, who is a relative of mine.”

---

1. 產業； 2. 憤慨； 3. 國庫； 4. 牽涉，拖累； 5. 多數，羣衆； 6. 同情；  
7. 命名； 8. 堪薩斯之罪惡； 9. 負責的； 10. 通廊； 11. 毀謗文字。

巴不包括在疆土之內。”因此他們呈請庇亞士總統給予西班牙一萬二千萬元來換這個島。但是假使西班牙拒絕出賣呢？那麼就向她宣戰，用武力奪取它。

這個提議公布後，北部人民憤慨。從國庫中取了一萬二千萬元以擴張蓄奴制和蓄奴權？決不！不公平地豪奪西班牙的所有，恐怕要拖累合衆國和歐羅巴洲的一半國家發生戰事？決不！

這樣大多數以前同情南部的北部選民，同自由國家黨人和贊成廢除黑奴制者聯合起來了。

在合衆國參議院裏面，馬薩諸塞的却而斯孫選發出一篇強有力的反蓄奴權演說辭，他的演詞，實際上是一篇激烈的，取名“堪薩斯的罪惡”，在這裏面他猛烈攻擊南卡羅來納和該州的參議員勃脫來應當擔負他所伸訴的罪惡。兩天以後，孫選坐在參議院議場內桌位上的時候，一個南卡羅來納的代表潑來斯敦勃陸克斯跨過通道突然站到他的前面。

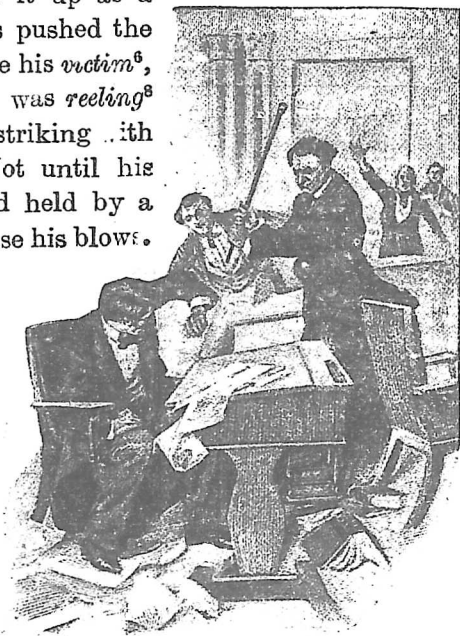
勃陸克斯說，“我已經留心讀過你的演詞兩遍。這是對南卡羅來納和我的親戚勃脫來的毀謗文字。”



As he spoke the last word, he suddenly raised his *cane*<sup>1</sup> and brought it down with *terrific*<sup>2</sup> force upon Sumner's head. The cane broke, but Brooks went on, beating the senator with the end that remained in his hand. Sumner tried *in vain*<sup>3</sup> to defend himself; he *wrenched*<sup>4</sup> the desk from the floor, and held it up as a *shield*<sup>5</sup>. But Brooks pushed the desk aside, and while his *victim*<sup>6</sup>, *blinded*<sup>7</sup> with blood, was *reeling*<sup>8</sup> to the floor, kept on striking with merciless *fury*<sup>9</sup>. Not until his arm was seized and held by a *bystander*<sup>10</sup> did he cease his blows.

Such a beating would have killed a man of ordinary build. Sumner, who had a powerful frame and perfect health, lay for many days at death's door, and although he lived many years afterward, he never regained his strength.

Had Preston S. Brooks resorted to a braver and *manlier*<sup>11</sup> method to *avenge the insult*<sup>12</sup> of which he complained, the people of the North would doubtless have sympathized with him. But they looked upon his



1. 手杖； 2. 可怖的； 3. 無效； 4. 猛扭； 5. 盾牌； 6. 遭難者； 7. 目眩； 8. 跌倒； 9. 狂暴； 10. 旁觀者； 11. 剛毅的； 12. 報侮辱之仇。

他說到末一個字的時候，他忽地舉起他的手杖猛擊孫邁的頭。手杖斷了，但是勃陸克斯繼續用手中的杖柄打這個參議員。孫邁抵抗無效；他猛扭書桌離開地板，執着它當盾。但是勃陸克斯推開書桌，他的遭難者血流滿面，頭暈目眩倒在地板上的時候，他還是狂怒而毫無憐惜地擊着。直到他的臂被旁觀者揪住他纔停止。

這樣的毆打可以致一個平常體格的人於死。孫邁，他有一個有力的身子和健全的體格，躺了許多日子奄奄一息，他雖是後來活了許多年，永沒有恢復他的健康。假使潑來斯敦勃陸克斯用更剛毅的方法報復他所訴侮辱的苦，北部的人民無疑地表同情於他。他們認他的舉動為卑鄙狂暴；千萬個迄今為蓄奴制辯解的，都轉變為反對蓄奴權而成爲它的厲害的敵人。

act as being both *cowardly*<sup>1</sup> and *brutal*<sup>2</sup>; and thousands who had hitherto *apologized*<sup>3</sup> for slavery turned against the slave power and became its bitter enemies.

### XVIII. UNDER BUCHANAN'S ADMINISTRATION

In May, 1856, a notable convention was held in Bloomington, Illinois. It was a meeting of men from all parts of the state, who were opposed to the extension of slavery into the territories. It had been called for the purpose of organizing a new political party.

Abraham Lincoln was there. "Let us," said he, "in building our new party, make our *corner stone*<sup>4</sup> the Declaration of Independence." And then he delivered one of the most powerful speeches of his life—a speech which was so clear, so *forcible*<sup>5</sup>, so *convincing*<sup>6</sup>, that his great audience was moved to feel and believe every word that he said. Again and again, while he was speaking, "they sprang to their feet and upon the benches, and *testified*<sup>7</sup> by *long-continued*<sup>8</sup> shouts and the waving of hats, how deeply the speaker had wrought upon their minds and heart."

Thus the Republican party of Illinois was formed; and from the first Abraham Lincoln was its acknowledged leader.

Three weeks later the first national convention of the party was held in Philadelphia. John Charles Frémont of California was nominated for President, and William L. Dayton of New Jersey for Vice President. On the first ballot for the vice-presidential candidate, one hundred and ten votes were cast for Mr. Lincoln. When the news

---

1. 卑鄙; 2. 殘暴; 3. 辯解, 謝罪; 4. 基石; 5. 有力; 6. 使信服; 7. 作證; 8. 長時間的, 長久繼續的。

## 十八 在布却能的管理之下

1856年五月，在伊利諾斯勃魯明敦召集了一個有名的集會。這是一個州中各地反對蓄奴制擴張到領域內的人的會議。它以組織新黨為目的。

亞伯拉罕林肯在那裏。他說，“讓我們，在創立新黨中，以宣布獨立為基石。”於是他發出畢生最有力量的演詞之一的演詞——這一篇演詞這樣清楚，這樣有力，這樣使人相信，他的廣大的聽眾感動而信服他所說的每一個字了。他說了再說的時候，“他們足跳到凳上，以脫帽大呼不已來證明，演說者激動人心多麼深切呵。”

這樣伊利諾斯州的共和黨成立了；林肯一開始就是公認的領袖。

三個星期以後，第一次黨的全國大會在非列得爾菲亞舉行。加利福尼的約翰却而司忽來門被推為大總統，紐折爾西的威廉殿敦被推選為副總統。初選副總統的時候，選舉林肯的有

was repeated to Abraham Lincoln in Springfield, he smiled and said in his droll way, "That is probably the distinguished Mr. Lincoln of Massachusetts."

The Democrats nominated James Buchanan of Pennsylvania for President, and John C. Breckenridge of Kentucky for Vice President. Stephen A. Douglas had hoped to win the presidential nomination; but he had *estranged*<sup>1</sup> so many of his Northern friends that the convention *deemed*<sup>2</sup> it wiser to choose Mr. Buchanan, who was said to be displeased with the Kansas-Nebraska Act.

In the campaign of that summer Mr. Lincoln did his full share. He made speeches in all the important towns of his state; and, being free to say what he thought, he threw himself into the work with all his old-time energy. Mr. Douglas was also very active in support of the Democratic ticket; and often the two men spoke from the same platform. Opposed to each other as they were in politics, there was no bitterness of feeling between them.

"Twenty years ago Mr. Douglas and I first became acquainted," said Lincoln. "We were both young—he a *trifle*<sup>3</sup> younger than I. Even then we were ambitious—I, perhaps, quite as much as he. With me the race has been a failure—a flat failure. With him it has been one of *splendid*<sup>4</sup> success. His name fills the nation, and is not unknown in foreign lands. I *affect*<sup>5</sup> no *contempt*<sup>6</sup> for the high *eminence*<sup>7</sup> he has reached. So reached that the *oppressed*<sup>8</sup> of my *species*<sup>9</sup> might have shared with me the *elevation*<sup>10</sup>, I would rather stand on that *eminence*<sup>11</sup> than wear the richest *crown*<sup>12</sup> that ever *pressed*<sup>13</sup> a *monarch's brow*<sup>14</sup>."

1. 疏遠； 2. 以爲； 3. 些小； 4. 聲名顯赫的； 5. 感動； 6. 羞辱； 7. 顯赫；  
8. 壓制； 9. 種類； 10. 高位； 11. 超越； 12. 王冠； 13. 緊壓； 14. 皇帝眉毛。

一百十票，這個消息傳到亞伯拉罕林肯的時候，他微笑而滑稽地說，“那個恐怕是聞名的馬薩諸塞的林肯先生罷。”

民主黨員推舉本薛佛尼亞的極姆斯布卻能為大總統，墾脫基的約翰勃來更立其為副總統。史蒂芬道格拉斯希望取勝總統初選；但是他疏遠了他許多的北部朋友，於是大會認為推選布却能是比較合適，他是不贊成堪薩斯內普拉斯加議案的。

在那個夏季的競選中，林肯先生用全副心力參加。他在他的州內各重要市鎮演講；因可以自由說出他的思想，他用了全部舊時的能力投身工作。道格拉斯先生也很活動贊助着民主黨的票；這兩人常常在同一講台上講話；他們在政見方面雖互相反對，但是在他們中間卻沒有惡感。

林肯說，“二十年以前我同道格拉斯先生第一次認識，我們都年輕，他還比我略幼。雖然我們已是有大志了——我恐怕是同他一樣。我在這個競賽中是失敗的——一個無味的失敗。他却是光榮的勝利，他的名聲播聞全國，連外國都沒有不知道的。我對於他躋身顯貴並不引以為恥。達到這個地步我的受屈抑之身使我得以參預同列，我寧願站立於超然地位，不必以戴着那緊壓君主眉梢的皇冠為榮。

Ten years would not pass until the world should know which of the two had made the "splendid success," and which the "flat failure."

The election was won by the Democrats, and James Buchanan became the fifteenth President of the United States. The Republicans were not yet strong enough to carry many of the states; but they had polled more votes than anybody expected, and they looked hopefully forward to the future.

\* \* \*

President Buchanan was inaugurated on the 4th of March, 1857. On that occasion he said: "The whole territorial question [the question of slavery in the territories] being settled upon the principle of popular sovereignty—a principle as ancient as *free government*<sup>1</sup> itself—everything of a practical nature has been decided. May we not then hope that the long agitation on this subject [of slavery] is approaching its end, and that the *geographical parties*<sup>2</sup>, so much dreaded by the Father of his country, will speedily become *extinct*<sup>3</sup>?"

While he was speaking the *Supreme Court*<sup>4</sup> of the United States was preparing that which would renew the long agitation and increase the bitterness of feeling between the two sections.

Dr. Emerson, a *surgeon*<sup>5</sup> in the United States army, was the owner of a negro slave whose name was Dred Scott. From his home in St. Louis he took the slave to Rock Island, in the free state of Illinois, where he lived for a year or more. Then he took him to Fort Snelling, in Minnesota, and there Dred was married to Harriet, a

---

1. 自由政府; 2. 地方性黨派; 3. 滅絕; 4. 最高法院; 5. 外科醫生。

一直等到十年過去以後，世界上纔知道兩人中那一個得了“光榮的勝利，”和那一個是“無味的失敗。”

民主黨在選舉中得勝了，約翰布却能成爲合衆國第十五任總統。共和黨員力量還不足提攜多數的州；但是他們得到的票出乎任何人意料之上，他們看到前途大有希望。

布却能總統在 1857 年三月四日就職。他在那時候說：“整個全領域的問題（領域中蓄奴制問題）以大衆主權爲依歸——像自由政治一樣古舊的主義——照實際性質取決。我們可否希望這問題的紛擾得以終止，而地方性質的黨派，爲他國父所害怕得這樣的，將要迅速地平息？”

當在他演講的時候，合衆國最高法院恰正準備重演長期的紛擾和增加雙方的痛苦情緒。

挨麥生醫師，合衆國軍隊中外科醫生，是一個叫做掘來特司各脫的黑奴的主人。他帶了他的奴隸離家到路克島，在伊利諾斯自由州裏面，在這裏住了一年以上。於是他帶他到福特司納林，在明納沙太，掘來特和一個他主人買來的黑種婦人結



negro woman whom his master *purchased*<sup>1</sup>. Two years later Dr. Emerson returned to St. Louis, carrying with him the two slaves and their child that had been born at Fort Snelling. Dred Scott claimed that because he and his wife had been taken by their master into a free state they were *entitled*<sup>2</sup>, under the common law of the land, to their freedom; and that the child who was born in a free territory could not be made a slave.

The case was first brought before the state courts in Missouri, and was then carried to the Supreme Court of the United States. Of the nine judges who then composed that court, five were from the slave states. In making the final *decision*<sup>3</sup> of the case, seven of the judges held that slaves were nothing but property; that being nothing but property, they could not be citizens; and that not being citizens, they could not bring a *suit*<sup>4</sup> in any court of the United States. "It is the opinion of the court," wrote Chief Justice Taney, "that neither Dred Scott himself, nor any of his family, were made free by being carried into free territory, even if they had been carried there by the owner with the intention of becoming a *permanent resident*<sup>5</sup>."

The people of the North were *astounded*<sup>6</sup>. "This decision of the Supreme Court made slavery possible in every state of the Union. Southern slaveholders might remove permanently to New York or Maine or any other Northern state, carry their negroes with them, and hold them and their children in *bondage*<sup>7</sup>, just as in the Southern states.

"Where now, Mr. Douglas," they asked, "is your doctrine of popular sovereignty? You say that to the people

---

1. 買; 2. 使有資格; 3. 判決; 4. 訴訟; 5. 永久居民; 6. 震驚; 7. 束縛。

了婚。兩年以後挨麥生回到聖路易斯，帶了兩個黑奴和他們在福特司納林生的孩子。掘來特司各脫聲訴因為他們被主人帶進一個自由州裏面，他們在那邊取得了資格，按照着該地方的法律；所以在那個領域內生的孩子不能成為奴隸的。

這一個案子先在密蘇里州法院審判，再解送合衆國最高法院。在組織法庭的九個裁判官中間，五個是從蓄奴州來的。在本案的最後判決，裁判官中的七人主張奴隸除了是一種財產以外沒有別的意義；除了是財產不是別的，他們不能成為公民；既不是公民，他們不能在合衆國的法庭上提起訴訟。主席裁判官吞納寫道：“這是法庭的意見，掘來特司各脫自己，或是他的家屬，都不能因帶到一個自由領域而獲得自由，雖然他們的主人帶到那邊有意使他們成為永久的住民。”

北部的人民驚駭了。這個最高法院的判決使蓄奴制在聯邦各州都可以通行。南方的奴隸領主可以永遠移居紐約或緬因或別的北部諸州，帶了他們的黑奴在一起，束縛住他們和他們的子女，像在南部一樣。

他們問道，“道格拉斯先生，你的大衆主權那裏去了？你

of a territory or state belongs the sole right to say whether they will or will not have slavery. But now slavery is permitted everywhere, whether the people wish it or not."

Mr. Douglas himself could not help but see that the decision of the Supreme Court had set his *theory*<sup>1</sup> at *naught*<sup>2</sup>. ~ He saw, too, how the slaveholders of Missouri were trying to make Kansas a slave state *in defiance of*<sup>3</sup> the popular will; and he resolved to oppose such measures. He told President Buchanan of his intentions.

"Let me warn you, Mr. Douglas," said Buchanan, "that no Democrat has ever differed from a President of his own party without being *crushed*<sup>4</sup>. You, yourself, doubtless remember the fate of certain men who opposed President Jackson."

"And I beg to remind you, Mr. President," answered Douglas, "that General Andrew Jackson is dead."

From that day there began a gradual *estrangement*<sup>5</sup> between Stephen A. Douglas and his friends in the South.

\* \* \*

In the meanwhile, the troubles in Kansas continued. "If Kansas is abolitionized," wrote one of the senators from Missouri, "then Missouri will cease to be a slave state, New Mexico will become a free state, and California will remain a free state. But if we secure Kansas as a slave state, Missouri will be secure, New Mexico and southern California, if not all of it, will become slave states; in a word, the prosperity or ruin of the whole South depends on the Kansas struggle."

We can scarcely wonder, then, that the Missourians entered so *recklessly*<sup>6</sup> into the struggle, and that men ordinarily

---

1. 理論; 2. 空無; 3. 違反; 4. 壓制; 5. 疏遠; 6. 漠不關心, 疏忽地。

告訴那個領域和州邑的人民，說他們有權選擇要不要蓄奴制。但是現在蓄奴制可以在各處存在着，不論人民願意不願意。

道格拉斯先生眼看着最高法院置他的理論如無物而沒有辦法。他也看到密蘇里的蓄奴者設法違反公意使堪薩斯成爲一個蓄奴州；他決計反對這些企圖。他把他的意思告訴布却能總統。

布却能說，“讓我警告你，道格拉斯先生，沒有一個民主黨員同他本黨總統意見相左而不受壓迫的。你，你自己，無疑地還記得反對傑克生總統的某君的命運。”

道格拉斯回答說，“我敬提醒你，盎掘魯傑克生將軍已死了。”

從那一天起司蒂芬道格拉斯和他的南部朋友漸漸開始疏遠了。

當其時，堪薩斯的困難繼續着。從密蘇里選出的一個參議員說，“倘使堪薩斯廢止黑奴制，密蘇里將不再爲蓄奴的州而加利福尼亞將仍爲自由州了。但是倘使我們得堪薩斯爲蓄奴州，密蘇里可以保證了，新墨西哥和南加利福尼亞，倘不是全部，將成爲蓄奴州；總之，南部的繁榮或紊亂將以堪薩斯之爭卜之。”

我們可不以爲異，密蘇里人如此疏忽地踏入鬥爭，而尋常

peaceable and *law-abiding*<sup>1</sup> became, for the time being, forgetful of their duties as citizens of a civilized country.

The excitement ran so high that no man's life was safe in Kansas. It was not an uncommon thing, when two men met in the road, for both to come up with *pistols*<sup>2</sup> in their hands; and the first *salutation*<sup>3</sup> was, "Free state or *proslavery*?" If the answer was not satisfactory, the next sound might be the report of a pistol. In the district around Lawrence, farmers *tilled*<sup>5</sup> their fields in companies, all *armed to the teeth*<sup>6</sup>.

The elections were a mere *farce*<sup>7</sup>. Although it was known that *three fourths*<sup>8</sup> of the actual settlers in the territory were free-state men, yet their votes counted as nothing. A convention was called by the proslavery men to meet at Lecompton for the purpose of forming another state constitution and again asking for admission into the Union. The president of that convention was John Calhoun, late of Illinois,—the same Calhoun for whom Abraham Lincoln had carried a surveyor's chain, twenty years before. He distinguished himself by reporting nearly four hundred proslavery votes from a district in which there were only forty-three voters. Fearing that he would be obliged to show the ballots to a *committee*<sup>9</sup> of Congress, he hid them in a candle box, and thus became known to history as "Candle-box Calhoun."

The constitution that was formed at Lecompton was all that the slaveholders could wish. It was sent to Congress with a *petition*<sup>10</sup> that Kansas should be admitted to the Union as a slave state. President Buchanan gave

---

1. 守法的； 2. 手鎗； 3. 祝詞，致敬； 4. 贊成奴隸制； 5. 耕地； 6. 全身武裝； 7. 滑稽劇； 8. 四分之三； 9. 委員會； 10. 呈請。

和平守法的人民，一時也忘了他們文明國家公民的責任了。

激昂的情緒昇得這樣高在堪薩斯沒有一個人的生命是能安全的。這不是一個異常的事，當兩個人在路上相遇的時候，雙方都出鎗於手；劈頭一句就問，“自由州還是贊成蓄奴的？”倘使答詞不能滿意，第二聲就可以放鎗了。在勞倫斯周圍，農民成隊耕田，全身武裝着。

選舉僅是一幕滑稽劇。雖然知道領域內實在的住民四分之三是自由州的人，但是他們的選票計算起來如同沒有這回事一樣。贊成蓄奴制的人民在里康敦召集大會以另產生法制和重行請求加入聯邦。大會主席是約翰蓋而杭，本來是伊利諾斯人，——就是廿年前林肯替他拖過測量鏈的那個蓋而杭。他以從一個祇有四十三個投票者的地方報告得近四百張贊成蓄奴票而顯名的。因怕他將要被迫把票箱現示於國會的委員會前面，他把票藏在一只燭箱內，因此在歷史上叫做“蠟燭箱蓋而杭。”

在里康敦產生的法制正是蓄奴者所希望的。它就送到國會并附呈文申請准堪薩斯加入聯邦為一個蓄奴州。布却能總

it his support: but it was opposed by Senator Douglas and his friends. The *breach*<sup>1</sup> in the Democratic party was beginning to *widen*<sup>2</sup>. "If Kansas wants a slave-state constitution," said Douglas, "she has a right to it. If she wants a free-state constitution, she has right to it. It is none of my business which way the slavery cause is decided." But he went on to show that the Lecompton Constitution was not the constitution which the people wished, and that if it were fairly voted upon in Kansas, it would be voted down.

Congress at length resolved to admit Kansas into the Union, provided that the people, in a fairly conducted election, should agree to the Lecompton constitution and slavery; and as an *inducement*<sup>3</sup> to those who might *waver*<sup>4</sup>, a large grant of public lands was promised to the new state.

In the meanwhile, the *enthusiasm*<sup>5</sup> of the slave-state men in Kansas had begun to fail. The *squatters*<sup>6</sup> from Missouri had grown tired of the struggle and had returned to their homes. The free-state men had gained control of the legislature. An election was called for the purpose of allowing the people to choose whether they would become a state with the Lecompton Constitution or whether they would remain a territory.

The election took place in January, 1858. Of 10,388 votes cast, only 162 were in favor of the constitution. Kansas remained a territory; but the great struggle was ended. When she became a state, three years later, the slave power was already *doomed*<sup>7</sup>.

---

1. 分裂; 2. 擴大; 3. 利誘; 4. 猶豫; 5. 熱心; 6. 佔居他人之地者;  
7. 定命運,定死罪。

統贊助着它；但爲參議員道格拉斯所反對。民主黨的分裂開始擴大了。道格拉斯說，“倘使堪薩斯要蓄奴州的法制，她有權。倘使她要自由州的法制，他也有權。這不是我的事情蓄奴制用那一種方法取決。”但是他表示里康敦法制不是人民所贊成的，倘使在堪薩斯公正地投票取決，它是要否決的。

最後國會決定准堪薩斯加入聯邦，而以人民在合理的選舉下面須同意於里康敦法制和蓄奴制爲條件；而爲利誘游移份子起見，大量公地的讓與權利准許劃給新州。

當其時，在堪薩斯的蓄奴州人的熱情已開始降落。密蘇里的佔地者漸感倦於鬥爭而已回他們的老家去了。自由州人已得議會的管理權。於是召集選舉大會允許人民自擇成爲里康敦法制下的州邑還是依舊保留爲領土。

選舉在 1858 年一月舉行。從 10,388 張選票中，祇有 162 張贊成法制的。堪薩斯保留爲領土；但大爭端停止了。三年以後，她成爲一個州，蓄奴權早已決定命運了。



## XIX. ESTRANGEMENT BETWEEN NORTH AND SOUTH

It must not be supposed that the people of the South wished to be unjust to their *kinsmen*<sup>1</sup> of the North. It must not be thought that they were not patriotic. Still less must it be supposed that all good men were *arrayed*<sup>2</sup> on the side of freedom and all bad men on the side of slavery.

The patriotism of the Southern people differed from the patriotism of the Northern people in that instead of being national, it was sectional. The doctrine of States' Rights was held throughout the South long after it had disappeared from the North. When our government was founded, that doctrine was almost universal. Thomas Jefferson was its first great *expounder*<sup>3</sup>; John C. Calhoun was its last great defender. According to that doctrine, the state was supreme within its own boundaries. Our country was not one great nation, but a union of many nations. *Allegiance*<sup>4</sup> was due first to the state, then to the section, and after that to the United States. Citizens of Mississippi, for example, were proud to be called Americans, but they were prouder still to be known as Southerners, and proudest of all when feeling that they were Mississippians. The love for one's state—a feeling almost unknown in the North—*induced*<sup>5</sup> an *attachment*<sup>6</sup> for the section. The Southern states had many things in common—they had the same political beliefs; they had slavery; their productions were similar; the manner of living and thinking was much the same in all. Southern people, therefore, loved the South, and were *loyal*<sup>7</sup> to it.

---

1. 親屬； 2. 排列； 3. 闡明者； 4. 忠心； 5. 引誘； 6. 結合體； 7. 效忠。

## 十九 南北二部的分離

一定不要這麼想以爲南部的人民願以不公道對待他們的北部同胞。也一定不要這麼想以爲他們都是不愛國的。更不能以爲所有好人都編列在自由的一邊，而所有壞人在蓄奴的一邊。

南部人的愛國心與北部人的愛國心不同，在於不是國家的，而是區域的。南部人全體主張州權主義遠在這種主義在北部消滅以後。我們的政府創立的時候，那種主義差不多普遍的。湯姆生傑非生是它的第一個闡明者；約翰蓋而杭是最後的擁護者。按照那個主義，州在它自己疆界內是高於一切。我們的國不是一個國家，但是好幾個國家的組合。最先應對州效忠，於是對區域，以後纔對合衆國國家。舉一個例，密士失必的人民以美利堅人自傲，但是他們更以南部人自傲，而以密士失必人爲最足自傲了。愛所隸屬的州——在北部沒有這一種感覺——誘致區域的結合。南部諸州有許多事情同樣的——他們有同樣的政治信仰；他們都蓄奴；他們的出產相彷彿；生活和思想的態度幾乎完全相同。因此，南部人民愛南部，而效忠於它了。

Closely dependent upon all this was the idea that the South should always have as large a representation in Congress as the North. This idea, as we have already seen, began when our government was first founded with seven Northern states and six Southern states. The two sections remained almost equal in power until the admission of California gave to the North a decided majority in Congress. Even then there were so many Northern men with Southern sympathies that the South might have held her own for a very long time had it not been for her growing jealousy of the North and the *misunderstandings*<sup>1</sup> that consequently sprang up in both sections. It was sectional jealousy more than any feeling about slavery that *fanned*<sup>2</sup> the fires of *discord*<sup>3</sup> and threatened to destroy the Union.

There was not much communication between the two section, and the people of each section had very strange ideas about the people of the other. In the South it was very generally believed that a large number of persons in the North were engaged in nothing else but planning how to destroy slavery, and how to *reduce*<sup>4</sup> the Southern people to poverty. It was supposed that the Abolitionists were actively plotting to arouse *insurrections*<sup>5</sup> among the slaves and to carry *disaster*<sup>6</sup> and ruin into every Southern home. Every victory, therefore, of the slave power in extending the limits of slavery or in obliging the Northern people to return the fugitives among them, was *hailed*<sup>7</sup> with satisfaction as a step toward security.

The Southern people believed that it was the purpose of the North to *tyrannize*<sup>8</sup> over the South in every possible way. They pointed to the tariff laws which, while they

1. 誤會； 2. 煽動； 3. 紛爭； 4. 降低； 5. 叛亂； 6. 禍患； 7. 慶賀； 8. 虐治。

密切地繫於全部這種事實的理想就是南部應當有同北部一樣多的代表人數在國會裏面。我們早已看到這種理想在以七個北部的州和六個南部的州，創立我們的政府的時候開始。這兩個區域信持同等的權力一直到加利福尼亞准許加入聯邦纔使北部得到國會中決定的多數。但那時候假使沒有南部人對北部人繼長增高的嫉妒和二區域間常常發生的誤會，還有這麼多北部人對南部人表示同情教他們自己保持蓄奴權。這是區域觀念的嫉妒心，在一切對蓄奴制的感情之上，煽動紛爭的火焰而預示聯邦的破壞。

在兩個區域間，沒有多少來往，而每一個區域的人民對另一個區域的人民有很奇異的理想。在南部，一般都相信多數北部人除了計劃怎麼樣破壞蓄奴制，和怎麼樣降低南部人於貧窮以外沒有別的事情做。都是這麼想，贊成廢止黑奴制者活動地陰謀鼓動奴隸叛亂和使各個南部人的家庭發生災禍混亂狀態。因此一切擴展蓄奴制的限制和強迫北部人歸還他們中的逃亡者的蓄奴權的勝利，每被慶為進一步的保障而引為滿意。

南部人相信北部以使各種可能方法壓制南部為目的。他

protected Northern manufacturers, imposed "the main burden of taxation upon the Southern people, who were *consumers*<sup>1</sup> and not manufacturers." The larger part of the money *appropriated*<sup>2</sup> by Congress for various purposes was *disbursed*<sup>3</sup> in the North. These causes, they claimed, attracted immigration to the North and repelled it from the South. The North was all the time growing richer at the expense of the South, which was scarcely holding its own.

As for the recent political troubles, they urged that the Missouri Compromise was an *encroachment*<sup>4</sup> of the North upon the South, *depriving*<sup>5</sup> her of "equality in the enjoyment of territory which justly belonged equally to both." That compromise, they said, was in truth repealed in 1850, by the action of the North in making California, which naturally belonged to the South, a free state. The object of the Kansas-Nebraska Act was not to force slavery upon any state or territory, but to leave the people "perfectly free to form and regulate their *domestic institutions*<sup>6</sup> in their own way, subject only to the Constitution of the United States." The troubles in Kansas, they claimed, were the outgrowth of efforts in the Northern states "to prevent free *migration*<sup>7</sup> and *hinder the decision*<sup>8</sup>, by climate and the interests of the inhabitants," as to whether slavery was advisable. The Northern people had been the first to begin the conflict. "The war cry of the Northern politicians was 'No extension of slavery!' Its object was to inflame the minds of the less discerning and stir up *hatred*<sup>9</sup> toward the South," said Jefferson Davis.

Such were some of the *grievances*<sup>10</sup>, fancied or real,

1. 消費者； 2. 撥給； 3. 支付； 4. 侵佔； 5. 剝奪； 6. 本州法律； 7. 移民； 8. 阻礙決議； 9. 怨恨； 10. 不平鳴。

們指保護北部工業的稅則，“大部份擔負加於南部人民身上，他們是消費者，不是製造者。”議會撥充特用的經費大部份用於北部。這些理由，他們聲言，鼓勵移民於北部而脫離南部。北部用了南部的錢而日益富有，南部很少自己保存着的。

對最近政治的爭議，他們認密蘇里調解方案是北部對南部的侵佔行爲，剝奪她的“屬於兩者公有的領土內的享受。”那個調解方案，他們說，已因北部使本來隸屬南部的加利福尼亞成爲一個自由州而破壞了。堪薩斯內布拉斯加方案並不強迫任何一州或領土實行蓄奴制，不過讓人民“完全自主成立本州憲法，在合衆國憲法之下。”他們聲言，堪薩斯的爭議是北部各州力量的擴張以“遏止移民和妨礙決議案，爲了天時和居民的利益，”無論蓄奴制是否合宜。北部人民發動鬥爭。“北部的政治家的戰爭口號是‘停止蓄奴權的擴展！’它的目的在鼓煽較不明白的人的熱情和刺激對南部人的憤怒，”傑勿生大衛說。

這些都是實際的或是幻想的不平之鳴，充滿了驚駭和震

which filled the hearts of honest Southern people with *apprehension*<sup>1</sup> and alarm. So intense was their devotion to the South that they had come to regard this country as composed of two distinct parts; and they believed that the chief aim of the Northern part was to get the upper hand of the Southern.

\* \* \*

On the other hand, there was among the Northern people no *deep-seated love*<sup>2</sup> for the North, merely as a section; but large numbers of these people had come to believe that there were in this country two *antagonistic*<sup>3</sup> forces, proslavery and antislavery, and that the chief aim of the proslavery force was to get the upper hand in everything.

There were good men in the South just as there were good men in the North. There were also men in both sections who were willing to do any deed, however unlawful or unjust, in order to forward their own selfish or ambitious aims.

Only a small portion of the Southern people were actual slaveowners. The most of them, until stirred up by slaveholding politicians, were *indifferent*<sup>4</sup> as to whether slavery was extended into new territories or not. Those of the better class who were honest and well *informed*<sup>5</sup> *regretted*<sup>5</sup> that there should be so much *strife*<sup>7</sup> between the North and the South. All were loyal patriots, as they understood patriotism. Some would have made great sacrifices to settle forever the disputes between the sections. "If I owned all the slaves in the South," said Robert E. Lee of Virginia, "I would give them all to save the Union."

---

1. 驚駭; 2. 深愛; 3. 對抗的; 4. 無謂的; 5. 開通的; 6. 抱憾; 7. 爭端。

動在誠實的南部人民腦際。南部人的注意力這樣堅決，他們認為國家是由兩部份構成；他們相信北部的的主要目的在得到超越南部的地位。

另一方面，在北部人民中間沒有對北部的深愛，僅是地域的觀念。但是大部份人民漸信國家有兩種對抗的勢力，贊成蓄奴制和反對蓄奴制，而贊成蓄奴制的力量是要取得超於一切之上的地位。

南部有好人，也同北部的好人一樣。兩個領域內也都有願意做任何不守法和不公正的行動，以實現他們的自私和野心。

祇有一小部分的南部人是實在的蓄有奴隸者。大多數人，在蓄奴政治家鼓動之前，對於蓄奴制擴展到新領土與否是沒有關係的。上智的誠實而明白的一等人抱憾於南北二部間發生這麼多的爭端。全部都是忠愛國家的人，他們懂得愛國主義。有的人願意以絕大的犧牲解決地域間的爭端。“倘使我蓄有南部的全部奴隸，我願為救國起見一起解放他們，”味吉尼亞的洛勃脫里說。

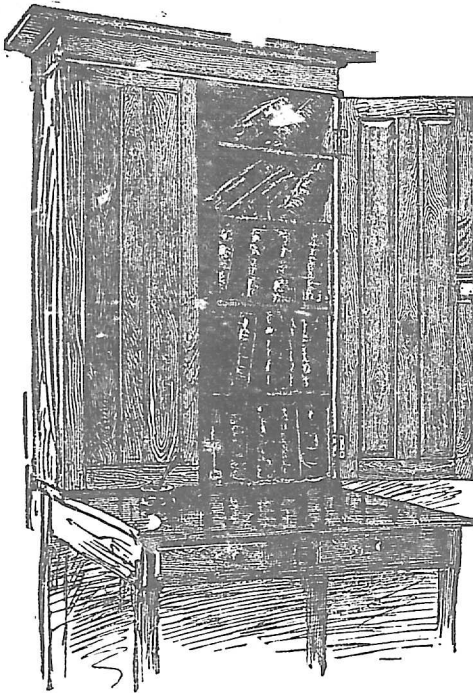


## XX. LINCOLN AND DOUGLAS

Stephen A. Douglas's term in the United States Senate was drawing to a close. The new legislature soon to

1858

be elected in Illinois would choose his *successor*<sup>1</sup>. Should he be returned to the Senate? Or should his place be filled by another?



Lincoln's Writing Desk

President Buchanan, true to his threat, was using his influence to crush him. In Illinois all Democrats who were true to the *administration*<sup>2</sup> would oppose him. There were thousands, however, who believed in him, and would support

1. 繼承者； 2. 行政權。

## 二〇 林肯和道格拉斯

司蒂芬道格拉斯在合衆國參議院的任期已將結束。即將在伊利諾斯成立的新議會將選舉他的繼承人。他會不會重回回到參議會？還是他的位置由別人繼承？

道格拉斯先生促成里康敦法制的失敗；他救脫堪薩斯以蓄奴州地位加入聯邦；這樣做法他在民主黨造成了許多厲害的敵人。布却能總統，真的受到打擊，正在用他的勢力壓倒他。在伊利諾斯，所有盡心於行政權的民主黨員都要反對他。但是有數千相信他的人都願擁護他，無論黨的領袖怎麼樣做法。他們自稱爲“反里康敦民主黨，”召集保證投道格拉斯票的份子開會。

別州的共和黨員因爲道格拉斯和總統不治而分裂民主黨表示欣慰。他們勸告伊利諾斯的共和黨員不去舉出自己的代表，而投反里康敦民主黨的票。但是伊利諾斯共和黨明白道格

him despite of anything that the party leaders might do. They called themselves "Anti-Lecompton Democrats," held conventions, and nominated men for the legislature who were pledged to vote for Douglas.

The Republicans of other states were pleased because Douglas had quarreled with the President and had divided the Democratic party. They advised the Republicans of Illinois not to put forward a candidate of their own, but to vote with the Anti-Lecompton Democrats. But the Illinois Republicans knew Douglas too well. Was it not Douglas who had proposed the Kansas-Nebraska Act? Had not all the troubles in Kansas been the result of that act? Had not the Lecompton Constitution itself grown out of that act? "Stephen A. Douglas," they said, "is not to be trusted: to-day he supports a cause which to-morrow he will oppose. Besides this, he is a Democrat in all things except one."

They therefore announced that Abraham Lincoln was their "first and only choice for United States senator, to fill the *vacancy*<sup>1</sup> about to be *created*<sup>2</sup> by the *expiration*<sup>3</sup> of Mr. Douglas's term of office." They put forth all their efforts to elect a legislature that would carry out their wishes; and Mr. Lincoln himself made the first great speech of the campaign.

Before delivering his speech in public, he read it to a small gathering of *intimate*<sup>4</sup> friends in the library of the capitol at Springfield. The very first paragraph filled his hearers with alarm:—

"We are now," he said, "far into the fifth year since a policy was *initiated*<sup>5</sup> with the *avowed*<sup>6</sup> object and *confident*<sup>7</sup>

---

1. 懸缺; 2. 創設; 3. 滿期; 4. 親近的; 5. 發起, 創立; 6. 公省的; 7. 自負的.

拉斯太深了。提議堪薩斯內布拉斯加議案的不是道格拉斯嗎？堪薩斯爭端不是該議案造成的嗎？里康敦法制本身不是由這議案產生的嗎？他們說，“司蒂芬道格拉斯是不可信任的：今天他贊助一件議案明天便能反對。此外，他除了一件一切都是——一個民主黨員。

他們因此宣告亞伯拉罕林肯是首先的和唯一的合衆國參議員人選以補充道格拉斯任期屆滿的位置。”他們用全力選出要實行他們的意志的議會；林肯先生自己作競選的第一次廣大演說。

在向大衆發表演詞以前，他先向親近的朋友們的集合中朗讀在斯潑林斐爾特首邑的圖書館裏邊。首節使他的聽衆報以驚駭。他說：——

“我們知道自從以結束奴隸制度糾紛爲公開目的和自負的諾言的政策創立迄今，我們在其中鑽研已是第五年了。而在這個政策實行的時候，紛擾不但沒有停止，反有繼續增高之

promise of putting an end to slavery agitation. Under the operation of that policy, that agitation has not only not ceased, but has *constantly*<sup>1</sup> *augmented*<sup>2</sup>. In my opinion, it will not cease until a *crisis*<sup>3</sup> shall have been reached and passed. 'A house divided against itself cannot stand.' I believe this government cannot endure permanently half slave and half free. I do not expect the Union to be *dissolved*<sup>4</sup>,—I do not expect the house to fall,—but I do expect it will cease to be divided. It will become all one thing or all the other."

His friends looked *aghast*<sup>5</sup>

"What do you think of it?" he asked each one.

Not one approved of it.

"It is a very foolish *utterance*<sup>6</sup>," said one.

"What you say may be true enough," said another, "but the people are not ready to hear it."

"If you utter it in public," said a third, "it will ruin all your prospects of election."

Mr. Lincoln listened quietly to all their *remarks*<sup>7</sup> and then, calm and *serene*<sup>8</sup>, rose from his chair. In his face was that *far-away look*<sup>9</sup> which in later years was often seen there when he was *grappling*<sup>10</sup> with questions not *comprehended*<sup>11</sup> by common minds.

"Gentlemen," he said, "I have given much thought to this question. The proposition is true. 'A house divided against itself cannot stand.' It is time that this truth should be spoken. If it is *decreed*<sup>12</sup> that I should go down because of this speech, then let me go down *linked*<sup>13</sup> with it to the truth. Let me die in the *advocacy*<sup>14</sup> of what is

1. 不斷的； 2. 增漲； 3. 危機； 4. 解體； 5. 驚愕； 6. 措辭； 7. 所說之舉；  
8. 安靜的； 9. 泰然之色； 10. 緊握； 11. 明曉； 12. 判決； 13. 連合； 14. 主張。

勢。在我的意見，它決不會停止除非達到了并經過了一個危機之後。‘一所房屋分裂開了決不能站住。’我相信這個政府不能長期忍受半奴半主的狀態。我不希望聯邦解散，——我不希望房屋傾圮，——但是我希望它停止分裂。它要變成同一的或其他的目標。”

他的朋友們駭然相視。

他問每一個人說，“你以為怎麼樣？”

沒有一個贊成它。

有一位說，“這是極笨拙的措辭。”

另一位說，“你的話是很實在的，但是民衆不準備去聽它。”

第三位說，“倘使你公開向衆人演講，就要毀滅了所有你選舉的希望。”

林肯先生靜聽他們的批評，安詳地，從他的椅子內站起來。他臉上表示泰然之色，這種神情，後來幾年中當他把握定一個不為庸俗所明瞭的問題的時候，你們常常能見到的。

他說，“列位，我已經將這個問題考慮熟了。這個見解是對的。‘一所房屋分裂了決不能站住的。’這個真理應當說出來的時候了。倘使我受到爲了這個演詞而要跌倒，那麼讓我跌倒與它結合了同到真理方面去罷。讓我爲主張公道正義而死。”

just and right.”

The next day he delivered the speech, exactly as it was written, to a large concourse of excited listeners. “The result,” said he, at the close, “is not, doubtful. We shall not fail. If we stand firm, we shall not fail. Wise *counsels*<sup>1</sup> may *accelerate*<sup>2</sup>, or mistakes may *delay*<sup>3</sup> it, but, sooner or later, the victory is sure to come.”

As his friends had warned him, the people were not yet ready to be told the plain truth. They knew that the nation was divided against itself, but they believed that it would continue to stand, despite the division; and they *resented*<sup>4</sup> the idea that the cause of that division must be removed before peace was possible.

“Mr. Lincoln, you have made a great mistake,” said one of his hearers, sorrowfully.

“The time will come,” said Mr. Lincoln, “when you will think this ‘mistake’ the wisest thing I have *heretofore*<sup>5</sup> said.”

### XXI. IN FRIENDLY DEBATE

The attention of both political parties was turned to the campaign that was thus opened in Illinois. A *challenge*<sup>6</sup> was sent by Lincoln to Douglas to discuss the questions of the day in a series of joint debates. Douglas accepted, and seven meetings in different parts of the state were arranged for.

Never in the history of our country has such another political *duel*<sup>7</sup> been fought. When the day came at any particular place for one of these debates, the people assembled in crowds from all the surrounding country. Farmers left their harvest-fields, *mechanics*<sup>8</sup> closed their shops, merchants locked their storerooms. The roads for miles

1. 勸告; 2. 促進; 3. 遲延; 4. 抱怨; 5. 以前; 6. 挑戰詞; 7. 爭論; 8. 工人。

第二天他發表演詞，同他所寫的完全一樣，對着受震動的聽衆集合。閉會後他說，“結果是無疑的。我們不會失敗的。倘使我們站得穩定，我們決不會失敗。聰明的勸告可以促進之，或錯誤以遲延之，但是，早晚勝利必定來到的。”

在他的朋友們警告他之下，民衆還不準備接受這個明白的真理。他們知道國家分立了，但是他們相信不問分立運動怎樣，國家將繼續站住；而他們抱怨憾於在和平實現以前分立的原因必須去掉的意思。

“林肯先生，你已經做了一個大錯誤了，”他的聽衆中之一愁苦地說。

“時候將要來到，”林肯先生說，“那時你將要想到我以前講的這個‘錯誤’是一件最聰明的事。”

## 二一 在友誼的辯論中

雙方政黨的注意轉到這時候，在伊利諾斯開的演說競賽會。林肯向道格拉斯挑戰舉行聯合辯論的連續集會以討論目前的種種問題。道格拉斯接受了，在該州的各地方排定了七個集會。

在我們國史上從來未有這樣的政治鬥爭。這些辯論會開的地方，民衆從四周各處都成羣結隊集合前來。農輟其耕，工



were crowded with men on foot, men on horseback, men in wagons. They came, bringing their *provision*<sup>1</sup> and camping by the roadside or on the open prairie. There were *banners*<sup>2</sup> and brass bands without number; there were *bonfires*<sup>3</sup> and *parades*<sup>4</sup> and much shouting and *swaggering*<sup>5</sup>; but the uppermost wish in the mind of every one was to hear what the two great leaders had to say.

At the first meeting twenty thousand eager listeners were present. Mr. Douglas came with his friends by railroad, in a special car *decorated*<sup>6</sup> with flags. His arrival was *heralded*<sup>7</sup> by a cannon and a brass band. Mr. Lincoln came alone, without display of any kind. At four of the meetings Mr. Douglas opened and closed the debate; at three that *privilege*<sup>8</sup> was accorded to Mr. Lincoln.

"I take great pleasure," said Douglas, "in saying that I have known *personally and intimately*<sup>9</sup>, for about a quarter of a century, the worthy gentleman who has been nominated for my place; and I will say that I regard him as a kind, *amiable*<sup>10</sup>, and intelligent gentleman,—a good citizen and an honorable *opponent*<sup>11</sup>. And whatever may be the issue I may have with him, it will be of principle and not of personalities."

And so the debates throughout were conducted in a friendly manner, as by two gentlemen, each saying that which he honestly believed to be just and true. Never, perhaps, were *debaters*<sup>12</sup> more equally *matched*<sup>13</sup> and at the same time so different in those qualities which ordinarily attract the multitude. €

Lincoln was forty-nine years old; Douglas was three

1. 乾糧; 2. 旗幟; 3. 焰火; 4. 遊行; 5. 喝采; 6. 裝飾; 7. 先導;  
8. 特權; 9. 親自和親密地; 10. 和藹的; 11. 政敵; 12. 辯論家; 13. 匹敵。

止其作，商停其市。路上密集步行，騎馬，乘車的羣衆，數十里不絕。他們裹着餼糧，幕宿道旁，露營田野，都到這裏來。旗幟樂隊無數；還有焰火，遊行，歡呼，喝采；各人都以一聽兩大領袖的言論以爲榮。

第一次開會二萬個熱望的聽衆到場。道格拉斯先生同他的朋友從鐵路上乘滿飾旂徽的專車，前導以號炮和音樂，林肯先生獨行而來，沒有任何表現。在辯論會中有四次是道格拉斯主持開會和閉會；三次却是屬於林肯的權利。

道格拉斯說，“我深以爲快在說起我廿五年來與被推繼我位置的高尚君子締深交；我當他是一個和悅可親智慧絕俗的端士，——一個良好公民和可貴政敵。我同他在任何鬥爭場所，都是爲公（主義）而非爲私（個人）。”

因此辯論始終在友誼態度下進行，兩位君子，各說他自信爲公平正當的話。恐怕從未有過這樣的辯論家，才力相等又在同時而吸引羣衆的個性又這樣不相同。

林肯年紀四十九歲；道格拉斯小三歲。林肯身材高大，大

years younger. Lincoln was tall and gaunt, with a *massive*<sup>1</sup> head, a rough shaven face, *shaggy*<sup>2</sup> eyebrows, and a sad, homely *countenance*<sup>3</sup> already *scamed*<sup>4</sup> and *wrinked*<sup>5</sup>. Douglas was small of *stature*<sup>6</sup>, his head was covered with a rank growth of *grizzled*<sup>7</sup> hair; his face, *beaming*<sup>8</sup> with intelligence, marked him as a man of power; his eyes were *piercingly*<sup>9</sup> bright; his features were regular, handsome, and attractive.

In speaking, Lincoln *excelled*<sup>10</sup> in clearness of *statement*<sup>11</sup>, *simplicity*<sup>12</sup>, and *purity*<sup>13</sup> of language; everything that he said was full of meaning, and he said no more than was necessary to make his *arguments*<sup>14</sup> complete. Douglas was bold and dashing; he never wanted for a word; he hesitated at nothing; he had the *cunning*<sup>15</sup> of one trained to *deception*<sup>16</sup>; his very manner compelled his hearers to believe him.

To the country people who flocked to hear them, Lincoln was "Old Abe" or "Honest Abe" of Springfield; Douglas was the "Little Giant of Illinois."

It would be out of place for us to try to repeat what was said in those great debates. The subject was necessarily slavery; the central question was the extension of slavery. The Republicans of Illinois were not Abolitionists; they would have scorned any proposition to give the negroes of the South their freedom; but for the peace and safety of the country as a whole, they were resolved to do all that was possible to *confine*<sup>17</sup> slavery within the states where it then existed.

Douglas declared that the Democratic party was composed of men in every part of the Union, and was there-

---

1. 大的; 2. 粗濃的; 3. 容顏; 4. 癍痕; 5. 皺紋; 6. 身材; 7. 灰色的; 8. 發光; 9. 銳利的; 10. 勝人; 11. 朗誦; 12. 簡單, 坦白; 13. 言語不俗; 14. 議論, 辯論; 15. 機巧; 16. 欺詐; 17. 限制。

頭，修刮粗糙的臉，濃重的眉，狀貌不揚，面上已有皺紋。道格拉斯身材短小，髮作灰色；智慧表現於面上，一望而知為一有權力的人；眼睛銳利有光；儀表動人。

在辭令上，林肯以發言清晰，簡潔措辭雅馴見長；他所說的充滿意義，除使他的議論完整以外不作一冗辭。道格拉斯敏捷無畏；他沒有一個不足的辭；他毫不躊躇；他有權術；他的態度取信於聽衆。

在圍聽的鄉民中，林肯是斯潑林斐爾特的“老亞伯”或“誠實的亞伯；”道格拉斯是“伊利諾斯的小偉人，”

敘述大辯論會中所說的話。是在我們範圍之外的。題目一定是蓄奴制；中心問題是蓄奴制的擴展。伊利諾斯的共和黨不是主張廢制舊奴制者；他們不屑為予南部黑奴以自由的提議，但為整個國家的和平與安全起見，他們決意盡力使蓄奴制限於這種制度所存在的各州之中。

道格拉斯提議民主黨包括聯邦中各地方的人，所以是國

fore national; the "Black Republicans," as he nicknamed his opponents, were sectional, and would not be permitted to carry their doctrine into the South. Lincoln answered by saying: "Are we to believe, then, that it is slavery which is national, and freedom which is sectional? Or is it the true test of the *soundness*<sup>1</sup> of a doctrine that in some places people won't let you *proclaim*<sup>2</sup> it?"

Lincoln quoted that passage in the Declaration of Independence which asserts that "all men are created equal." Douglas said that "the signers of the declaration had no reference to the negro, or any other inferior or *degraded*<sup>3</sup> race," and that they meant "only white men of European birth and *descent*<sup>4</sup>." Lincoln answered that the plain intention of the signers was to include all men, whether white or black; "but they did not mean to declare all men equal in all respects—in color, size, intellect, moral development, social *capacity*<sup>5</sup>." They were equal "only in certain *inalienable*<sup>6</sup> rights"—life, liberty, and the *pursuit*<sup>7</sup> of happiness.

Douglas declaimed against the course of the Abolitionists, who, in order to carry out their own aims, were stirring up feelings of hatred toward the South. Lincoln declared that he was concerned only with slavery, and that he had no ill feelings nor *prejudices*<sup>8</sup> toward Southern men and women who were the owners of slaves. "They are just what we should be in their situation. If slavery did not now exist among them, they would not introduce it. If it did now exist among us, we should not instantly give it up."

Douglas *insisted*<sup>9</sup> upon his doctrine of Popular Sovereignty, that the "voters in every territory should have

---

1. 健全; 2. 宣傳; 3. 低級; 4. 出身家系; 5. 地位; 6. 不能讓與他人的; 7. 追求; 8. 偏見; 9. 堅持。

家的；他稱呼他的對手方“黑共和黨人，”是區域的，不能把他們的主義帶進南部。我們相信不相信，那麼，這是蓄奴制，是國家的，自由制是區域的？或者說在有的地方的人民不許公開的主義，是不是就可當爲這種主義健全與否之真實試驗？

林肯指出在獨立宣言中載出“一切人類生來是平等的。”道格拉斯說“宣言的指示者與黑種或其他次等或低級人種無關”他們的解釋是“祇有系出歐洲和產生於歐洲的白種人。”林肯答覆所指示的人類顯然包括一切的人，無論白種或黑種；“但是他們並不解釋宣告人類在各點上都平等——在顏色，樣式，智力，道德，社會地位。”他們是“祇有在一定的天賦權利上相等——生命，自由，和快樂的進求。

道格拉斯演講反對主張廢除蓄奴制者的方法，他們爲達到目的起見，刺激對南部的惡感。林肯提出他單指定蓄奴制，他對南部男女蓄奴的男女沒有什麼惡感和偏見。他們在地位上恰同我們一樣。倘使蓄奴制現在在他們中間並不存在，他們不會引進這個主義。倘使在我們中間存在着，我們不會放棄這種主義。

道格拉斯堅執他的大衆主權的主義，“各地方的選民應該

the right to say whether slavery should exist with them or not." Lincoln retorted by saying that the Dræl Scott decision had declared that slavery was already in the territory, and that it might be carried into any part of the Union without the consent of the voters.

The debates attracted the attention of the whole country. Soon it became plain to everybody that Lincoln was getting the better of Douglas. Long before the last speech was made, Douglas himself felt that he was worsted. He lost his *self-control*<sup>1</sup>; he became *peevish*<sup>2</sup> and *fretful*<sup>3</sup>; his voice failed; he feared that disaster was before him. But Lincoln, conscious of victory, was as calm as ever; his speech was as *temperate*<sup>4</sup>, his manners as gentle, his words as clear as at the beginning.

When the elections were held, the Republicans polled four thousand votes more than the Democrats; but the districts of the state were so divided that the new legislature contained a majority of Democrats. Douglas, although beaten in argument, would be returned to the United States Senate.

Lincoln was disappointed. To be a senator of the United States was an honor which he had long hoped for. To be defeated, after so manful a struggle, was indeed *dishheartening*<sup>5</sup>.

"Well, Lincoln," said one of his friends on the day after the election, "how do you feel to be beaten by the Little Giant?"

"I suppose," answered Lincoln, "that I feel very much like the overgrown boy who stumped his *toe*<sup>6</sup>."

"How was that?"

---

1. 自制力; 2. 煩燥的; 3. 易怒的; 4. 溫和的; 5. 氣餒的; 6. 腳趾。

有權決定蓄奴制應否在他們中間存在。”林肯反駁以吉萊特司各脫的決議宣告蓄奴制早已存在於領域內，它不得選民同意可以推行於聯邦的任何地方。

這個辯論吸引全國的注意。人人都明白林肯出於道格拉斯之上。遠在最後一次演詞發表以前，道格拉斯覺出他被壓倒了。他失掉他的自制力；他急躁了；他的聲音失敗了；他害怕不幸的事情已在他面前了。但是林肯，自知勝利，一直是沉靜的；他的演詞和平，他的態度大方，他的言語還是同開始一樣。

選舉舉行的時候，共和黨得的票超過民主黨四千票；但是州的區域這樣劃分法使新國會包括民主黨佔大多數。道格拉斯，雖然在辯論上失敗了，要回到合衆國參議院。

林肯失望了。做一個合衆國的參議員是他熱望已久的榮譽。被戰敗，在這樣勇敢的鬥爭以後，實在是失望的。

在選舉以後他的一個朋友說，“好，林肯，被小偉人打敗你覺得怎麼樣？”

林肯回答道，我假定我很像一個大孩子踏痛了他的腳趾。”

“那是怎樣？”



“Well, when some one asked him how he felt, he said that he was hurt *too bad to laugh and was too big to cry*¹.”

He had gained much more by the *contest*², however, than any one supposed. Printed accounts of the debates had been given in all the newspapers of the North. They were talked about from Maine to California. The name of Abraham Lincoln, hitherto known only in Illinois, was now famous throughout the entire country. He had made the first direct step toward the presidency. “The campaign of 1860 will be worth a hundred of this,” he said; and no matter what he may have meant by the remark, he was right.

### XXII. *FANATICAL*³ JOHN BROWN

Among the Northern emigrants who went early to Kansas there was a sturdy old antislavery agitator whose name was John Brown. John Brown had hated slavery all his life. He was just the sort of man which the Southern people pictured in their minds when they spoke the word “abolitionist.” He was willing to do anything, suffer anything, if thereby he could *deal a blow*⁴ to slavery. For twenty years his life had been devoted to the one idea of giving freedom to the black men of the South.

With five of his sons, *stalwart*⁵ men, as fearless as himself, he made his home in the neighborhood of Osawatimie, and became at once a leader among the free-state settlers. Soon after the *pillaging*⁶ of the town of Lawrence five proslavery men were *brutally*⁷ murdered by a party of unknown free-state men. It was claimed, whether justly or not, that the Browns were in the party, and two of the sons were *arrested*⁸. The eldest was taken in charge by a company of

1. 哭笑不得; 2. 辯論; 3. 狂熱; 4. 予以打擊; 5. 勇; 6. 劫; 7. 殘忍; 8. 逮捕。

“好，有人問他覺得怎樣，他說他受傷得哭笑不出了。”

他從這次辯論上得到的收獲比任何人想像的還多。演說詞在北部各家新聞紙上登載。從緬因一直到加利福尼的人們都談論着。亞伯拉罕林肯的名字，本來只在伊利諾斯受人稱道的，現在聞名全國了。他已經踏進了總統位置的第一步階梯。他說，“1860年的競選價值百倍；”無論評語什麼意思，他是對的。

## 二二 狂熱的約翰勃朗

在早到堪薩斯的北部移民中間，有一個年老強有力的反蓄奴制者，他的名字叫做約翰勃朗。約翰勃朗終身痛恨蓄奴制。他恰是南部人民，說“主張廢止蓄奴制者”這一個字的時，候在腦海裏面描繪的。他願意做任何工作，忍受任何痛苦，假使他能給奴隸制度以一個打扁的話。他一生的二十年中專心致力於解放南部的黑人。

同了像他自己一樣勇猛的五個精壯的兒子，他住家於奧薩滑託美附近，立即成為自由州移民中的領袖。在搶劫勞倫斯鎮以後，五個贊成蓄奴制者被不知名的自由州人的黨徒所戕。

United States *cavalry*<sup>1</sup> and, with his arms *tied*<sup>2</sup> behind him, was driven on foot at a rapid *rate*<sup>3</sup> across the prairie, while the hot sun beat down upon his uncovered head. Before reaching the end of the journey he was *insane*<sup>4</sup>. Another one of the sons was waylaid and killed, and his bleeding body was thrown into the door of his father's cabin.

Whether these terrible doings *crazed*<sup>5</sup> the mind of old John Brown, no one can tell. But a few years later he undertook an *enterprise*<sup>6</sup> which only a madman or a *fanatic*<sup>7</sup> would have thought of. He had brooded over the subject so long that he was persuaded that Heaven had chosen him as an *instrument*<sup>8</sup> to destroy slavery. To his mind the only way to do this was to wage war upon the slaveholders. He therefore formed a plan to *invade*<sup>9</sup> the South, stir up an *insurrection*<sup>10</sup> among the negroes, lay *waste*<sup>11</sup> the plantations, and in the end make all the slaves free. He was foolish enough to believe that the negroes everywhere would *rally*<sup>12</sup> to his aid.

With eighteen men, six of whom were colored, he crossed the Potomac River at Harpers Ferry, Virginia, and seized upon the United States *arsenal*<sup>13</sup> there. He captured one slaveholder, and took possession of the arms in the arsenal. The citizens rallied to the defense of the town. The invaders were *hemmed*<sup>14</sup> in, several were killed, and the rest were obliged to take *refuge*<sup>15</sup> in a little building called the engine house. The news was telegraphed to all parts of the country. Colonel Robert E. Lee of the United States army was hurriedly sent from Washington with a company of *marines*<sup>16</sup>, and within twenty-four hours

1. 騎兵隊; 2. 繫; 3. 速率; 4. 瘋狂; 5. 使瘋; 6. 冒險心; 7. 幻想者; 8. 工具;  
9. 侵伐; 10. 叛亂; 11. 廢壞; 12. 集; 13. 軍械廠; 14. 包圍; 15. 隱蔽; 16. 海軍。

勃朗被控在這個黨內，兩個兒子被逮。最長的一個被合衆國騎兵隊拘捕，武器繫在他的身後，被驅以極大速度跑步經草原，烈日射到他的不遮蓋的頭。在達到行程終點以前他瘋狂了。另一個兒子被人攔劫鎗殺，他的屍體拋到他父親的小屋裏邊。

這些可怕的事實有沒有昏迷老約翰勃朗的意志，沒有人能說得出。但是幾年以後他從事於一種祇有瘋人能想到的冒險事業。他曾考慮了這個題目長久他認爲上帝挑選了他做破壞蓄奴制的工具。在他的腦筋裏唯一的辦法是對蓄奴者開戰。他製成了攻入南部的計畫，煽動黑人革命，踏平田園，解放全部黑奴。他很愚蠢自信黑人能夠在各處集合起來幫助他。

帶着十八個人，其中六個是有色種，他在味吉尼亞，哈班碼頭越包太麥克河，佔領合衆國的軍械廠。他捉住了一個蓄奴者，得到軍械廠裏的武器。民衆集合起來保衛市鎮。侵入者受包圍，有幾個人被殺，其餘的人被迫退入一所叫做機器房的小建築內。這新聞電報傳達全國。陸軍上校洛勃脫李急促地受委

the disturbance was at an end.

John Brown, severely wounded with *saber*<sup>1</sup> cuts and *bayonet*<sup>2</sup> thrusts, was taken prisoner with five of his men. Four of the band escaped; the rest had been killed in the fight.

The prisoners were hastily brought to trial before a Virginia court. Brown was ably defended by *counsel*<sup>3</sup> from Massachusetts. But the fact that he and his men had made an armed *invasion*<sup>4</sup> of the state, that they had seized upon public property, and that they had caused the death of five Virginians, could not be disputed. They were quickly *convicted*<sup>5</sup> and *sentenced*<sup>6</sup> to death.

Whatever may be thought of John Brown's *sanity*<sup>7</sup> or of the *righteousness*<sup>8</sup> of his cause, his conduct during his last days in prison was truly heroic. Even his bitterest enemies were compelled to admire his courage. "I can leave to God," he said, "the time and manner of my death; for I believe now that the *sealing*<sup>9</sup> of my *testimony*<sup>10</sup> before God and man with my blood will do far more to further the cause to which I have devoted myself, than anything else I have done in my life."

"How do you *justify*<sup>11</sup> your acts?" asked Senator Mason of Virginia.

"I hold," answered the old man, "that the golden rule, 'Do *unto*<sup>12</sup> others as *ye*<sup>13</sup> would that others should do unto you,' applies to all who would help others to gain their liberty. The cry of distress of the oppressed is my reason, and the only thing that *prompted*<sup>14</sup> me to come here. . . . I wish to say, furthermore, that you had better—all you people at the South—prepare yourselves for a settlement

1. 腰刀； 2. 鎗上刺刀； 3. 律師； 4. 侵犯； 5. 定罪； 6. 判決； 7. 心地剛  
 貞； 8. 正直； 9. 蓋印； 10. 口供； 11. 辯護； 12. 抵； 13. 你們； 14. 喚起。

帶了一隊海軍從華盛頓過來，在二十四小時以內戡平亂事。

約翰勃朗身受重傷，瘡痍遍體，與他的部下五人一同被執。隊員中四人逃亡；餘者戰死。

囚犯迅速地帶到味吉尼亞法庭受鞠。勃朗由馬塞諸賽來的律師辯護。但是他同他的部下公然持武器衝入州區，強奪公產，殺傷味吉尼亞五條人命，事實昭彰，無可置辯。他們立即定讞判決死刑。

無論約翰勃朗的動機是否光明和正直，他坐牢獄的最後一天中表現的行爲是英雄氣概的。雖是他的血仇也不得不稱贊他的勇敢。他說，“我可以把我就義的時間和態度放到上帝面前；因爲我深信我在上帝和人類面前畫的口供血印的成功遠勝於我一生所做的任何事業之上。”

味吉尼亞參議員馬生問他道，“你怎麼辯護你的行爲？”

老人答復道，“我抱‘以所喜者施諸人，人亦以所喜者施汝’的金律，引用於一切幫助別人得自由者身上。受壓迫者痛苦的呼聲就是喚起我來的動機單純理由……我願意說，你們

of this question, that must come up for settlement sooner than you are prepared for it."

Governor Wise, who had come up from Richmond with a body of Virginia militia, was much impressed by his bearing. "He is a man," said the governor, "of clear head, of courage and *fortitude*<sup>1</sup>; and he *inspired*<sup>2</sup> me with great trust in his *integrity*<sup>3</sup> as a man of truth."

Wendell Phillips, the great antislavery leader, said of him, "He has abolished slavery."

James Russell Lowell, the poet, wrote of him:—

"Truth forever on the *scaffold*<sup>4</sup>,  
Wrong forever on the throne;  
Yet that scaffold *sways*<sup>5</sup> the future,  
And behind the dim unknown,  
Standeth God within the shadow,  
Keeping watch above His own."

The people of the South were alarmed beyond measure. They did not know—they would not believe—that John Brown was the sole mover of the dreadful business, and that it would end with him. They imagined that there was a general *conspiracy*<sup>6</sup> throughout the North, and that other companies of Abolitionists were preparing to invade the slave states with "*whetted*<sup>7</sup> knives of *butchery*<sup>8</sup>. We can imagine their feelings by supposing our own state to be suddenly invaded by a band of *anarchists*<sup>9</sup> intent upon destroying whatever came in their way, with the possibility that other bands were secretly making ready to join them.

The militia was put under arms. Calls were issued for volunteers to aid in defending the South from Northern

---

1. 剛毅; 2. 感悟; 3. 正直; 4. 斷頭臺; 5. 支配; 6. 黨內; 7. 磨快的; 8. 殘殺; 9. 叛逆者。

——全體南部人——應當為解決這個問題準備，這個問題將來必定在你們準備以前發生的。

州長，懷挨思，帶了一隊味吉尼亞民軍到列休蒙特，對他的行為感受深刻印象。州長說，“他是一個頭腦清楚的勇敢剛毅之士；他的正氣激發我對於他公正人格的絕大信仰。”

偉大的反對蓄奴制領袖溫台而忽烈坡稱道他，“他已經廢止蓄奴制了。”

詩人極姆司羅塞爾洛還爾描寫他：——

“正義永在斷頭台上，  
罪惡永在寶座上；  
但是斷頭台支配未來，  
在不可知的昏暗後面，  
上帝站在黑影中，  
他本人監視着。”

南部的人民大為驚異。他們不知道——他們不相信約翰勃朗是恐怖運動的唯一主動，不知道這種運動將與他的死事一同結束。他們想像全北部有廣大的黨羽，另外有主張廢止蓄奴制者的徒衆懷挾“殘殺的利刃”準備衝進蓄奴諸州。我們可以設想我們本州突然被一羣暴徒衝起來，蓄意破壞所遇到的一切，而另有其他徒衆暗中準備與他們聯合一起的事情想像南部人民的感覺。

民團武裝準備，發出徵集志願兵的命令以保衛南部防止



invasion. *Ex-President*<sup>1</sup> Tyler, from his plantation, wrote: "Virginia is arming to the teeth. More than fifty thousand stand of arms are already *distributed*<sup>2</sup>. But one *sentiment*<sup>3</sup> *pervades*<sup>4</sup> the country: security in the Union, or separation."

Many prominent antislavery men in the North expressed their sympathy with John Brown, and this only increased the *apprehension*<sup>5</sup> of the South. But the *cooler-headed*<sup>6</sup> men of the Republican party refused to *indorse*<sup>7</sup> his course. While they *refrained*<sup>8</sup> from abusing Brown himself, they *condemned*<sup>9</sup> all unlawful attempts to interfere with slavery.

William H. Seward, then the leader of the party, declared that the *raid*<sup>10</sup> on Harpers Ferry "was an act of *treason*<sup>11</sup>, and criminal in just the extent that it affected the public peace and was *destructive*<sup>12</sup> of human happiness and life."

Abraham Lincoln compared it to "the many attempts in history at the *assassination*<sup>13</sup> of kings and emperors," which have ended in little else than in the *execution*<sup>14</sup> of the *assassin*<sup>15</sup>.

On the other hand, Stephen A. Douglas expressed it as his "firm and *deliberate*<sup>16</sup> conviction that the Harpers Ferry crime was the natural, *logical*<sup>17</sup>, *inevitable*<sup>18</sup> result of the doctrines and teachings of the Republican party." And Jefferson Davis declared that this "invasion of a state by a murderous *gang*<sup>19</sup> of Abolitionists" was but the natural *outcome*<sup>20</sup> of a recent speech of William H. Seward in which it was asserted that "an *irrepressible*<sup>21</sup> conflict" already existed between freedom and slavery.

---

1. 前任總統；2. 分配；3. 情緒；4. 普及；5. 驚駭；6. 頭腦冷靜；7. 認可；8. 禁阻；9. 懲責；10. 劫掠；11. 不軌；12. 破壞者；13. 暗殺案；14. 實行；15. 暗殺；16. 熟慮的；17. 合理的；18. 不可避免；19. 一幫；20. 結果；21. 不能禁止。

北部的衝入。前任總統泰樓，在他本地，寫道：“味吉尼亞”已備戰。五萬套以上的武裝已經分配。但是有一種情緒普遍於全國：聯邦的確保，還是分立。”

北部許多聞名的反對蓄奴制者對約翰勃朗表示同情，只有增加南部人的驚駭。但是共和黨中頭腦較冷靜的人拒絕判定他的罪案。他們禁阻虐待勃朗的時候，也認干涉蓄奴制的非法行為為不當。

威廉修懷現在黨的領袖，提出哈班碼頭的暴行是罪惡的行為，判決案是恰當的，因為它擾亂公眾安寧，又是人類生命和快樂的毀滅者。”

亞伯拉罕林肯把它與“歷史上許多帝王的暗殺案”比擬，結果較之暗殺的執行相差無幾。

在另一方面，司蒂芬道格拉斯解釋他的“熟慮的信念認哈班碼頭的罪案，是共和黨主義的天然而合理的不可避免的結果。”而極勿生大衛提出州邑受主張廢止黑奴制者侵入祇是威廉修懷最近演說詞的自然影響，他的演詞中指陳一種“無可避免的爭端”早已存在於自由和蓄奴之間。

約翰勃朗的狂熱行動是否促進蓄奴制的結束，沒有人能

Whether John Brown's *fanatical*<sup>1</sup> act had any influence toward hastening the end of slavery, no man can tell. But it certainly aroused the people of the South as they had not been aroused before; it gave to *designing*<sup>2</sup> politicians the means of inflaming the minds of ignorant men and stirring up an intense hatred of the North; and it was added to the long list of grievances which at last afforded to the Southern states the excuse to *secede*<sup>3</sup> from the Union.

### XXIII. ELOQUENCE AT COOPER UNION<sup>4</sup>

About two months after the end of the *tragedy*<sup>5</sup> at Harpers Ferry, Mr. Lincoln was invited to visit the Eastern states and make a few speeches on the question which was then uppermost in the minds of all thinking men. His first and greatest speech was made in the hall of Cooper Union in New York City.

He was known as "Abraham Lincoln," the man from the uncultured West who had *out-argued*<sup>6</sup> the Little Giant of Illinois. People were *curious*<sup>7</sup> to hear what he would say; they were curious to see what sort of man it was who had come out of the backwoods to tell them what they already knew. Many scholars, politicians, and critics were present at the meeting, scarcely expecting to hear anything but queer stories, coarse jokes, and the rude oratory of a stump speaker. Most of the great audience had come together much as they would have come to see "the wild man of Borneo" and hear him discuss *philosophy*<sup>8</sup>.

At the appointed hour, William Cullen Bryant, the poet, arose from his seat on the platform and introduced the

1. 狂熱; 2. 設計; 3. 脫離; 4. 古班聯會; 5. 悲劇; 6. 辯勝; 7. 奇異; 8. 哲學。

够說。但是它鼓起南部人民從未有的感情；它給予設計謀的政治家刺激無知無識者的方法而煽動他們對北部人的惡感；最後它對南部諸州脫離聯邦增加措詞的長篇敘述。

### 二三 古班聯會的雄辯

在哈班碼頭悲劇結束約兩個月以後，林肯先生被邀訪問東部諸州發表深印有人腦海對這個問題的演詞。1860年二月他的第一次大演說在紐約古班聯會大廳舉行。

人們稱他爲“亞伯林肯，”從文化未開來的一個西部人，曾經以辯論勝過伊利諾斯的小偉人。民衆奇異地聽他說的話；他們奇異地看從森林裏出來告訴他們早已知道的事的這個人是什麼樣的人。許多學者，政治家，評論家到會場上，除了聽木墩上演說家講奇怪的故事，粗率的演詞之外，不很希望聽任何事件。大部份的聽衆都聚集攏來看“包尼奧的野人”聽他討論哲理。

在指定的時間，詩人威廉古倫勃拉森，從他的座位上站起來介紹演詞者。有一個在場的人描寫他的文字如下：

speaker. That which followed is best described in the words of one who was present:—

“He was tall, tall—oh, how tall, and so *angular*<sup>1</sup> and awkward that I had, for an *instant*<sup>2</sup>, a feeling of pity for so ungainly a man. His clothes were black and *ill-fitting*<sup>3</sup>, badly wrinkled—as if they had been *jammed*<sup>4</sup> carelessly into a small trunk. His bushy head, with the stiff black hair thrown back, was balanced on a long and lean head-stalk, and when he raised his hands in an opening *gesture*<sup>5</sup>, I noticed that they were very large.

“He began in a very low tone of voice—as if he were used to speaking outdoors and was afraid of speaking too loud. He said, ‘Mr. Cheerman’ instead of ‘Mr. Chairman,’ and employed many other words with an old-fashioned pronunciation. I said to myself: ‘Old fellow, you won’t do. It’s all very well for the wild West, but this will never go down in New York!’

“But pretty soon he began to get into his subject; he straightened up, and made regular and graceful gestures. His face lighted as with an inward fire; the whole man was *transfigured*<sup>6</sup>. I forgot his clothes his personal appearance, and his *individual*<sup>7</sup> *peculiarities*<sup>8</sup>. Presently, forgetting myself, I was on my feet with the rest, yelling like a wild Indian, cheering this wonderful man. In the close parts of his argument, you could hear the gentle *sizzing*<sup>9</sup> of the *gas burners*<sup>10</sup>. When he reached a *climax*<sup>11</sup>, the thunders of applause were terrific.

“It was a great speech. When I came out of the hall, my face glowing with excitement and my frame all

---

1. 稜角的； 2. 霎那； 3. 不合式； 4. 塞入； 5. 姿勢； 6. 變形； 7. 個性的； 8. 特質； 9. 滋滋聲； 10. 汽燈； 11. 頂點。

“他是高高的——呵，怎麼樣高，這樣稜峻而怪相我一時感覺不快這樣難看的人。他的衣服作黑色，不合式而摺皺——好像不經心地塞在小箱子裏面的。他的濃密的頭，掛在後面的堅硬的黑髮，平衡在長而瘦的頭頸上面，當他舉手作勢的時候，我看見是很大的。

“他以低的聲調開始——好像他常在戶外怕高聲的說話。他說，‘主席先生 Mr. Cheorman, 代替 Mr. Chairman, 又用了許多舊式的發音。我向我自己說：‘老頭，你不要這樣。住在粗野的西方是很適合的，但是不該上紐約呵！

“但是他立即開始說到主題；他直立起來，作有秩序而莊嚴的姿勢。他的臉好像爲內部火焰發光；整個的人變形了。我忘記了他的服裝，他的外貌，他的個性特質。現在，忘記了我自己，我同餘人站立着，像一個粗野的印第安人，向這個異人歡呼。在他的辯論的後部，你能聽見和緩的汽燈的嚶嚶聲。他講到頂點的時候，是驚人的喝采雷聲。

這是盛大的演詞。我走出大廳的時候，我的臉爲激昂情緒燃灼，身軀在戰慄，一個朋友，眼睛紅紅地，問我對伐木者亞伯林肯的感想。我說，‘他是聖保羅以後最偉大的人物。’我還是這樣想。”

*a-quiver*<sup>1</sup>, a friend, with his eyes *aglow*<sup>2</sup>, asked me what I thought of Abē Lincoln, the rail splitter. I said, 'He's the greatest man since St. Paul!' And I think so yet."

It was, indeed, one of the greatest speeches ever heard in any part of our country. Everybody that listened to it was astonished. Everybody was pleased. No college graduate of the cultured East, no orator trained in the halls of Congress, could have delivered a speech so scholarly, so calm, so *dignified*<sup>3</sup>, so convincing. It was brief, but it seemed to leave nothing more to be said. It reviewed the whole subject of slavery in the territories. Its arguments against the extension of slavery were so *conclusive*<sup>4</sup> that no man has ever been able to reply to them. "Let us have faith," said Mr. Lincoln at the end, — "let us have faith that right makes might; and in that faith, let us to the end dare to do our duty as we understand it."

The speech was published the next day in all the New York papers. Mr. Lincoln had won the *esteem*<sup>5</sup> of the most thoughtful men in the East. They said to him at parting, "Be true to your principles, and we will be true to you, and God will be true to us all."

And he answered: "I say *Amen*<sup>6</sup> to that! Amen to that!"

---

1. 在戰慄； 2. 發紅； 3. 尊嚴； 4. 肯定； 5. 尊敬； 6. 阿們，意即心願如是。

這是在我們國家任何部分所聽到過的最偉大的演說詞之一。聽衆都受驚動了。人們都喜悅了。沒有一個文化發達的東部大學生，沒有一個在議會裏有經驗的演說家，能夠發出這樣學識充足，這樣安詳，這樣尊嚴，這樣使人相信的演說詞。演詞簡短，却無須增添一字。將國內蓄奴制爲題目加以重述。反對擴展蓄奴制辯論肯定異常，無人能置一詞。林肯先生結論裏說，“我們篤信正義造成力量；我們誓必在覺悟以後勇往直前始終盡瘁於我們的責任。”

演說詞第二天在全紐約報紙上公佈。林肯先生取得東部許多有思想人的尊敬。在分離的時候他們對他說，“忠誠於你的主義，我們將表忠誠於你，上帝也將表忠誠於我們全體。”

他回答道：“中心祈求之！阿們！”



## BOOK THE THIRD—PERFORMANCE

I. "ABRAHAM LINCOLN, THE  
RAIL CANDIDATE<sup>1</sup>"

ON the 10th of May the Republicans of Illinois were holding a state convention at Decatur. The great hall, prepared for the occasion, was filled with *delegates*<sup>2</sup> and enthusiastic party men from every county in the state. The governor of Illinois was the *chairman of the convention*<sup>3</sup>.

1860

"Gentlemen," said he, "there is with us at this meeting a distinguished citizen whom the people of our state delight to honor. I take pleasure in suggesting that he be invited to a place on the platform."

At once, *amid a tumult of applause*<sup>4</sup>, a tall man, dressed in an ill-fitting suit of black, was lifted over the heads of the crowd and passed along on the *upraised*<sup>5</sup> hands of the delegates to the *speakers' stand*<sup>6</sup>. It was Abraham Lincoln. As he *regained his feet*<sup>7</sup> and stood up before the convention, every man present arose and shouted, and shouted, and shouted, until it seemed that the storm of applause would never end. At length, when there was a slight *lull*<sup>8</sup> in the tumult, the governor spoke again:—

"Gentlemen, I am informed that there is an old Demo-

1. 欄柵候選人(因林肯幼時曾做過劈木爲柵的工作,而爲他起的渾號); 2. 代表; 3. 大會主席; 4. 在喝彩的喧嘩聲中; 5. 高舉; 6. 講台; 7. 停步, Regain 爲復原之意; 8. 漸靜。

### 第三卷——成功時期

#### 一 亞伯拉罕林肯欄柵候選人

五月十日，伊利諾斯共和黨員在台迦秦舉行全州大會。會場上坐滿了各縣邑的代表和熱心黨員。伊利諾斯州長充大會主席。

他說，“諸位，這個會議裏面同我們在一起的有一位受州民愛戴的卓越的公民，我建議邀請他登台。”

不一會，在歡呼聲中，一個高身子，穿着不合式的黑衣，在羣衆的頭顱上面升起，穿越各代表高舉的手臂走上講台。這是亞伯拉罕林肯。他停步站在議場前面時，各人都起立歡呼，歡呼，再歡呼，喝采的潮聲好像永不停歇。最後，呼聲小止，州長重新說：——

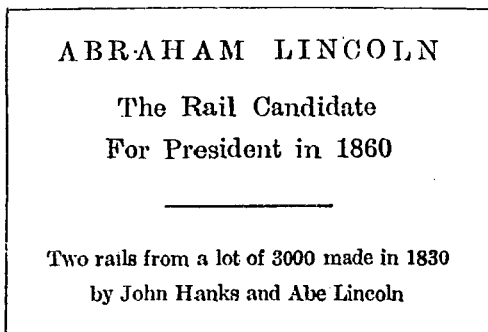
“諸位，有人告訴我有一位老民主黨員在場外等著，他願意到會。”

衆代表喊道，“讓他進來！讓他進來！”靠近講台的那扇

erat waiting outside of the hall, who has something that he wishes to present to this convention."

"Let him come in! Let him come in!" shouted the delegates.

A side door near the platform was opened, and an old Illinois farmer, wrinkled and *sunbrowned*<sup>1</sup> and *gray-bearded*<sup>2</sup>, came in. It was John Hanks—the same John Hanks who, thirty years before, had persuaded Thomas Lincoln to emigrate to Illinois. On his shoulder he carried two *weatherworn*<sup>3</sup> fence rails, above which was a small banner bearing these words:—



The scene that followed cannot be described. The convention was wild with enthusiasm. For many minutes the delegates continued shouting, stamping their feet, and waving their hats, utterly forgetful of order. At length they became quiet from very *exhaustion*<sup>4</sup>, and Mr. Lincoln in his half-timid manner began to speak:—

"I suppose I am expected to reply to that," he said.

1. 太陽曬成褐色的; 2. 灰色鬚的; 3. 風雨剝蝕的; 4. 疲乏。

邊門一開，一個伊利諾斯老農夫，臉呈皺紋，肌膚黧褐，鬚髯作灰色的走進來了。這是約翰亨克斯——就是三十年前勸湯姆斯林肯遷到伊利諾斯的這個約翰亨克斯。在他的肩頭扛着一雙風雨剝蝕的欄柵，上邊一面小旗寫着這幾個字：——

亞 伯 拉 罕 林 肯

1860年總統的欄柵候選人

1830年約翰亨克斯和亞伯林肯做的  
三千根木杆中造成的一雙欄柵。

隨後的景象沒法描寫出來，羣衆熱烈若狂。衆代表繼續歡呼，頓足，揮帽，秩序亂了好幾分鐘。衆人在力竭聲嘶後方趨靜止，林肯先生在半怯弱的狀態下開始說：——

他說，“我假定我希望這樣答復，我不能說我會否做過這杆子，但是我做過許多同樣的。”

於是在談到政治以前，他說了他在伊利諾斯第一年的簡單傳略，他幫助他的父親建築他的小屋和種植第一次的穀物收割。

"I cannot say whether I made those rails or not, but I am quite sure I have made a great many just as good."

And then, before saying anything about politics, he gave a little account of the first year that he had spent in Illinois, and of his helping his father build his cabin and plant his first crop of corn.

The men of the convention knew that he could do other things besides split rails. They resolved that Abraham Lincoln was the man whom the Republicans of Illinois would support for the presidency of the United States.

## II. BALLOTING AT CHICAGO

A week later, the national convention of the Republican party met at Chicago. A great building, called the "Wigwam," had been put up expressly for the meeting. Twenty-five thousand strangers were in the city, which then contained only one hundred thousand inhabitants. Delegates were there from every free state and from the slave states of Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, Kentucky, and Missouri.

The principles which the party was pledged to support were briefly *stated*<sup>1</sup>:—

"The natural condition of the territories is freedom.

"No *lawmaking power*<sup>2</sup> in the country can *create*<sup>3</sup> slavery where it does not now exist.

"Kansas ought to be immediately admitted as a free state.

"The opening of the slave trade would be a crime against *humanity*<sup>4</sup>."

---

1. 陳述； 2. 立法權； 3. 創造； 4. 人類。

會場上衆人知道林肯除了伐木之外還會做別的事情。他們決定亞伯拉罕林肯是伊利諾斯共和黨員應當擁護的合衆國總統候選人。

## 二 在芝加哥的投票

一星期以後，共和黨在芝加哥召開全國大會。一所叫做威格橫的大建築公佈充作會場，在有十萬住民的城內到了二萬五千個來賓。各代表都是從各自由州和味吉尼亞，聖塔啓，密蘇里，馬里蘭，特拉華各蓄奴州來的。

黨內所揭櫫的主義簡述如下：——

“領域的自然情形是自由。

“國家的立法權不得創造蓄奴制 於此種制度目前並不存在的地域。

“堪薩斯應立即開放爲自由州。

“奴隸販賣的開放應認爲人類的犯罪行爲。”

大會的主要工作是推舉合衆國的總統候選人。有好幾個黨內中堅份子熱望當選，他們都有許多有力份子擁護着。

The chief work to be done by the convention was to name a candidate for the presidency of the United States. There were many able men in the party who were anxious to be chosen and who had powerful friends to urge their nomination.

Foremost among these was William H. Seward of New York. He was the acknowledged leader of the Republican party. He had been the governor of the greatest state in the Union. He had been in the United States Senate for nearly twelve years. By *nature*<sup>1</sup> and *training*<sup>2</sup> he was a leader of men. He represented the wealth and culture of the Eastern states.

Edward Bates of Missouri, an *accomplished*<sup>3</sup> lawyer and friend of free labor, was favored by several men of influence in the East. He would attract votes from the South. If the Republican party should nominate him, a Southern man, it could no longer be *accused*<sup>4</sup> of being *purely*<sup>5</sup> sectional.

A part of the Pennsylvania delegation named Simon Cameron. He was a *shrewd*<sup>6</sup> politician and bold *partisan*<sup>7</sup>, but wrongfully suspected at that time of having too much sympathy with the South.

The Ohio delegation named Salmon P. Chase, a life-long enemy of slavery, and formerly a leader of the Liberty party. He was *descended*<sup>8</sup> from a long line of worthy *ancestor*<sup>9</sup>, and represented the higher culture and intelligence of the West. He had been a senator of the United States, and had been twice elected to the governorship of Ohio.

---

1. 天才; 2. 經驗; 3. 成功的; 4. 譴責; 5. 純粹的; 6. 伶俐的; 7. 黨員; 8. 傳世; 9. 祖先。

這些人中最占先的是紐約的威廉修華。他是共和黨的公認的領袖，他曾任聯邦中最大的一個州內的州長。他曾任參議員近十二年。在天才和經驗方面他是人類領袖。他代表東部各州的資產階級。

密蘇里的愛德華培資，一個成功的律師，和自由職業者的朋友，東部幾個有勢力份子幫助他，他可以吸引南部的選票。因為他是一個南部人，倘使共和黨選舉了他，就不會再受純粹區域性之譏了。

本薛佛尼亞代表的一部份推舉西門加美龍。他是一個銳利的政治家和勇敢的黨員，但是他在那時候被誤會為對南部人過份表同情了。

俄亥俄的代表推舉薩而蒙契斯，蓄奴制的長期敵人，從前是自由黨的領袖。他世代書香，代表西部的前進智識份子，他曾任合衆國參議員，二次被舉為俄亥俄州長。



The Illinois delegation named Abraham Lincoln.

Throughout the country it was generally supposed that Seward would be the choice of the convention. His friends made use of every means to secure his nomination. They paraded the streets with banners and brass bands, *yelling*<sup>1</sup>, "*Hurrah*<sup>2</sup> for Seward!" They hired men to stand in different parts of the Wigwam and yell every time Seward's name was mentioned. At the hotels, on the street corners, everywhere, they seemed to be the majority.

On the third day the balloting began. The excitement was intense. As each candidate was named, his friends filled the hall with *deafening*<sup>3</sup> applause. When the name of Abraham Lincoln was spoken, an Illinois man standing on the platform began to wave a white *handkerchief*<sup>4</sup>. Instantly, at each end of the Wigwam, there began a roar of shouts such as had never before been heard in Chicago. Thousands of men joined in the shouting; thousands of women waved their handkerchiefs and *clapped*<sup>5</sup> their hands; it was plain that the friends of the "rail splitter" could cheer as *lustily*<sup>6</sup> as the *hire*<sup>7</sup> *shouters*<sup>7</sup> for Seward.

The first ballot showed that the fight was to be between Seward and Lincoln and no others. Seward received 173½ votes, Lincoln 102; the remaining 189½ votes were scattered among several persons. As there were 465 delegates, it was necessary that the successful candidate should receive at least 233 votes, or more than half of the entire number.

A second ballot was taken. This time Seward gained

---

1. 大呼; 2. 喝彩; 3. 使聾的; 4. 手帕; 5. 鼓掌; 6. 有力; 7. 雇來歡呼者。

伊利諾斯代表推舉亞伯拉罕林肯。

全國視線一致承認修華將爲大會的當選人。他的朋友用了各種方法保證他的選舉，他們用旂幟樂隊在市街上集合，歡呼“修華萬歲！”他們雇了人站在威格橫各處，每一次歡呼時唱着修華的名字。在旅館裏面，街道旁邊，和每個角落裏他們都似乎佔大多數。

第三天投票開始，刺激情形異常緊張。每一個候選人唱出來的時候，他的朋友們震聳的喝采聲四起。亞伯拉罕林肯的名字說出的時候，站在講台上的一個伊利諾斯人開始揮動白巾。緊接着，在威格橫的各端，發出巨大的喊聲，在芝加哥從來沒有聽見過的。千萬男人聯合歡呼；千萬婦人揮白巾拍手；這是很明白的“伐木者”的朋友們能夠呼喊得像雇來替修華呼喊的人一樣有力。

第一次開票鬥爭是在修華和林肯中間，此外沒有別人。修華得 173 票，林肯 102 票；餘存的票分散在另外幾人中間，因爲有 465 個代表，當選的候選人必須得 233 票以上，或是說全數的半數以上。

eleven votes; but Lincoln gained seventy-nine. The white handkerchief was again waved from the platform, and again the vast hall was filled with the thunders of applause. There was a general movement among the delegates. The friends of Seward were beginning to lose heart.

A third ballot, and Lincoln had 231½ votes. The leader of the Ohio delegation sprang to his feet. "Ohio," cried he, "changes four votes from Chase to Lincoln." That settled the matter. Immediately there were other changes; and when the vote was announced, Lincoln had 254 votes.

If the enthusiasm had been great before, it was now *overwhelming*<sup>1</sup>. "Such a scene as was presented," says one who was there, "had never before been *witnessed*<sup>2</sup> at a convention. A herd of *buffaloes*<sup>3</sup> or lions could not have made a more *tremendous*<sup>4</sup> roaring." Cries of "Hurrah for Old Abe!" "Hurrah for the rail splitter!" "Hurrah for Lincoln!" were drowned in the general uproar; and the shouts of tens of thousands attested the general satisfaction that a man so worthy and so strong had been chosen to be the party's candidate for President.

\* \* \*

In the *untidy*<sup>5</sup> office of the Springfield Journal, where the air was *odorous*<sup>6</sup> with printer's ink, sat Abraham Lincoln. He tilted his chair back against the wall; he was *ill at ease*<sup>7</sup>, anxious, and silent. Two or three friendly lawyers were present, *speculating*<sup>8</sup> on what was

1. 壓倒; 2. 目擊, 親眼看見; 3. 水牛; 4. 驚人的; 5. 不整潔的; 6. 有臭味的; 7. 不安靜; 8. 猜測。

第二次投票舉行，這一次修華得十一票；但林肯得七十九票。白巾重復自演台揮動，會場中喝采聲又如雷四起，代表中有一種普遍的變動，修華方面的人開始失望了。

第三次投票，林肯得 231½ 票。俄亥俄代表的領袖躍起來。他喊道，“俄亥俄改四張契斯的票爲林肯。”那就解決了事件。緊隨着有別的改動；開票結果，林肯得 254 票。

假使以前的熱度是高的，現在的熱度越發高了。有一個在場的人說，“呈現的這種景色從來沒有在大會上目擊過。一羣水牛和獅子發不出比這樣驚人的嘯號。”“老亞伯萬歲！”的呼聲，“伐木者萬歲！”“林肯萬歲！”掩蔽在普遍的狂呼中；萬衆的呼聲表示出一個這麼有價值這麼有力量的人當選爲黨的總統候選人證明大衆的滿意了。

在斯潑林斐爾特日報不整潔的辦公室中，空氣熏蒸着印刷墨油的氣味，坐着亞伯拉罕林肯。他把他的椅背靠着牆壁；他心神不安，熱望，靜默。二三個律師朋友在那裏，猜測芝加哥正在進行着的事情。日報編輯靠到他的書桌旁；幾個閒着無事的人在門旁遊蕩。

going on at Chicago. The editor of the Journal was leaning over his desk; a few *loafers*<sup>1</sup> were *lounging*<sup>2</sup> about the door.

The *messenger*<sup>3</sup> from the telegraph office ran in with an open message in his hand. Lincoln read it silently, and then handed it to his friend, the editor. There was a moment of hearty *congratulation*<sup>4</sup>. The news spread. A crowd was gathering. Shouts were heard in the street, "Hurrah for Honest Abel!"

"There is a little woman down the street," said Lincoln, "who will be pleased to know about this. I think I will go and tell her."

### III. REVOLT<sup>5</sup> AT CHARLESTON

Let us go back three weeks in our story.

On the 23d of April the Democratic party held its national convention in Charleston, South Carolina.

1860 Delegates were there from every state in the Union. Most of those from the North now saw slavery for the first time. They visited the slave markets; they saw human beings bought and sold; they saw how great wealth had been *accumulated*<sup>6</sup> through the sweat and toil of unpaid laborers; they formed their own opinions of Southern prosperity, and determined to vote accordingly.

The convention met in a small hall; not many strangers came from other parts of the country to hurrah for their favorite candidate; there was no *boisterous cheering*<sup>7</sup>, for every one present felt that a crisis was at

1. 遊閒者; 2. 遊蕩; 3. 信差; 4. 慶賀; 5. 叛亂; 6. 積攢; 7. 喧鬧歡呼。

報館信差從電報局裏跑進來手中帶着一紙電文。林肯默念着，交給他的朋友，日報編輯。共作一霎時衷心的祝賀。新聞傳播開去。一羣人聚集着，在市街上聽見歡呼聲，“誠實的亞伯萬歲！”

林肯說，有一個小婦人行到市街，他知道了這個事情會喜歡。我想我要去告訴她。

### 三 卻爾斯登的叛變

讓我們回頭到三個星期以前的事實。

四月廿三日民主黨在南卡羅來納卻爾斯登地方召集全國大會。各代表從聯邦各州來到那裏。大多數從北部來的人現在第一次看到蓄奴制。他們訪問奴隸市場；他們看見人類買賣。他們看見多數的財富怎麼樣由不償付的工人的血汗勞力積攢起來；他們明白了南部繁榮的意見，決意依照這意見投票。

大會在一個小議廳召集；沒有許多來賓從國家的各部分來替他們的相好的候選人助聲威；沒有喧鬧的歡呼，因為各個在場的人都知事變快來了。

hand.

Five days were spent in framing a declaration of principles. On the fifth day, Senator Yancey of Alabama, the most eloquent orator of the South, delivered a powerful speech in defense of the claims of his own people. It was addressed mainly to the delegates from the North. "You acknowledged," he said, "that slavery does not exist by the law of nature or by the law of God—that it only exists by state law; that it is wrong, but that you are not to *blame*<sup>1</sup>. If you had taken the position directly that slavery was right, and therefore ought to be, you would have triumphed, and antislavery would now have been dead in your midst. . . . When I was a schoolboy in the North, Abolitionists were *pelted*<sup>2</sup> with *rotten*<sup>3</sup> eggs. But now this band of Abolitionists has spread into three bands—the Black Republicans, the Free-soilers, and the squatter-sovereignty men—all representing the common sentiment that slavery is wrong."

Immediately Senator Pugh of Ohio, the *staunch friend*<sup>4</sup> of Stephen A. Douglas, sprang to his feet. He thanked God that a true son of the South had spoken out boldly and told the whole truth regarding the wishes of Southern Democrats. "You demand," said he, "that we of the North shall say that slavery is right and ought to be extended. Gentlemen of the South, you mistake us—you mistake us: we will not do it."

On the eighth day a *platform of principles*<sup>5</sup> which had been suggested and *sanctioned*<sup>6</sup> by Stephen A. Douglas was proposed. The delegates from the Northern states

---

1. 譏責; 2. 投擲; 3. 臭爛的; 4. 忠信之友; 5. 政綱; 6. 批准。

費了五天制成主義的宣布。在第五天上，亞拉巴麻州的參議員楊先，南部口才最好的演說家，發來了一篇有力量的演說詞辯護他自己民衆的聲訴。這是對北部諸代表發的。他說，“你承認蓄奴制在天賦的法律中並不存在——祇存在於州法中；那是不正當的，但是你們並不受責備的。倘使你們直接取得蓄奴制正當的地位，而應當如此的，你們要得勝了，而反蓄奴制將要在你們中間滅亡了。我在北部做學童的時候，主張廢止蓄奴者受臭蛋的拋擲。但是現在主張廢止蓄奴制者的同盟開展成三個同盟——黑共和黨員，自由國家黨員，為欲佔得土地權而居於公地的人——都代表認蓄奴制為不正當的普遍情緒。”

俄亥俄的浦參議員，司蒂芬道格拉斯的忠實朋友，立刻躍起。他感謝上帝因為南部真實子弟勇敢地說出南部民主黨員的全部正確的意志。他說，“你要求我們北部人要說出蓄奴制是正當而應當擴展的。南部諸君，你弄錯我們了，——你弄錯我們了：我們不會這樣做的。”

在第八天，經過司蒂芬道格拉斯評定的政綱提出了。北部



voted for it; those from the Southern states voted against it. It was adopted.

The leader of the delegation from Alabama protested that the platform did not express the wishes of the South; and every delegate from his state arose and left the hall. They were followed by the delegations from Mississippi, Louisiana, South Carolina, Florida, Texas, and Arkansas, all protesting that the rights of the South had been invaded, *trampled*<sup>1</sup> upon.

It was a *solemn*<sup>2</sup> moment. The great Democratic party that, with the exception of a few brief years, had controlled our government for half a century, was *rent in twain*<sup>3</sup>. The Northern delegates were alarmed. Some even shed tears. "Is this the first act in the breaking up of the Union of states?" they asked of one another.

The best men of the South were stricken with dismay. "The seceders from the convention," said Alexander H. Stephens of Georgia, "intended from the beginning to rule or ruin; and when they find they cannot rule, they will ruin. . . . In less than twelve months we shall be in a war, and that the bloodiest in history. Men seem to be utterly blinded to the future."

The delegates who remained in the convention tried next to select a candidate for the presidency. They balloted for three days without reaching an agreement. Then they *adjourned*<sup>4</sup> to meet again in June, in the city of Baltimore.

\* \* \*

But in Baltimore the *wrangling*<sup>5</sup> was renewed. Some of the delegates who had seceded at Charleston were in the

---

1. 蔑視; 2. 嚴重的; 3. 分裂爲二; 4. 閉會; 5. 辯論。

諸州代表投贊成票；南部的諸代表投反對票。議案通過了，亞拉巴麻代表領袖抗議，說這條政綱不能代表南部意見；他的州內的代表起身離會場。密士失必，路易斯安那，南卡羅來納，佛羅里達，得撒斯，阿肯色，都說南部的主權被侵佔，被蔑視，提出抗議。

這是嚴重的一霎。偉大的民主黨，除了簡短的幾年以外，管理了我們政府將近半世紀，分裂爲二。北部代表震驚了，有的還流着淚。這是不是各州聯邦的破裂？他們彼此問着。

南部最良善的份子黯然無色。喬其亞的阿來克生段司蒂芬說，“退會表示國家安危動盪的開始；一旦安寧不能維持，紛擾就接着來了。不出十二個月我們將在戰鬥中，歷史上流血最慘的事。人們對未來瞎撞。”

留存在會議中的代表照舊舉行選舉總統候選人。他們投票三天未得結果。於是他們閉會在六月重行集會，在巴脫母城。

但是在巴脫母辯論重演了。有幾個在却爾斯登退會的代

city, but they *took no part*<sup>1</sup> in the convention. The delegates from Virginia and from most of the other slave states withdrew. Those who remained then proceeded to select a candidate for the presidency. On the second ballot they chose Stephen A. Douglas of Illinois.

The Southern delegates met in another hall. Everything had been arranged *beforehand*<sup>2</sup>. They adopted a platform in accordance with the wishes of the slaveholding politicians of their states. They nominated John C. Breckenridge of Kentucky as their candidate for the presidency.

In the meanwhile, the *remnants*<sup>3</sup> of the old Whig party, with some others who thought that the best way to deal with slavery was to say nothing about it, met also in convention at Baltimore. Some of these men were from the North, some were from the South, and every one was a patriot. Their platform was, "The Constitution of the country, the Union of the states, and the enforcement of the laws." They called themselves the Union party, and nominated John Bell of Tennessee for President.

There were, therefore, in the field four parties and four candidates for the presidency. And the great question that divided the people was the question of slavery. "If the Republicans elect their candidate," said the slaveholding politicians, "all hopes of the South regaining her power will be gone, and the Southern states must *secede*<sup>4</sup> from the Union."

"What is to become of us then," said Alexander H. Stephens, "God only knows."

---

1. 不出席； 2. 預備； 3. 殘餘物； 4. 脫離。

表在城中，但是他們不到會場。味吉尼亞和別的蓄奴州代表都退出，留下的人繼續總統選舉。第二次投票，他們選舉伊利諾斯的司蒂芬道格拉斯。

南部代表在另一個會場集會，一切都已預先預備好了。他們通過按照南部蓄奴制政治家的意見的政綱。他們推舉聖塔啓的勃萊壘立奇做總統候選人。

在當時，舊的自由黨贖餘黨員，同還有幾個認為對待蓄奴制最適宜的態度應保守靜默的一些人，也在巴脫母集會。這些人有的從北部來的，有的從南部來的，各人都是愛國份子。他們的政綱是，“國家的憲法，各州的蘇合，法律的執行。”他們稱為聯合黨，推舉田納西的約翰培爾做總統。

於是，一共有四個黨和四個總統候選人，而人民分組投票表決的大問題是蓄奴制問題。蓄奴制政治家說，倘使共和黨選舉他們的候選人，南部恢復得政權的希望就要消滅了，而南部諸州必須脫離聯邦。

亞歷山大司蒂芬說，“我們將成爲什麼，祇有上帝知道。”

## IV. A GLOOMY PROSPECT

Election day came and passed off quietly. The result was as everybody had foreseen. Abraham Lincoln was chosen to be the next President of the United States. The Republicans had carried every Northern state except New Jersey.

“This is a great victory,” wrote the poet Longfellow. “It is the *redemption*<sup>1</sup> of the country. Freedom is triumphant.”

In South Carolina, a full month before the election, the governor and political leaders had put everything in readiness for secession. “Southern rights at all *hazards*!”<sup>2</sup> was the cry. The state was *afame*<sup>3</sup> with the idea of independence from the Union.

When the news came that Lincoln was elected, there was much rejoicing. “It is better thus,” said the politicians. “Our people will never consent to be ruled by a Black Republican.” And throughout the South the word was passed among the common people that the newly elected President, “Old Abe,” was not only a Black Republican, but that he had black blood in his *veins*<sup>4</sup>. It was even *asserted*<sup>5</sup> and believed that he was not a *human being*<sup>6</sup>, but a sort of trained *gorilla*<sup>7</sup> which the Abolitionists had put forward in order to *humiliate*<sup>8</sup> the South and carry out their own *selfish designs*<sup>9</sup>. This *monster*<sup>10</sup>, it was said, whom the Black Republicans had raised to the presidency, was *pledged*<sup>11</sup> not only to give freedom to the slaves but to give to every “*nigger*”<sup>12</sup> equal rights with white men.

1. 補救; 2. 危險; 3. 冒煙, 燃; 4. 血管; 5. 固執, 主張, 斷言; 6. 人類; 7. 猩猩; 8. 抑制; 9. 私圖; 10. 怪物; 11. 擔保; 12. 黑人。

## 匹 昏暗的前途

選舉的日子安靜地來到和過去。結果恰如各人所預料的。亞伯拉罕林肯當選為合衆國大總統。共和黨提攜北部各州，除了紐折爾西。

詩人郎輝勞寫道，“這是一個偉大的勝利。這是國家的補救，自由勝利了。

在南卡羅來納，選舉以前一整月，州長和政治領袖們已經爲一切獨立準備。以“南部的權利陷於顛危”爲口號。全州燃着脫離聯邦獨立的思想火焰。

林肯當選的新聞來到以後，他們沾沾自喜。政治家說，這是更好了。我們的民衆們不會同意受一個黑共和黨統治的。”全南部民衆們的一般評論，稱新總統“老亞伯不獨爲一個黑共和黨，但他有黑的血在血管中。甚至有人固執着相信他不是一個人類，而是主張廢止黑奴者訓練好來屈辱南部人以實行他們本身計劃的一隻猩猩。這個怪物，爲黑共和黨升上總統立，不獨將予奴隸以自由，還要予黑人以與白人同等的權利。

“Will you *submit*<sup>1</sup> to be ruled by such a creature?” they were asked.

“Never! Never!” was the reply.

At Charleston, six weeks after the election, a state convention was called. Men and women were wild with enthusiasm. The leaders in the convention marched in a body to St. Michael's *churchyard*<sup>2</sup>, and standing around the grave of John C. Calhoun, took a solemn *oath*<sup>3</sup> to give their *fortunes*<sup>4</sup> and their lives, if need be, in defense of the doctrine of States' Rights. A resolution was passed, declaring that South Carolina dissolved all connection with the United States, and that she was, and by right ought to be, a free and independent state. Cannon boomed, men shouted, women waved their handkerchiefs, and the *palmetto*<sup>5</sup> flag of South Carolina was *unfurled*<sup>6</sup> to the breeze.

From the White House at Washington James Buchanan watched the course of events. He had yet nearly three months to serve as President of the United States. He saw the country divided, our flag dishonored, the Union *crumbling*<sup>7</sup> to pieces. “I have no power to *interfere*<sup>8</sup>,” he said. And it was, perhaps, with a feeling of secret satisfaction that he believed himself to be the last President of the republic of which Washington had been the first. An army of South Carolinians was threatening the *forts*<sup>9</sup> of the United States in Charleston harbor. “I have no power to interfere,” he said. How different from Andrew Jackson and his stern declaration, “The Union must be preserved!”

The *advisers*<sup>10</sup> of the President were either Southern men or Northern men with Southern sympathies. The Secretary

---

1. 順服; 2. 教堂墳場; 3. 宣誓; 4. 財產; 5. 椰樹; 6. 懸旗; 7. 崩  
碎; 8. 干涉; 9. 砲台; 10. 顧問。

他們互問道，“你們贊成爲這樣的一個動物統治嗎？”

答覆是“決不！決不！”

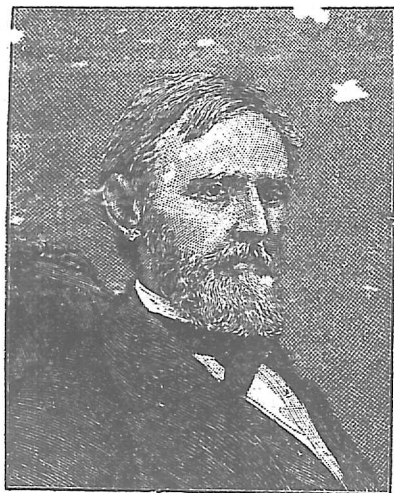
選舉以後六個星期，全州大會召集了，男女熱烈若狂。大會領袖導羣衆到聖密歇而教堂廣場，圍着約翰蓋而杭的墳墓宣誓必要時願以他們的生命財產保衛本州權利。通過議決案，宣布南卡羅來納脫離合衆國一切聯絡，爲一個自由而獨立的州。砲聲震響，男子們歡呼，女子們揮動白巾，南卡羅來納的椰樹旂隨風飄揚。

極姆司布却能在華盛頓白宮裏面守着事實的序幕。他還有近三個月的合衆國總統任期。他看着國家分立，國旗蒙羞，聯邦破裂。他說，“我無權干涉。”而且他心中信以爲自己是共和國末任總統，華盛頓是首任總統，竊以自滿。一隊南卡羅來納人的軍隊在卻爾斯登港攻擊合衆國砲台。他說，“我無權干涉，與盎掘羅傑克遜和他莊嚴的宣言“聯邦必須保持！”相較，差別多少呵？

總統的顧問是南部人和與南部表同情的北部人。財政部



of the Treasury, who was a Georgian, *contrived*<sup>1</sup> by a series of *financial blunders*<sup>2</sup> to destroy the *credit*<sup>3</sup> of the United States, thus leaving the treasury empty. The Secretary of War, who was a Virginian, took measures to *disarm*<sup>4</sup> the free states by removing the guns and other weapons from the national arsenals and sending them to the South. The Secretary of the Navy, who was from Connecticut,



Jefferson Davis

scattered our ships of war in distant seas, so that his successor would be long in calling them to the aid of the government.

In one of the rooms in the capitol at Washington, six United States senators arranged a plan for seizing all the forts and government property in the *Gulf states*<sup>5</sup>, and prepared an address to the people of those states, urging them to follow

South Carolina and secede from the Union. And James Buchanan, sitting with *folded hands*<sup>6</sup> in the White House, said, "I have no power to interfere!"

Soon Florida seceded, and then Alabama, Mississippi, Georgia, Louisiana, and Texas. Delegates from these states met at Montgomery, in Alabama, and formed a new government which they called the Confederate States

1. 設謀; 2. 一串財政上差誤; 3. 信用; 4. 解除武裝; 5. 沿海諸州; 6. 拱手。

長是一個喬治亞人，設謀層出不窮的財政上的倒行逆施，以毀損合衆國的信用，使國庫空虛。陸軍部長是一個味吉尼亞人，設法搬運國家兵工廠器械到南部，以解除自由州的武裝。海軍部長是康涅狄克人，把軍艦遣散到遼遠的海上，這樣使他的繼任者要費長時間召回它們幫助政府。

在華盛頓首都一室中，坐着六個閣員計畫奪取所有砲台和沿海灣諸州公產，又準備了一篇勸告那幾州人民的演說詞，力勸他們隨南卡羅來納脫離聯邦。而極姆斯布卻能，拱手坐在白宮裏面，說道，“我無權干涉！”

不久，佛羅里達獨立了，隨後是亞拉巴麻，密士失必，喬治亞，路易斯安那，得撒斯。代表們在亞拉巴麻的蒙特哥美利集會，創立新府，自稱爲美利堅同盟政府。

他們通過了一種與合衆國政府相仿的憲法，惟承認并保

of America. They adopted a constitution similar to that of the United States, but recognizing and protecting slavery. They chose Jefferson Davis to be president, and Alexander H. Stephens to be vice president of the confederacy.

"A glorious future is before us," said Jefferson Davis "The grass will grow in the Northern cities where the pavements<sup>1</sup> have been worn off by the tread<sup>2</sup> of commerce. We will carry war where food for the sword and torch<sup>3</sup> await our armies in the densely<sup>4</sup> peopled cities."

And in the North there were multitudes of men who were ready to forget their own interests, neglect their duty to their country, and bid the confederacy<sup>5</sup> "God speed!"

"If the great body of the Southern people wish to escape from the Union, we will do our best to forward their views," said Horace Greeley, the Republican leader.

"If there is to be fighting, it will be within our own borders and in our own streets," said ex-President Franklin Pierce of New Hampshire.

"Denunciations<sup>7</sup> of slavery and the slave power are acts of injustice to our fellow-citizens of the South and must be frowned<sup>8</sup> down by a just and law-abiding<sup>9</sup> people," said the mayor of Philadelphia.

"Let the Southern states secede from the Union if they choose; and I propose that the city of New York shall follow them," said the mayor of New York.

"Let us compromise with the South before it is too late," said the Republicans of Boston.

The South was jubilant<sup>10</sup> confident, fearless. The North

---

1. 鋪道； 2. 踐踏； 3. 火把； 4. 稠密的； 5. 同盟軍； 6. 天賜的速度，意即神速之進展； 7. 非難； 8. 揶揄； 9. 奉公守法的； 10. 歡呼。

護蓄奴制。他們選舉極勿生大衛司爲同盟國政府大總統，亞歷山大司蒂芬爲副總統。

極勿生大衛司說，“光榮的未來在我們前面。在北部城市中爲商旅踏損路面滋生蔓草。我人將進兵人烟稠密的城邑，彼方爲刀鋒火把預備下的食糧等候我們的軍隊到臨。”

在北部，有多數的人民準備忘記他們本身的利益，忽略對於本身國家的天職，以祈禱同盟軍“天賜的速度！”

“倘使南部人民的大隊願脫離聯邦，我們將盡力促進他們的意見，共和黨首領好來斯格里連說。

“倘使戰禍發生，將在我們的疆域以內和在我們自己的市街中，前任總統紐罕什爾的佛蘭克林庇亞士。

“非難蓄奴制和蓄奴權是對於南部同胞不公平的舉動，必須爲公正守法的人民所擯棄，”非列得爾非亞州長說。

“讓南部諸州脫離聯邦假使他們願意；我提議紐約城將從其後，”紐約的州長說。

“讓我們同南部妥協勿使時機太晚，”波士敦的共和黨員說。

南部人歡呼，自信，勇往。

was in despair, wavering, almost ready to cry, "Mercy!" almost willing to do anything that was required.

And James Buchanan, sitting with folded hands in the White House, *dictated*<sup>1</sup> a *proclamation*<sup>2</sup> to the people of the United States, appointing a day for *humiliation*<sup>3</sup> and prayer.

A little steamer, the Star of the West, carrying the United States flag, was about to enter Charleston harbor with *provisions*<sup>4</sup> and supplies for the soldiers in the forts. She was fired upon by South Carolina *cannoners*<sup>5</sup> and forced to retire.

"Your flag has been *insulted*<sup>6</sup>!" cried Southern *bravadoes*<sup>7</sup>. "*Redress*<sup>8</sup> it if you dare. You have submitted to it for two months, and you will submit to it forever."

And James Buchanan sat in the White House and said, "I have no power to interfere."

All along the Gulf coast the Confederates took possession of the forts; they hauled down the American flag and *hoisted*<sup>9</sup> their own; they seized the arsenal at Baton Rouge; they demanded that a *revenue cutter*<sup>10</sup> stationed at New Orleans should be *surrendered*<sup>11</sup> to the state.

President Buchanan had been obliged to select a new Secretary of the Treasury, and he had chosen John A. Dix, an old Democrat of New York. And it was then that Mr. Dix sent *flashing over the wires*<sup>12</sup> to New Orleans that famous dispatch, "If any man attempts to haul down the American flag, shoot him on the spot."

That telegram was the first sign of fighting temper yet shown in the North. Those few ringing words stirred up dying patriotism, they aroused enthusiasm, they *kindled*<sup>13</sup> courage. Men awoke from their *stupor*<sup>14</sup>.

---

1. 口授； 2. 通告； 3. 認罪； 4. 糧食； 5. 砲手； 6. 陵辱； 7. 助威者；  
8. 伸雪； 9. 拉起； 10. 海關巡船； 11. 讓給； 12. 電報； 13. 鼓勵； 14. 昏迷。

北部人失望，動搖，差不多預備喊出“討饒”了，差不多願意做一切要做的的事情。

極姆斯布却能拱手坐在白宮裏面；口授一個通告給合衆國人民，指定祈禱和認罪的日子。

一隻小汽輪，西方明星，樹了合衆國旗幟，正在帶了砲台兵士們的糧食和給養開進却爾斯登港。她被南卡羅來納的砲手擊中被迫後退。

南部吶喊助威的人喊道，“你們的國旗受辱了。你們有膽量的就起來替它伸雪。你們服從它二個月了，你們要永遠服從它。”

極姆斯布却能坐在白宮裏面說道，“我無權干涉。”

同盟軍佔領沿海灣全部海岸各處砲台；他們扯下美國旗樹起自己的；他們奪獲倍登路基兵工廠；他們要求在紐奧連的海關巡船應該讓歸州有。

布却能總統被迫選定新財政部長，他委任約翰狄克斯，紐約的老民主黨員。狄克斯先生於是發出致紐奧連的有名的電文，“任何人嘗試扯下美利堅國旗，在當地鎗決他。”

那一個電報初次表示北部戰鬥情緒。短短幾個動人的字激起已死滅的愛國心，它們鼓動熱誠，它們燃着勇氣，人們從昏迷中醒過來了。

“Hurrah for the old flag!” was the shout that went up from Maine to California. “The American flag shall not be hauled down!”

And the tide began to turn.

## V. HEART AND HEAD

Where was Abraham Lincoln during these days of *tumult*<sup>1</sup> and doubt? He was not in his law office; he was not at home with his family; he was not in any of the places where his friends were accustomed to see him. In a little room over a store, the door locked behind him, he sat alone, writing his *inaugural address*<sup>2</sup> and *pondering*<sup>3</sup> upon the *momentous issues*<sup>4</sup> which he alone was to solve.

No man felt the *gravity*<sup>5</sup> of the situation so deeply as he. Although chosen to be the leader of the nation, he seemed to stand alone. Men of his own party were ashamed of the enthusiasm which had brought about his election. “Why did we vote for that rail splitter of Illinois and bring all this trouble upon the country?” they asked themselves.

Men whom he might have expected to sympathize with him were his enemies. “Who is this *luckster*<sup>6</sup> in politics? Who is this slave *hound*<sup>7</sup> of Illinois?” sneered Wendell Phillips, the leader of the Abolitionists.

But Abraham Lincoln never *faltered*<sup>8</sup>. He had set his face toward the *goal*<sup>9</sup>, and he was resolved not to *sweave*<sup>10</sup> from the right though the heavens should fall.

The time came for him to go to Washington. He had

1. 擾亂; 2. 就職宣言; 3. 思考; 4. 重大論點; 5. 重量; 6. 小販; 7. 獵犬; 8. 躊躇; 9. 標的; 10. 歪曲。

“舊國旗萬歲！”是從緬因到加利福尼的一致呼聲。“美利堅國旗不應被扯下的！”

潮流轉過來了。

## 五 胸懷和頭腦

在這些疑駭的日子中林肯在那裏？他不在他的法律事務所中；他不同他的眷屬在家裏；他不在他的朋友習見他的所在。在一家店舖上面的小屋裏，他身後的門鎖着，他獨坐着，寫他的就職宣言，專心致意於他應當獨自解決的重要文字。

沒有人感覺到地位的重量像他這樣深切。雖然當選為全國領袖，他似乎是孤立的。他本黨的人對於參加他的選舉的熱誠感覺羞慚。他們自己問道，“我們為什麼投伊利諾斯伐木者的票，把一切困難放到我們國家？”

他可以希望表同情於他的人，倒是他的敵人。“誰是政治的小販？誰是伊利諾斯州獵奴隸的犬？”主張廢止蓄奴制者的領袖溫台而斐列伯譏笑着說。

但是林肯略不躊躇。他面向着標的，就是天坍下來他也不肯歪曲他的正路。

他到華盛頓來的時候到了。



his friends at Springfield good-by. "A great duty devolves upon me," he said, "a greater duty, perhaps, than has devolved upon any other man since the days of Washington. . . . I hope that you, my friends, will pray that I may receive that *divine assistance*<sup>1</sup> without which I cannot succeed, but with which success is certain."

This *farewell speech*<sup>2</sup> was telegraphed all over the North. It was printed in the newspapers. Thoughtless people sneered. "Old Abe himself is frightened," they said. "He is asking his friends to pray for him."

Nevertheless, it is probable that a majority of the most earnest and patriotic people of the North were ready to support and sympathize with the man whom they had chosen as their standard bearer.

At all the large cities on the route great crowds of people assembled to see Mr. Lincoln as he passed through. Some came to do him honor, but the multitude only to *gratify*<sup>3</sup> an idle *curiosity*<sup>4</sup>. At each stopping place he made a little address,—brief, full of meaning, and yet containing no *forecast*<sup>5</sup> of the policy he intended to pursue.

"My heart, I know, is right," he said; "but the future must decide whether my head is equal to the task that is before me."

"But how about the South? Are we going to have war?" asked the timid-hearted.

"There is no necessity for it," answered Lincoln. "I am not in favor of such a course; and I may say in *advance*<sup>6</sup> that there will be no bloodshed unless it be forced upon the government, and then it will be compelled to act in self-defense."

1. 上帝助力; 2. 告別辭; 3. 使人愉快; 4. 好奇心; 5. 預告; 6. 獻議。

他告別在斯潑林斐而特的他的朋友。他說，“大任降臨到我身上了，自從華盛頓以來比較降臨到任何別人爲重大的責任……我希望你們禱告我可以接受神的助力，沒有這個助力我不能成功；有了它，成功是一定的。”

這篇告別辭電達北部各地，報紙上都發表出來，沒有思想的人加以嘲笑。他們說，“老亞伯害怕了。他請求他的朋友替他禱告。”

雖然如此，北部大多數最愛國最迫切的人民準備擁護他表同情於他們公推爲唯一負責者的人。

在路上的各大城市成羣的人民當林肯過的時候，聚集攔來看他。有的人敬禮他，但是許多人徒令快意爲一種無謂的好奇心而已。在每個停止的地方他發表短的演詞——簡要而充滿意義，但是沒有包括他意想告人的政策。

他說，“我的胸懷是正當的，但是未來必須取決於我的頭腦是否同我當前的問題相等。”

“但是南部怎樣？我們要不要有戰爭？”膽小的問道。

林肯答復道，“沒有需要，我不主張這樣，我可以預先說流血的事不致發生，除非逼迫政府這樣做，而政府將被迫採取自衛行動。”

## VI. ABRAHAM LINCOLN, PRESIDENT

The 4th of March came—the day for the inauguration. In Washington the morning broke clear and cool, the peace that reigned in air and sky giving no token of the storm and tumult in men's minds. Threats had been openly made that Mr. Lincoln should never take the oath of office. The city was full of his enemies. Timid, *yielding*<sup>1</sup> politicians from the North—“*doughfaces*<sup>2</sup>,” as they were *nicknamed*<sup>3</sup>—conferred with Southern sympathizers as to some means of preventing the inauguration.

But General Winfield Scott, the commander of the United States army, was early at the capitol with a body of soldiers. The police of Washington were *alert*<sup>4</sup> to prevent every disturbance. The friends of Mr. Lincoln had rallied to the city, determined to defend him.

At the appointed hour a *procession*<sup>5</sup> of notable men passed out of the Senate Chamber and *ascended*<sup>6</sup> to the platform prepared for the occasion. In that procession were the judges of the Supreme Court, the President of the United States, the President-elect, the Vice President and his successor, senators, congressmen, many distinguished foreign ministers, and governors of states. Before and around the platform was a *seething*<sup>7</sup> multitude of anxious, excited men of all classes and parties. *Flanking*<sup>8</sup> the immense gathering were the soldiers under General Scott, drawn up in arms.

When all had taken their places, Mr. Lincoln stepped forward to read his address. He was greeted with but

1. 順服的; 2. 懦夫; 3. 頭銜; 4. 敏捷; 5. 行列; 6. 登上; 7. 騷動; 8. 駐立。

## 六 亞伯拉罕林肯大總統

三月四日到了——就職的日子。在華盛頓破曉，天氣晴朗，薄寒，天空表現的和平氣象並不給與人們腦海以暴風雨的將降臨。謠言公開宣傳林肯先生將不宣誓就職。城中滿佈着他的敵人。北部膽小，順服的政治家——他們綽號叫做“懦夫”——同南部的同情者商議幾種阻止就職的方法。

但是文斐爾特司各脫將軍，合衆國陸軍元帥，早已帶了一隊兵在首都裏面。華盛頓的巡警敏捷阻止一切擾亂。林肯先生的朋友們集隊入市，決意保護他。

在指定的時間，名人的行列步出參議院昇上準備就的講台。在這個行列中的是最高法院裁判官，合衆國大總統，總統選舉者，副總統和他的後繼者，參議院，衆議員，許多外國使節，和諸州州長。在台前和四周是各階層各黨派的騷動的羣衆。翼衛於這個盛大集合旁的是司各脫將軍部下兵士，武裝齊備。

衆人就位後，林肯先生走上前面宣讀演詞。祇有輕微的采

feeble applause. His enemies were many and bold. His friends were anxious and fearful.

The address was long, but no longer than was necessary for a clear *statement*<sup>1</sup> of the problems which the country required him to solve. As a matter of course, it dealt mainly with the question of secession from the Union, and much of it was addressed to the people of the South.

“*Physically*<sup>2</sup> speaking,” he said, “we cannot separate. We cannot remove our sections from each other, or build an impassable wall between them. . . . Is it possible to make *intercourse*<sup>3</sup> more *advantageous*<sup>4</sup> after separation than before? Can *aliens*<sup>5</sup> make treaties easier than friends can make laws?

“Suppose you go to war, you cannot fight always; and when, after much loss on both sides, and no gain on either, you cease fighting, the *identical*<sup>6</sup> questions as to terms of intercourse are again upon you.

“In your hands, my dissatisfied fellow-countrymen, and not in mine, is the momentous issue of civil war. The government will not *assail*<sup>7</sup> you.

“You can have no conflict without being yourselves the *aggressors*<sup>8</sup>. You have no oath registered in Heaven to destroy the government; while I shall have the most solemn one to preserve, protect, and defend it.

“We are not enemies, but friends. - We must not be enemies. Though *passion*<sup>9</sup> may have *strained*<sup>10</sup>, it must not break our *bonds of affection*<sup>11</sup>.

“The *mystic*<sup>12</sup> *corde*<sup>13</sup> of memory, stretching from every battlefield and every patriot grave to every living heart

---

1. 敘述; 2. 實質地; 3. 交際; 4. 有利; 5. 外國人; 6. 立約的; 7. 攻擊;  
8. 侵略者; 9. 情感; 10. 使緊張; 11. 情誼的結合; 12. 神祕的; 13. 神經。

聲對着他。他的敵人多數而勇敢。他的朋友們熱望而恐懼。

演說辭是長的，但是並不比較國家需要他解決的問題之清楚說明書爲長。這是當然的事，演詞大概主要地論及聯邦分立的問題，而許多話是對南部發的。

他說，“實質的講起來，我們不能分開的。我們不能把我們的區域各自搬移開去，或是築一道通不過的牆在它們中間……在分立以後能不能使交接比較以前更爲有利？異國間訂立協約能不能比較朋友間產生法律來得容易些。

“假定你們交戰，你們不能常常開仗；而在雙方受了許多損失以後，那一方都沒有得到什麼。你們停止戰爭，同樣的交涉條件的立約問題又重新在你們身上了。

“內戰的緊要爭點是在你們手中，我的不滿意的同胞們，不在我的手中。政府不會攻擊你們。”

“你們倘使自己不做侵略者就不會有衝突。你們沒有發過破壞政府的誓言上聞於天；而在我卻有最莊嚴的一句，就是保衛政府。

‘我們都是朋友，不是仇敵。我們必不可做仇敵。雖然感情可因衝動而血脈憤張，但一定不可破裂我們親愛的情誼。

and *hearthstone*<sup>1</sup> all over this broad land, will yet *swell*<sup>2</sup> the *chorus*<sup>3</sup> of the Union, when again touched, as surely they will be, by the better *angels*<sup>4</sup> of our nature."

With these solemn and *prophetic*<sup>5</sup> words the address was brought to a close. Then the *venerable*<sup>6</sup> Chief Justice of the United States, Roger B. Taney, stepped forward, and with trembling voice *administered the oath*<sup>7</sup> of office.

Abraham Lincoln was President of the United States.

The first to *congratulate*<sup>8</sup> him was his lifelong *rival*<sup>9</sup>, Stephen A. Douglas. Mr. Douglas had held the President's hat while he was speaking. He now *grasped*<sup>10</sup> his hand with the warmth of old-time friendship and assured him that, no matter what might befall, he would stand by him and aid him in upholding the Constitution and the laws. It was a noble act. The "Rail Splitter of Illinois" and the "Little Giant of the West" were no longer rivals, they were friends and fellow-workers.

But that 4th of March offered no bright promises for the future. The leaders of secession in the South knew now that if there was to be war, they themselves must begin it. In the North it seemed to be a *foregone*<sup>11</sup> conclusion that the Union was broken up. There were many who were still willing to give up everything to the South.

"To force the Southern states to remain in the Union would be an act of *despotism*<sup>12</sup>," said William H. Seward, the Republican.

"If the Southern states think that they ought to have a separate government, they have a right to decide that question without *appealing*<sup>13</sup> to you or me," said Wendell

---

1. 家庭； 2. 增大； 3. 諧和之歌； 4. 國謀； 5. 預言的； 6. 可敬的； 7. 令發誓，監督； 8. 慶賀； 9. 勁敵； 10. 握； 11. 預料； 12. 專制； 13. 申訴。

“神祕的記憶神經，從各處戰場和各個烈士墳墓延伸到每個人的心胸和全大陸的各個家庭，在重新接觸以後，自我人良心所感召，將增強聯邦的融和，可以預卜的。”

演詞以莊嚴和預測的話語結束。於是可敬的合衆國最高法院院長，洛卷湯尼，步出前列，以戰兢的語調監誓。

亞伯拉罕林肯是合衆國大總統了。

第一個祝賀他的是他長時期的敵手，司蒂芬道格拉斯。道格拉斯先生握着總統的禮帽在他說話的時候。他現在用老朋友的熱誠握着他的手，並對他保證無論什麼樣的事情壓上頭來，他要站在他這方面始終幫助他保持憲法和法律。這是高尚的舉動。“伊利諾斯的伐木者”和“西部的小偉人”不再是敵手，他們是朋友和同事了。

但是三月四日並未給予前途以光明。南部獨立運動的領袖知道倘便有戰爭，發動的必是他們自己。在北部，聯邦分裂似乎是預定的結論。還有許多人願意放棄一切給南部人。

“強迫南部諸州留在聯邦裏面將爲一種專制行爲，”共和黨員威廉修華說。

“倘使南部諸州以爲他們應當有一個分立的政府，他們有權取決該問題，無須訴諸你我的意見，”主張廢止蓄奴制者溫特而斐列伯說。



Phillips, the Abolitionist.

But Stephen A. Douglas, the Democrat, said: "If the Southern states attempt to secede, I am in favor of their having just so many slaves, and just so much slave territory as they can hold at the point of the *bayonet*<sup>1</sup>, and nomore."

And President Lincoln, with that sad, far-away look in his face, and with a *sublime*<sup>2</sup> faith that the right would surely *prevail*<sup>3</sup>, entered the White House, and took upon his shoulders the burden of saving the republic.

#### VII. MEN OF THE CABINET<sup>4</sup>

Among the men whom President Lincoln selected for his cabinet there were four whose names are already known to us. They were the men who had *competed*<sup>5</sup> **1861** with him for the nomination at Chicago.

William H. Seward, the antislavery statesman, scholar, gentleman, shrewd politician, was the Secretary of State. *Imperious*<sup>6</sup>, proud, and scarcely *concealing*<sup>7</sup> his bitter disappointment, he almost felt it a humiliation to take office under the man of the West.

Simon Cameron, the Pennsylvania leader, was the Secretary of War. Fearless, *aggressive*<sup>8</sup>, full of *pluck*<sup>9</sup> and energy, he seemed the ideal man for the difficult duties of that responsible position.

Salmon P. Chase, the *well-born*<sup>10</sup>, accomplished governor of Ohio, the ablest of Western Abolitionists, was the Secretary of the Treasury. *Dignified*<sup>11</sup>, *sedate*<sup>12</sup>, earnest, *judicious*<sup>13</sup>, he would be a safe *counselor*<sup>14</sup> and a wise manager.

Edward Bates, the Missourian, the gentlemanly law-

---

1. 鎗刺；2. 崇高的；3. 克服；4. 內閣；5. 競爭；6. 專橫的；7. 隱匿；8. 取攻勢的；9. 膽力；10. 出自名門；11. 尊嚴；12. 沉着；13. 賢明；14. 顧問。

但是民主黨員司蒂芬道格拉斯說：倘使南部諸州設法獨立，我贊成他們祇有這許多奴隸，祇有在他們武力所及的這許多領土內，不能再增多了。

林肯大總統，而現遐思而含愁的神情，深信正義必能克服一切，走進白宮，肩頭上負起拯救共和國的大任。

## 七 內閣的人物

在林肯選任的閣員中有四個人他們的名字我們早已知道的。他們是同他在芝加哥競選的人。

威廉修華，反蓄奴制政治家，學者，君子，敏銳的政客。是國務卿。專橫，傲慢而且不能隱藏他痛苦的失望。他以位居西部人之下為恥。

西門卡美倫，本薛佛尼亞的領袖，是陸軍部長，勇往，無畏，精力充沛，他似乎是遺大投艱的標準人物。

薩而門契斯，出自令門，成功的俄亥俄州長，最能幹的西部主張廢止蓄奴制者，是財政部長。尊嚴，沉着，誠懇，賢明，他當是一個穩健的顧問和智慧的管理者。

yer, the foe of the slave power in his own state, was the *Attorney General*<sup>1</sup>.

The other members of the cabinet were men of less note. The Secretary of the Navy was Gideon Welles, then scarcely known outside of New England. The *Secretary of the Interior*<sup>2</sup> was Caleb B. Smith of Indiana. The *Postmaster General*<sup>3</sup> was Montgomery Blair of Maryland, a politician of large influence in the middle South.

Every action of the new President was *criticised*<sup>4</sup> in the North. Certain Republicans complained that he was leaning toward the Democrats. His cabinet, they said, contained four *ex-Democrats*<sup>5</sup> and only three *ex-Whigs*<sup>6</sup>.

“Very well, then,” he answered, “since I myself am an ex-Whig, we shall be pretty well balanced.”

His friends wondered that he should have chosen his political rivals to be his counselors. Would not jealousy and disappointment on their part lead them to wish to make his administration a failure? Mr. Lincoln did not think so. He had great confidence in the sterling character of these men. He did not believe that they would stoop to *meanness*<sup>7</sup> in order to serve any selfish purpose.

“Gentlemen,” he said to them, “it will require the utmost skill on the part of all of us to save the republic. Let us forget ourselves and join hands like brothers. If we succeed, there will be glory enough for us all.”

Some of Lincoln's friends had expressed their fears that Mr. Seward would attempt to *dictate*<sup>8</sup> to the President, and would himself try to *assume*<sup>9</sup> the control of the government. Before a month had passed, these fears were

---

1. 檢察長； 2. 內政部長； 3. 郵政部長； 4. 評論； 5. 前民主黨員； 6. 前自由黨； 7. 卑鄙； 8. 指定； 9. 自專。

愛德華培資，密蘇里人，君子風度的律師，蓄奴權的勁敵在他本州內，是檢察長。

其餘的關員是名望較淺的人。海軍部長是極第盎威而士，在新英格蘭以外很少聞名。內政部長是印第安拿的卡來勃史密士，郵政部長是馬里蘭的蒙古美利勃來，在南部中區占絕大勢力的政治家。

每次新總統的舉措在北部受人評論。有的共和黨員譏諷他傾向民主黨。他們說，他的關員中包含四個前民主黨員而祇有三個前自由黨員。

他答道，“很好，因為我自己是前自由黨員，我們很可以平均了。”

他的朋友很詫異他選任他的政敵做他的關員。他們的妒忌和失望不會教他們使他的政治失敗嗎？林肯並不這樣想。他有絕大的信任於這幾個人純潔的人格。他不相信他們會用卑鄙的手段以達到他們自私的目的。

他對他們說，“諸君，拯救國家需要我們全體的絕大才能。讓我們忘記本身，聯起手來像弟兄一樣。倘使我們成功了，我們全體能得絕大的光榮。”

有幾個林肯的朋友，表示恐懼修華先生要設法脅制總統，他自己要壟斷政府。在一個月過去以前，這些恐懼證實了。

*confirmed*<sup>1</sup>. In a letter entitled, "Some Thoughts for the President's Consideration," Mr. Seward laid out a plan for the conduct of certain affairs, and expressed it in the manner of a superior person dictating to a *subordinate*<sup>2</sup>.

Very calmly and judiciously, and in words that could not be *misconstrued*<sup>3</sup>, Mr. Lincoln gave him to understand that the *reins*<sup>4</sup> of government were in the President's own hands, and that he proposed to keep them there. And Mr. Seward, very wisely and *graciously*<sup>5</sup>, submitted to be second to the man whom he now recognized as both stronger and wiser than himself.

### VIII. LINCOLN'S FIRST CALL TO ARMS

After the inauguration there seemed to be a brief calm before the bursting of the storm. The South became impatient because Jefferson Davis, the president of the Confederacy, did not take some *decisive action*<sup>6</sup>.

"Why don't you go ahead?" asked the excited leaders.

The North was dissatisfied because President Lincoln did not immediately take steps to settle the difficulty and either let the states go in peace or declare war upon them.

"Why don't you go ahead?" asked friend and foe.

The opportunity and necessity of "going ahead" came soon enough.

Of the important forts along the coasts of the seceded states nearly all had been taken by the Confederacy. Fort Sumter in Charleston harbor still floated the American flag. There Major Robert Anderson, with a *handful*<sup>7</sup> of soldiers, stood at his post and refused all demands to *surrender*<sup>8</sup>. The city was full of Confederate soldiers.

1. 證實; 2. 下級; 3. 誤解; 4. 統馭; 5. 殷勤; 6. 斷然行動; 7. 少許; 8. 投降。

標題“幾點意見請總統注意”的一封信裏面，修華先生定出某幾項辦法的意見，表現出上級指揮下級的態度。

沉着而賢明，在不能被誤解的詞令中，林肯先生使他明白政府的統治是在總統本人手中，他主張把意見保存着。修華先生，很慇懃和聰明地，順服在他現在認為比他自己有力和明智的人之下了。

## 八 林肯的第一次下動員令

在就職以後好像暴風雨降臨前的暫時的靜止。南部人因為同盟政府總統極勿生大衛斯不取斷然行動表示不耐。

“你為什麼不向前？”激昂的領袖們說。

北部人因為林肯總統不立即取解決難題決定和戰的步驟表示不滿。

“你為什麼不向前？”友和敵說。

“向前”的機會和需要即刻好來了。

獨立各州的沿海砲台幾全數被同盟軍佔領。却爾斯登港內的生姆脫砲台依舊飄揚美利堅國旗。那邊的洛信脫安徒生少校，帶領小隊兵士，堅守他的職位拒絕一切投降的要求。城

*Batteries*<sup>1</sup> were built along the shore. Cannon were placed in position and pointed toward the fort. Still Major Anderson refused to surrender.

On the 12th of April, General Beauregard, the Confederate commander, asked him to state whether he would give up the fort immediately. His supplies were **1861** *exhausted*<sup>2</sup>. The soldiers were eating their last *rations*<sup>3</sup> of food. He answered that unless he received other orders from the government he would go out on the 15th, but not earlier.

“Very well, then;” answered Beauregard, “within one hour the Confederate batteries will open fire upon you.”

The message was sent at half-past three in the morning. At half-past four the first gun was fired upon Fort Sumter. It was a declaration of war against the United States. Those who caused it to be fired felt that this was so. They wished it to be so.

The *bombardment*<sup>4</sup> was kept up during the day and a part of the night. The outer walls of the fort were battered down. Major Anderson returned the fire as he was able; but his guns were small compared with those of the enemy. The people of Charleston were wild with enthusiasm. Throughout the South the bombardment of Fort Sumter was hailed with joy as the beginning of the end. It was believed that the United States would submit without any determined *resistance*<sup>5</sup>, and that the Confederate states would then be firmly established.

On the following day, April the 13th, the feeble, half-starved *garrison*<sup>6</sup> surrendered. The strongest *fortress*<sup>7</sup> on the South Atlantic coast passed into the hands of the

---

1. 炮壘; 2. 盡盡; 3. 口糧; 4. 砲攻; 5. 抵抗; 6. 守卒; 7. 砲臺。

中滿佈同盟軍。沿岸築着砲壘，大砲安放在砲位上指向砲台。  
安徒生少校依舊拒絕投降。

四月十二日，皮來加將軍，同盟軍元帥，請他表示是否立即放棄砲台。他的給養垂盡了。兵士們吃到他們最後的口糧了。他回答除非他接受政府別的命令，他要在十五日走出，但是不能再早了。

皮來加回答說，“那麼很好，在一點鐘以內同盟軍的砲台要向你開火了。”

這個信息在早上三點半發出。四點半第一砲開到生姆脫砲台。這是對合衆國的宣戰，那些發動的人覺得是這樣，他們願意這樣。

砲攻在這一天和一部份晚上的時間進行着。砲台外圍破蕪下來了。安徒生少校盡他的能力還擊；但是他的砲比較敵人的砲小。却爾斯登的人民熱狂了，在全南部砲攻生姆脫砲台始終為衆人歡呼着。都相信合衆國政府將無抵抗地屈服，而同盟政府於是將堅固地建立起來了。

第二天，四月十三日，軟弱無力半飢餓的守卒投降了。南



Confederates.

When the news was telegraphed through the North, the effect was wonderful. The people awoke suddenly to a *realization*<sup>1</sup> of what was going on. The Union broken up, a new government making war upon the United States, the flag insulted and fired upon, triumphant foes rejoicing—these things aroused the *dormant*<sup>2</sup> patriotism of the nation. Men who had hitherto been willing to let matters *drift*<sup>3</sup> as they would, understood now the great *peril*<sup>4</sup> into which the country had drifted. Their fighting spirit was aroused: there was to be no more *knuckling*<sup>5</sup> down to the South.

President Lincoln at once called for seventy-five thousand volunteers to defend the government and *maintain*<sup>6</sup> its laws in the South. In all the free states the call was answered with enthusiasm. Not only seventy-fivethousand men offered themselves, but thousands more who could not be accepted. Michigan alone offered fifty thousand.

“Ten days ago,” said the governor of Iowa, “there were two parties in this state. To-day there is but one, and that one is for the Constitution and Union *unconditionally*<sup>7</sup>.”

Within twenty-four hours, Illinois had forty companies ready; within forty-eight hours, Massachusetts had a *fully equipped regiment*<sup>8</sup> ready to march. Factories were set to work making arms and *ammunition*<sup>9</sup>. In every village of the North the tap of the drum was heard. The day of hesitation had passed; the war had begun.

The call was for volunteers who would serve ninety days. Most people believed that the war could not last

---

1. 現實狀態； 2. 潛在的； 3. 飄搖； 4. 險境； 5. 順服； 6. 維護； 7. 無條件地； 8. 武裝齊備的隊伍； 9. 軍火。

大西洋上最強固的炮台都入於同盟軍之手。

這個新聞電達北部各地，影響是驚人的。民衆突然警覺到正在進行的現實事態。聯邦破裂了，一個新的政府向合衆國政府開戰，國旗受辱并被鎗炮打着，得勝的敵人興高彩烈——這些事實激起民族潛在的愛國心。本來願意讓一切飄搖不定的人，到了現在明白國家飄搖不定於重大的不幸中了。他們的戰鬥情緒高昇了：對南部不再屈服了。

林肯總統立刻動員七萬五千志願兵以保衛政府并在南部維持法律秩序。各自由州全體對動員報以熱誠。超過七萬五千人獻身國家，但是還有成千萬的人不能編入。密執安一州就供給了五萬人。

伊阿華州長說，“十天以前州內有兩黨。今天只有一黨了，這一黨是無條件地擁護憲法和聯邦。”

在二十四小時內，伊利諾斯有了四十隊準備着；在四十八小時內，馬薩諸塞有了武裝齊備的隊伍準備出發。各工廠開工製造武器軍火，在北部各鄉村內鼓聲到處震響。遲疑的日子過去了；戰爭已經開始了。

這個動員是召集需要服務九十天的志願兵。大多數人民

longer than that. In the North it was thought that the South would submit without much resistance. "To whip those slaveholders will only be a little exercise before breakfast," boasted the *over-confident*<sup>1</sup>.

But the South had been preparing for war long before this. Every state was armed. General Beauregard was at the head of a strong force, well-equipped and drilled. And every Southerner believed that every *Yankee*<sup>2</sup>—as all Northerners were called—was an *arrant*<sup>3</sup> coward. "One Southern soldier is a fair match for ten Yankees," boasted the over-confident.

Other Southern states, which had hitherto been wavering, now joined the ranks of secession—Virginia, North Carolina, Tennessee, Arkansas. The remaining slave states, all except Delaware, not only refused to send the troops which the President called for, but were ready at the first *favorable moment*<sup>4</sup> to withdraw from the Union.

The city of Washington was in the midst of slave territory. The first object of the South would be its capture. If that object could be attained, the success of the Confederacy would be assured. No one understood this better than President Lincoln, and his first care was to assemble a large force for the protection of the capital.

General Winfield Scott, then in his seventy-sixth year, was the highest officer in the *regular army*<sup>5</sup>. "I have served my country under the flag of the Union for more than fifty years," he said, "and as long as God permits me to live, I will defend that flag with my sword, even if my own native state assails it."

But age and *infirmities*<sup>6</sup> would not permit him to take

---

1. 自信太過; 2. 美國人綽號; 3. 有名的; 4. 好時機; 5. 常備兵; 6. 衰弱。

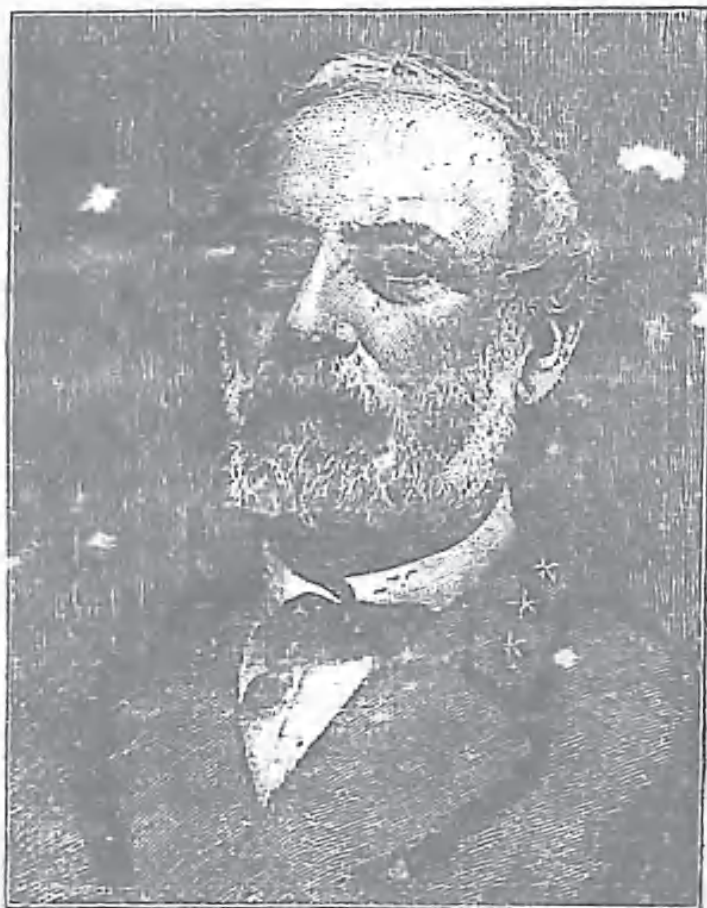
相信戰爭不會再比九十天長久的。在北部一般人想南部將無抵抗屈服。“鞭撻那些蓄奴者不過早餐前的小操而已，”自信太過者誇口說。

但是南部備戰遠在這時候以前，各州一律武裝。皮來加將軍領導着強有力的武力，軍械整齊，訓練有素。各南部人都相信每個央歧——北部人的稱呼——都是著名的懦夫。“一個南部兵足以敵十個央歧”自信太過的人誇口說。

別的南部諸州，原來是動搖的，現在與獨立的行列——味吉尼亞，北卡羅來納，田納西，阿肯色——聯合起來了。其餘的蓄奴州，除了特拉華外，不單拒絕大總統召集的隊伍，更準備在這樣一個好時機中脫離聯邦。

華頓頓城恰巧在蓄奴的領域中。南部的第一個目標是它的佔領。倘使那個目的達到，同盟軍的成功可以保證了。沒有人知道這事情比較林肯深切，他第一件注意的事是集結強大的兵力來保衛國都。溫斐而特司各脫將軍，現在七十六歲了，是常備軍中最高將領。他說，“我在聯邦旗幟之下爲國服務垂五十年，只要上帝允許我活着，我要用大刀保衛那個旗幟，雖然我生長的本州攻打它。

the field. The President and his cabinet decided that some younger man must be chosen to lead the army of the Union. Among all the soldiers in the country they could think of none who was braver, wiser, more trustworthy, than Robert E. Lee of Virginia.



Robert E. Lee

Lee was at that time a *colonel*<sup>1</sup> in the United States army; he was fifty-four years old; his whole life had been spent in the service of his country. He was *descended*<sup>2</sup> from one of the oldest and proudest families in Virginia; his father had been the most trusted of the officers in the army of General Washington.

Robert E. Lee loved the

United States; but, like many another Southern man, he loved his own state better. He was a Virginian, and he believed that his first duty was to be loyal to Virginia. "I cannot imagine a greater *calamity*<sup>3</sup>," he said, "than the *dissolution of the Union*<sup>4</sup>."

When the command of the Union army was offered to him, Colonel Lee hesitated. Virginia had not yet seceded. But if she did secede, could he fight against her? Could he fight against his kinsmen and friends, all of whom were Virginians? Most certainly he could not.

1. 陸軍上校; 2 傳下; 3. 慘痛; 4. 聯邦的分裂。

但是年歲和衰弱不允許他上場。

總統和閣員決定委任年紀較輕的人統率聯邦軍隊。在國軍中間他們找不到別人比較味吉尼亞的洛培李更勇敢，明智而足以信任的。

李在那時候是合衆國軍上校；他五十四歲，他的終身費於爲他的國家服務上。他是從最有歷史最可自負的家庭之一中遺傳下來的；他的父親是華盛頓將軍軍中最可靠的軍官。李愛合衆國家；但是，像別的南部人一樣，他更愛他的本州。他是一個味吉尼亞人，他相信他的第一個責任是忠於本州。他說，“我不能夠想像到比較聯邦分裂更大的慘痛。”

聯邦軍隊的命令給他的時候，李上校躊躇了。味吉尼亞還沒有獨立。但是倘使她獨立了，他能否向她開戰？他能否向他的親族和朋友開戰，他們都是味吉尼亞人？大概他不能夠的。

在一個星期中間味吉尼亞加入同盟軍的新聞來到了。李

Within a week the news came that Virginia had joined the Confederacy. Colonel Lee at once *resigned*<sup>1</sup> his *commission*<sup>2</sup> in the United States army. Three days later he was asked to take command of the Virginian troops. "Trusting in *Almighty*<sup>3</sup> God and an approving *conscience*<sup>4</sup>," he said, "I devote myself to the service of my native state."

In the meanwhile, Stephen A. Douglas was doing all that he could to awaken the North to a sense of the great peril which threatened the country. He hurried back to Illinois, making many speeches on the way.

"Forget party; remember only your country," he said. "It is our duty to protect the government and the flag from every *assailant*<sup>5</sup>, be he who he may." Never was a speaker more in earnest.

At Springfield he made his last great *appeal*<sup>6</sup>. "The South has no cause of complaint," he said. "The election of Lincoln is a mere *pretext*<sup>7</sup>. There can be no *neutrals*<sup>8</sup> in this war—only patriots and *traitors*<sup>9</sup>."

He allowed himself no rest. He *denied*<sup>10</sup> himself sleep. He gave all his thoughts, all his strength, to the grand effort of arousing his countrymen to the defense of the Union. He *overtaxed*<sup>11</sup> his strength. His health failed. In Chicago he was taken ill, and on the 3d of June he died. He was but forty-eight years of age. His death seemed to be a national calamity, and Mr. Lincoln mourned for him with sorrow as deep and *sincere*<sup>12</sup> as for a brother. His name is to be remembered as that of one who, although he had made mistakes, was among the most earnest and most able of American patriots.

---

1. 辭去； 2. 委任； 3. 全能的； 4. 天良； 5. 攻擊； 6. 呼籲； 7. 藉口；  
8. 中立者； 9. 叛徒； 10. 拒絕； 11. 過分的消耗； 12. 真誠。

上校立刻辭了合衆國軍事的委任。三天以後他被邀請統率味吉尼亞軍隊。他說，“信賴全能的上帝和一顆可稱許的良心，我專心致力爲我本州服務。”

當其時，司蒂芬道格拉斯盡其所能喚醒北部人使他們覺悟絕大的危機打擊到國家。他急行回伊利諾斯，在路上發表許多演說詞。

他說，“忘記黨派；只知道他們的國家，我們的責任是保衛政府和國旗以防一切攻擊，誰可以誰就做。”從來沒有比他再誠懇的演說家了。

在斯潑林斐爾特他發表最後的呼籲。他說，“南部沒有申訴的理由，林肯的當選僅是一種藉口。在這個戰爭中沒有中立者——祇有志士和叛徒。”

他不允許他自己休息。他拒絕他自己睡眠。他把所有的思想，所有的力量，用來喚起他的國民保衛聯邦。他精力交瘁。他的健康喪失了。他在芝加哥得病，六月三日他逝世。他只有四十八歲。他的死是國家的不幸，林肯先生哀悼他好像喪了一個弟兄一樣深切，人們記得他的名字爲美利堅——雖然他曾經造成過失——最誠懇最能幹的愛國志士中的一人。



## IX. IN SIGHT OF THE CAPITOL

Time and *space*<sup>1</sup> would fail us to relate the history of the long and terrible war that began with the firing of the Confederate guns on Fort Sumter. It is for us rather to keep our eyes on the sad-faced man at the *helm*<sup>2</sup>, who *steered*<sup>3</sup> the ship of state through the dreadful storm of those memorable years.

President Lincoln had called an *extra session of Congress*<sup>4</sup> to meet on the 4th of July. When that day dawned, the city of Washington was like an armed camp.

1861 The streets were filled with soldiers. On every hand were the signs of war. From the *dome*<sup>5</sup> of the capitol, the Confederate flag could be seen on the distant hills beyond the Potomac, waving over the *encampment*<sup>6</sup> of the enemy. From every part of the Confederacy armed forces were hurrying northward. "On to Washington!" was the cry of the South. The nation's capital was almost in a state of *siege*<sup>7</sup>.

When Congress came together, only the Northern states and the border slave states were represented. The seats of the members from the extreme South were *vacant*<sup>8</sup>.

The President's message was read and listened to with the deepest attention. In it he informed Congress of the condition of the country. He told how in the Southern states the laws of the country had been *set at naught*<sup>9</sup>; how the arsenals and other public property had been seized; how Fort Sumter had been *bombarded*<sup>10</sup>; how a large number of United States officers in the army and the *navy*<sup>11</sup> had taken up arms against their country; how a call for volun-

1. 地位； 2. 中樞； 3. 駕駛； 4. 國會臨時大會； 5. 圓頂； 6. 營盤； 7. 圍困； 8. 空的； 9. 毫不為意； 10. 砲擊； 11. 海軍，艦隊。

## 九 國會議事廳所見

時間和篇幅使我們不能多寫以同盟軍炮火攻擊生姆脫炮台開始的長久而可怕的戰爭。我們的眼光還是轉到職掌中樞的人，他在值得紀念的這幾年中駕駛邦家的危舟經歷那狂風暴雨。

林肯總統召集國會臨時大會於七月四日開會。這天破曉，華盛頓佈置得像軍營一樣。街道上佈滿兵士。各處都表現戰爭的徵象。從國都國會議事廳圓頂望去，可以看見同盟軍旗幟在包脫麥那一邊的山岡上敵人的營壘高頭飄揚着。武裝的軍隊從同盟政府治下各地向北方出發。“向華盛頓進發！”是南部的口號。國都幾乎在被圍困的情形之下了。

國會召集了的時候，祇有北部諸州和邊區的蓄奴州代表來到。極南部的代表議席空着。

大總統咨文的宣讀受聽衆最深切的注意。在文中他告訴國會國家當前的情形。他說怎麼樣在南部法律被視若弁髦；怎麼樣兵工廠和別的公產被佔奪；怎麼樣生姆脫炮台被攻擊；怎麼樣多數合衆國海陸軍官武裝着反對祖國；怎麼樣志願兵下

teers had been made and cheerfully *responded*<sup>1</sup> to by every Northern state; and how armed forces were gathering in Virginia and threatening the seat of government. Finally, he asked Congress to give him the means by which to end the conflict quickly and decisively. To do this he must have four hundred thousand men and four hundred millions of dollars.

Congress acted *promptly*<sup>2</sup>. It voted to give to the President not only all that he asked, but more. He might have at his *disposal*<sup>3</sup> five hundred thousand men and five hundred millions of dollars.

And so another call went forth for volunteers. This time half a million men were to be put in the field and they were to serve for three years unless the war should close within a shorter time. Men no longer talked about "whipping the *rebels*<sup>4</sup> as a *pastime*<sup>5</sup> before breakfast." They knew now that the full strength of the nation must be put forth; and every patriotic citizen resolved that, if need be, he would give himself and all that he had for the preservation of the great republic. From every Northern state "uprose the mighty voice of the people to cheer the heart of the President. Onward it came, like the rush of many waters," singing

"We are coming, Father Abraham,  
Five hundred thousand strong."

A force of men under General Benjamin F. Butler took possession of Old Point Comfort, at the mouth of the James River. General McClellan led an army into West Virginia to prevent any advance of the Confeder-

---

1. 響應; 2. 敏捷地; 3. 掌握; 4. 叛徒; 5. 遊戲。

動員令和受北部各州熱烈響應；怎麼樣軍隊集結於味吉尼亞威脅政府地位。最後，他請求議會授予迅速堅決地結束戰爭計畫。實現這計畫他須有四十萬人和四萬元金錢。

議會即時動作。票決授予總統溢出他所需要的。他可以取得五十萬人和五萬元在他掌治之下。

於是又動員志願兵。這一次五十萬人下戰場從軍期延長三年，除非戰事在較短的時期中結束。人們不再說“鞭撻叛徒當作早餐前的遊戲”了。他們現在知道國家的全部力量必須運用出來；每一個愛國公民決定，必要時以身命財產保衛大共和國。從每北部各州“提起民衆巨大的嗓子贊助大總統的心懷。它進向前來，如水勢之奔突，”唱着：

“我們來了，亞伯拉罕國父，  
五十萬強有力的身手。”

一隊武裝兵士在潘極明勃脫勒將軍指揮之下佔據渥而特包因脫炮台，在極姆斯河口。麥克刻來倫將軍帶了一隊兵進西味吉尼亞以阻止同盟軍在這個方向的前進。另一隊準備保衛

ates in that direction. Other forces were ready to protect the Northwest from invasion by way of Kentucky or the Mississippi. The troops in Missouri were placed under the command of General Frémont, the Western adventurer, who, in the Mexican War, had *conquered*<sup>1</sup> California for the United States. The harbors of the South were *blockaded*<sup>2</sup>, and Port Royal in South Carolina soon fell into the hands of Union forces.

But all this while the Confederacy was arming and drilling great armies for the defense of the South and the invasion of the North, and the cry of "On to Washington" swelled into a chorus of hundreds of thousands of voices.

And then, on the 21st of July, the first great battle was fought. It was fought on Virginia soil, almost within sight of Washington, and is generally known as the first battle of Bull Run. The Union army was commanded by General McDowell; the Confederate, by General Beauregard. The soldiers on both sides were *raw*<sup>3</sup>, untrained volunteers; but in the Southern army were many officers of note who had been educated in the *military academy*<sup>4</sup> at West Point and had spent long years in military service. The battle was fierce and bloody, and the Confederates won the day. The Union lines were broken. A *panic*<sup>5</sup> spread among the soldiers. They turned in wild *disorder*<sup>6</sup>, and fled in blind dismay back toward Washington. In terrible *rout and confusion*<sup>7</sup>, they crowded the long bridge across the Potomac, and scarcely *paused*<sup>8</sup> in their *flight*<sup>9</sup> until they were safe *in the shadow of the capitol*<sup>10</sup>.

Safe? Had the Confederates known the extent of their

---

1. 克服； 2. 封鎖； 3. 生的，未訓練過的； 4. 陸軍學校； 5. 恐慌； 6. 秩序紊亂； 7. 紛擾混亂； 8. 停止； 9. 逃過； 10. 在議事廳庇護之下。

西北，抵當聖塔啓和密士失必軍隊侵進來。密蘇里軍由佛來蒙將軍統領，西部探險家，在墨西哥戰爭中曾為合衆國取得加利福尼亞州。南部港口已封鎖，南卡羅來納州的勞挨爾炮台不久墮入聯邦軍之手。

但是這時候同盟軍已整備大軍以備保衛南部，并侵入北部；“向華盛頓進發”的口號擴大為千萬人一致的呼聲了。

於是，七月廿一日第一次大戰開始。戰爭在味吉尼亞土地上發生，差不多在華盛頓視線所及，以第一次勃而倫戰事聞名。聯邦軍由麥唐納將軍指揮；同盟軍由皮來加將軍指揮。雙方的兵士都缺乏訓練；但是南部軍中有許多在西包因脫陸軍學校受過軍事教育又曾從事長期戰事生活的著名軍官。這次戰爭可怕而殘忍。同盟軍獲勝。聯邦軍陣線衝破。兵士們一致恐慌，秩序大亂，士氣沮喪，向華盛頓亂竄。一路驚惶紛擾，羣集長橋過包脫麥河，足不停趾地逃奔，直待安全抵達議事廳庇護之下。

安全了嗎？倘使同盟軍知道他們勝利的開展，而倘使他們追蹤上他們的逃亡的敵人，那時候華盛頓就要陷入他們手中，

victory, and had they followed their fleeing enemies, Washington would have fallen into their hands that day, and our country would have had a different history. But for some *unexplained*<sup>1</sup> reason, they *halted*<sup>2</sup>, hesitated, and then made no advance. The delay gave the *panic-stricken*<sup>3</sup> Union soldiers time to recover from their fright. The defenses along the Potomac were strengthened. The capital city was saved.

The news of the defeat at Bull Run carried sorrow and dismay to many a Northern home. To the South it gave renewed courage and determination. To Abraham Lincoln, trusting in *Providence*<sup>4</sup> to give victory to the right, it brought grief, but not discouragement. He must *persevere*<sup>5</sup>. He must perfect the organization of the army. He must find able commanders and skillful generals for the different departments and divisions. He must see that the soldiers were properly drilled and equipped. And he, above all others, must have patience, patience, patience. "Nothing *valuable*<sup>6</sup> can be lost by taking time," he said.

## X. NEVER TOO BUSY TO HELP OTHERS

The storm of war thickened. The life of the nation was threatened on every hand. There were perils from enemies without, from foes within, from selfish *partisans*<sup>7</sup>, from unwise friends, from *ill-guided counselors*<sup>8</sup>, from *traitors*<sup>9</sup> at home and abroad. A single mistake, a single unwise movement, might *involve*<sup>10</sup> the country in hopeless ruin.

To President Lincoln alone belonged the task of directing, perfecting, *harmonizing*<sup>11</sup>, all the forces of the govern-

1. 不可解說的； 2. 遲疑； 3. 受驚的； 4. 天意； 5. 堅忍； 6. 寶貴的，有價值的； 7. 黨員； 8. 疏忽的關員； 9. 奸賊； 10. 陷於； 11. 協和。

「我們國家歷史將改變了。但是爲了幾種說不出的理由，他們遲疑，逡巡不進。這個耽擱給予驚慌的聯邦將士以復蘇的機會，沿包脫麥河的防衛加強了。國都脫險了。

勃而倫敗蹟的新聞給予許多北部人悲觀和沮喪。對南部人它使他們勇氣和決心復振。對於亞伯拉罕林肯，深信天意必以勝利給予正義者，雖感悲痛，但是並不沮喪。他必須堅忍，他必須完整部隊組織。他必須尋找有能力的元帥和才智的各部隊將領。他必須見到兵士得着充足訓練和武器。而他，在一切人之上，必須有耐性，耐性，耐性。“勿失時機，”他說。

## 十 不因幫助別人而過忙

戰爭的風暴加重了。國家的生命在各方面受到各方面的打擊。從外來的敵人，從內在的仇讎，從自私的黨員，從不智的友人，從疏忽的閣員，從國內外的奸細。發生許多的危機。一件簡單的錯誤，一樁簡單的不智行動，可使國家陷入不可救藥的紊亂。

林肯大總統一人負指揮，調整，協和政府一切勢力的重



ment. He must see to it that the lawmakers performed their duties wisely and well; he must direct the movements of the various branches of the army; he must preserve *harmony*<sup>1</sup> in his cabinet; he must keep in touch with the politicians of both parties in the North; he must know the will and *consult*<sup>2</sup> the *welfare*<sup>3</sup> of the people whose servant he was; he must encourage the weak and the timid; he must *restrain*<sup>4</sup> the *rash*<sup>5</sup> and the *over-bold*<sup>6</sup>; he must have an eye single to the preservation of the Union and the Constitution. Did ever a man have heavier burdens to bear?

But President Lincoln was still the same plain man of the people that he had always been. He dressed plainly and lived plainly. He walked where others would have ridden. He found time to look after a multitude of *details*<sup>7</sup> which another person would have passed over to a clerk. He went out to examine *fortifications*<sup>8</sup>, to test new guns, to learn the condition of the soldiers in camp.

He liked to listen to entertaining stories; he liked to repeat them to his friends. On his writing desk, among *state papers and documents*<sup>9</sup> of the gravest importance, he kept an *assortment*<sup>10</sup> of joke books and *comic almanacs*<sup>11</sup>. At one moment he would be *absorbed*<sup>12</sup> in questions of deepest *statecraft*<sup>13</sup>; at the next he would be *humming*<sup>14</sup> the *verses*<sup>15</sup> of a favorite hymn,

"Oh, why should the spirit of mortal<sup>16</sup> be proud,"

or repeating some *quotation*<sup>17</sup> that had fixed itself in his mind.

"Mortal man with face of clay,  
Here to-morrow, gone to-day,"

---

1. 和協; 2. 體念; 3. 安寧; 4. 抑制; 5. 粗暴; 6. 勇氣過盛; 7. 瑣事; 8. 堡壘; 9. 國務文書; 10. 類別; 11. 滑稽曆書; 12. 用全力; 13. 政策; 14. 吟哦; 15. 詩篇; 16. 人; 17. 引用句子。

任。他必須見到立法者全智全善以盡職責；也必須指揮軍隊各部的動作；他必須保持閣員間的和協；他必須與北部雙方的政客接觸；他必須明白人民意志體念人民安寧，他們的公僕就是他；他必須鼓勵怯弱的人；他必須抑制粗暴和勇氣過盛的人；他必須注視聯邦和憲法的保守。從來有過比他擔負更重的人嗎？

但是林肯依舊是一個同樣的平民化的簡樸的常人像向來一樣。他衣服樸素，生活樸素。別人要乘車到的地方他徒步走着。別人要託付給書記的許多瑣屑事件他抽出時間來察閱。他出去巡視炮台，試驗新的鎗械，考察軍營裏面兵士的情形。

他喜歡聽有興味的故事；他喜歡覆述給他的朋友聽。在他的寫字桌上，在國務文書的最要文件中間，他保存着滑稽笑話書的一類。一會兒他專心致意於最高深的政策；接着他就唱起讚美詩詞來，

“噢，爲什麼人的精神可以自負，”

或是背誦幾句存在他腦筋中引用的語句。

“易朽的人，泥塑的臉，

明天在即，今天已逝。”

he would *chant*<sup>1</sup>, as he walked back and forth in his *study*<sup>2</sup>, *pondering upon the vexatious problems*<sup>3</sup> which no one could solve but himself. He was never too busy to greet an old friend, or to listen to the appeals of those who were in trouble.

\*       \*       \*

There were many *desertions*<sup>4</sup> from the army, and military required that all *deserters*<sup>5</sup> should be shot. But President Lincoln's big heart had pity for the young fellows, and he pardoned so many that the army officers were alarmed.

"If a man had more than one life," he said on one occasion, "I think a little shooting would not hurt this one; but after he is once dead we cannot bring him back, no matter how sorry we may be. So the boy must be pardoned."

General Butler *protested*<sup>6</sup>. "The whole army is becoming *demoralized*<sup>7</sup>. There are desertions every day."

"How can it be stopped?" asked the President.

"By shooting every deserter," answered Butler.

"You may be right," said Mr. Lincoln; "probably are. But, Lord help me, how can I have a *butcher's day*<sup>8</sup> every Friday in the army of the Potomac?"

Once, at the very turning point of a battle, a soldier was so overcome with fear that he dropped his gun and ran from the field. His action came near throwing his whole company into confusion. After the battle he was tried by *court-martial*<sup>9</sup> and *sentenced to die*<sup>10</sup>. His friends appealed to the President.

---

1. 謳歌； 2. 默想； 3. 沉思着棘手的問題； 4. 逃亡； 5. 逃亡者； 6. 抗議； 7. 敗壞風紀； 8. 屠宰日； 9. 軍事法庭； 10. 列決死刑。

在他的默想裏踱來踱去，沉思沒有別人只有他自己能解決的棘手的問題的時候，他要吟詠着。他不因與老友歡洽或諦聽在困難中的人之呈訴而感過忙。

軍隊中有許多逃亡，軍法須將逃亡者鎗斃。但是林肯總統的仁心憐憫年輕人，他饒恕了這許多人，軍官們驚詫了。

有一次他說，“倘使一個人有不止一條生命，我想小小的一鎗不致於傷害他；但是他死了一次以後，我們不能把他帶回來了，無論我們怎麼樣後悔。所以這個孩子必須饒恕的。”

勃脫勒將軍抗議道，“全軍風紀敗壞了。每天有逃亡。”

總統問道，“怎麼可以停止此事？”

勃脫勒回答道，“鎗斃各逃亡者。”

林肯先生說，“你可以算是對的，或者是的。但是，主幫助我，我怎麼能教包脫麥軍中每個星期五是屠戮的日子呢？

有一次，在戰爭的緊急關頭，一個士兵受了驚惶拋棄兵器逃出戰場。他的舉動幾紊亂全軍秩序。戰事停止後他受軍事法庭裁判，判處死刑。他的朋友向總統呈訴。

他說，“我要命令停止執行，除非等到我的腦筋中解決了

“I will put the order for execution by,” he said, “until I can settle in my mind whether this soldier can better serve the country dead than living.”

Another case was that of a cowardly fellow for whom no one could say a good word. Not only had he run away during the heat of battle, but it was shown that he was a thief in his *regiment*<sup>1</sup> and altogether *untrustworthy*<sup>2</sup>.

“Certainly this fellow can serve his country better dead than living,” said the officer before whom he was tried.

But Mr. Lincoln had known the boy's father, a worthy man and patriot. He took the death *warrant*<sup>3</sup> and said that he thought he would put it in the *pigeonhole*<sup>4</sup> with the rest of his “*leg cases*<sup>5</sup>.” “There are cases,” he said in explanation, “that you call by that long title, ‘*Cowardice*<sup>6</sup> in the face of the enemy,’ but I call them, for short, my leg cases. If Almighty God has given a man a cowardly pair of legs, how can he help running away with them?”

The President never refused to listen to those who appealed to him for help; he was never so taken up with the mighty affairs of the nation as to forget the humble needs of the common people; he was never so overwhelmed with his own burdens and griefs that he could not speak words of sympathy and cheer to others who were sorrowful and broken-hearted. There are many examples that show how truly noble was his soul. The following letter, written to a stricken mother whom he did not know, is one:—

“Dear Madam: I have been shown in the *files*<sup>7</sup> of the War Department a statement that you are the mother of

1. 團； 2. 不可靠； 3. 執行狀； 4. 寫字檯上存放信件公文之鴿籠式架；  
5. 腿案——林肯以為逃亡者均爲了有一雙搖法的腿； 6. 搖法； 7. 檔案。

這個兵士能否爲國家死了比較活着好。”

另一事件是一個懦夫，沒有人能對他說一句好話。不單從炮火中逃跑，他還被發覺在一團中盜竊，總之是不可靠的。

“當然這個人爲國家死了比活着好，” 審判他的官員說。

但是林肯先生曾經認識這個孩子的父親，一個名人和志士。他拿了這個死刑執行狀說他要連同他的“腿案”束之高閣。他解釋道，“有的案件你稱它一個長的標題‘敵人面前的懦怯，’但是我縮短起來，稱爲我的腿案。倘使萬能的上帝給了人一對怯懦的腿，有什麼法子不帶着它們跑？”

大總統從不拒絕諦聽向他呈訴求助的人；他並不因處理國家大事而忘却大眾的卑賤需求；他並不受他自己的擔負和失敗所壓制，而不對憂傷的人說一句表同情和使人歡悅的話。有許多榜樣表現他的熱情是何等真正高尚。下面的信，寫給一個他不認識的受打擊的母親，是一個：—

“夫人，我在陸軍部的檔案裏看到一件敘述，你是光榮地死在戰場上的五個兒子的母親。我感覺我替你消解深愁鉅創

five sons who have died gloriously on the field of battle. I feel how weak and *fruitless*<sup>1</sup> must be any words of mine which should attempt to *beguile*<sup>2</sup> you from the grief of a loss so overwhelming. But I cannot *refrain*<sup>3</sup> from tendering to you the consolation that may be found in the thanks of the republic they died to save. I pray that our heavenly Father may *assuage the anguish of your bereavement*<sup>4</sup>, and leave you only the *cherished*<sup>5</sup> memory of the loved and lost, and the solemn pride that must be yours to have laid so costly a *sacrifice*<sup>6</sup> upon the *altar*<sup>7</sup> of freedom."

\* \* \*

As the months of war went on, troubles and *perplexities*<sup>8</sup> multiplied around him. He tried to bear up under them. He *cultivated*<sup>9</sup> cheerfulness and repeated the old-time jokes that had so often *relieved*<sup>10</sup> a weary hour; but they seemed to have lost their flavor. He laughed now but seldom, and never so heartily as before. *Streaks*<sup>11</sup> of gray began to appear in his hair. The wrinkles on his face and forehead deepened and multiplied. His eyes, with their far-away look, became sadder and sadder with each passing year. "I feel as though I shall never be glad any more," he said. And yet, without a *murmur*<sup>12</sup>, without one thought of himself, he stood bravely at his post, bearing the nation's burdens on his shoulders, and always hoping and working and believing that the right would prevail.

"I am confident," he said, "that the Almighty has His plans, and will work them out; and whether we see it or not, they will be the wisest and best for us."

---

1. 無用； 2. 巧避； 3. 克節； 4. 減輕喪明之痛； 5. 撫育的， 6. 犧牲；  
7. 祭壇； 8. 迷惑； 9. 養成； 10. 慰解，解除； 11. 條紋； 12. 喃喃怨言。

的文字是怎麼樣疲軟而無益。但是我不能自抑把他們以犧牲拯救的共和國之感恩深意所表的慰安呈獻給你。我祈禱我們的天父可以減輕你的喪明之痛，存給你的祇有親愛的和喪失的人所撫育的紀念，而放在自由祭壇上有價值的犧牲之莊嚴的光榮必定是你們的。”

幾個月的戰爭過去，困難和迷惑加倍地纏繞着他。他設法擔負它們起來。他尋求快樂和背誦從前解悶的笑話；但是它們好像失去它們的興味了。他現在笑着，但是永不能像從前這樣自然了。灰色的條紋開始現於他頭髮上。他臉上和額上的皺紋加深加倍了。他的眼睛，帶着遙遠的神情，一年年愁緒轉深。“我感覺我不會再快樂了，”他說。但是沒有一句自怨自艾，沒有一些顧及自身的思想，他勇敢地守住本位，把國家的重任擱在肩頭上，常常希望着，工作着，深信着正義必獲勝利。

他說，“我相信，萬能的主宰自有他的計畫。而要實現出來的；無論我們看見不着見它，這些計畫總是於我們最明最善的。”



## XI. "CONTRABAND<sup>1</sup> OF WAR"

At the beginning of the war the utmost care was taken not to interfere with slavery in any way. Slaves that escaped and came into the Union lines were promptly sent back to their masters. Some of the Union generals went so far as to make an agreement with Confederate generals that they would put down any attempts which the negroes might make at a rebellion. Slaves were still property. They were of great service to the Southern army; they were the diggers of *trenches*<sup>2</sup>, the makers of earthworks, *the haulers of supplies*<sup>3</sup>, the hardy workmen who relieved the Confederate soldiers of much of the *drudgery*<sup>4</sup> of *camp life*<sup>5</sup>.

General Butler, at Fortress Monroe, was the first Union officer to refuse to send escaping slaves back to their masters. He believed that, since they were used, like horses and *mules*<sup>6</sup>, to aid the enemy, they should be *confiscated*<sup>7</sup> just as any other war materials that might fall into his hands. "They are contraband of war," he said; and all the slaves that came to him from the enemy's camp were given their freedom. This plan seemed to be so sensible and just that Congress soon afterward passed a law providing that escaped negroes who had been employed in the Confederate army should be confiscated by the government. From that time until the close of the war every black man from the South was called a "contraband."

But there were not many who tried to escape from slavery. They had been taught by their masters that the Abolitionists of the North were savage monsters who ate all

1. 違禁品; 2. 戰壕; 3. 運輸隊; 4. 勞役; 5. 營伍生活; 6. 騾; 7. 充公。

## 十一 戰時違禁品

在戰事開始時，最大的注意是不在任何方面干涉蓄奴制。逃進聯邦軍陣線的奴隸即刻送回給他們的主人。有幾個聯邦軍將領與同盟軍立約消滅任何黑人造反的企圖。奴隸依舊是財產。他們對南部軍隊當了重要的工作；他們是挖壕者，泥匠，運輸隊，解除南部軍隊許多營伍生活的賤役的勞苦工人。

勃脫勒將軍，在孟祿礮臺，是第一個拒絕送回逃奴給他們的主人的軍官。他相信，因為他們是被利用的，像騾馬一樣幫助敵人，他們應當沒收像別的落入他手中的戰事物品一樣。“他們是戰時違禁品，”他說；而所有從敵營到他那裏來的奴隸都給予自由。這個計畫似乎是這樣靈敏公正，不久國會通過一條法律規定在同盟軍營逃亡的黑奴應由政府沒收。從那時候起一直到戰事結束各個從南部來的黑人稱為戰時違禁品。

但是沒有許多從蓄奴制逃亡的人。他們的主人告訴他們北部主張廢止黑奴者是野人，他們把捉到的黑人吃掉。任何命

the black men they could catch. Any fate would be better than to fall into their hands. Working in the trenches was hard, but being eaten by "black Abolitionists" would be a thousand times worse.

About this time General Frémont in Missouri was *behaving*<sup>1</sup> so unwisely that all the slaveholding states which had remained loyal to the Union were almost on the point of joining the Confederacy. One of his first acts was to issue a proclamation declaring that the lands of all *dis-Union men*<sup>2</sup> in Missouri should be confiscated and their slaves set free. This was going a great deal farther than the President had wished to go. It raised a storm of protests, even in the North. A whole company of Kentucky volunteers threw down their arms and went home. The Kentucky legislature refused to give any further aid to the government until the proclamation was *modified*<sup>3</sup> or *withdrawn*<sup>4</sup>. What could the President do but remove Frémont from his command and declare that his acts were without authority?

"I think to lose Kentucky is nearly the same as to lose the whole game," said he. "Kentucky gone, we cannot hold Missouri, nor, as I think, Maryland. Those all against us, and the job on our hands is too large for us. We would as well consent to separation at once, including the surrender of the capital."

The extreme Abolitionists and many other *short-sighted*<sup>5</sup> people in the North raised a great cry about this. They accused the President of trying to *befriend*<sup>6</sup> the slaveholders, and were more bitter than ever toward the "slave hound of Illinois." But Mr. Lincoln stood his ground firmly, and the border slave states remained loyal to the Union.

1. 措置； 2. 反聯邦者； 3. 改變； 4. 取消； 5. 淺見的； 6. 照顧，暗助。

運比較落到他們的手強。在壕溝裏工作是苦的，但是被“黑共和黨主張廢止蓄奴制者”吃掉要壞一千倍。

約在這個時候密蘇里佛來蒙將軍措置了這樣不智的舉動使所有忠於聯邦的蓄奴州差不多都與同盟政府聯合。他的第一個佈告提出所有反聯邦者的土地都要沒收，他們的奴隸一概解放。這比較總統的意志離得太遠了。它引起抗議風潮，雖是在北部也如此。墾塔啓的全部志願兵拋棄武器回家。墾塔啓州議會拒絕再給予政府援助，除非等這個佈告改變或取消。大總統除了把佛來蒙解除指揮權和提出他的行為越權之外還能做什麼？

他說：“我想失去墾塔啓差不多失去全局，墾塔啓去了，我們不能保持密蘇里，我想，馬里蘭，也不能了。這幾個都反對我們，我們手上的工作太繁重了。我們須要立即同意取消，包含首都的服從。”

主張廢止蓄奴制者極端派和北部別的許多目光短淺的民衆關於此事起了一次狂呼。他們譴責總統的設法照顧蓄奴者，於是對待“伊利諾斯的奴隸獵犬”格外比從前厲害了。但是林肯堅固地站住立場，邊疆蓄奴州依舊忠於聯邦。

## XII. "ONE WAR AT A TIME"

Soon after this an *incident*<sup>1</sup> happened which, but for the President's wise course, would have involved our country in a war with Great Britain. The Confederate government had appointed two Southern statesmen, Mason and Slidell, as *envoys*<sup>2</sup> to visit Europe and, if possible, secure aid from England or France. These men embarked upon a small vessel in Charleston harbor, and on a dark night passed through the blockading fleet outside and sailed to Havana. There they took passage for England on the British mail steamship Trent.

All this was made known to Captain Wilkes of the United States *sloop*<sup>3</sup> San Jacinto. On the following day he *waylaid*<sup>4</sup> the Trent in the Bahama Channel, fired a shot across her *bows*<sup>5</sup>, and brought her to. He then sent a company of marines on board who seized Mason and Slidell and *fetched*<sup>6</sup> them off to the San Jacinto. The English captain and crew protested that this was an *offense*<sup>7</sup> against the British flag under which they were sailing; but Captain Wilkes *paid no heed*<sup>8</sup> to their words. He permitted the Trent to go on her way; but he carried Mason and Slidell to Boston harbor, and they were shut up in Fort Warren as prisoners of war.

In the North there was great enthusiasm. Short-sighted men applauded the act of Captain Wilkes; and even the Secretary of the Navy gave it his *official approval*<sup>9</sup>. In the South there was also enthusiasm. The *shrewd*<sup>10</sup> leaders of the Confederacy felt sure that Great Britain would demand satisfaction for the insult that had been offered her

---

1. 意外事件; 2. 專使; 3. 小噸艦; 4. 攔截; 5. 船首; 6. 帶去; 7. 陵辱; 8. 不注意; 9. 公事的許可; 10. 明敏。

## 十二 同時只一個戰事

在這事件後又一樁意外事發生，要不是總統的明智手腕，可以使我們同大不列顛開仗。同盟政府委派兩個南部政治家，曼生和史立特而，充任專使訪問歐洲，倘使能夠去取得英格蘭或法蘭西的幫助。這兩個人人在却爾斯登登小舟，黑夜越過外面的軍艦封鎖駛到海文那。在那裏他們上英國郵船屈倫脫向英格蘭進發。

所有這件事給合衆國生極星脫船華挨克船長知道了。第二天他在倍海買運河攔劫屈倫脫，一彈穿過船首，帶到了她。他於是派了一隊水兵上船捉住曼生和史立特而帶他們到生極星脫。英吉利船主和水手抗議說這是對不列顛國旗的陵辱，他們正在它的下面駕駛；但是華挨克船長不注意這些話。他准許屈倫脫開駛；但是把曼生和史立特而帶到波士敦港，他們被囚禁在華倫瞭望臺像俘虜一樣。

北部發生狂熱。目光短淺的人們稱讚華挨克船長的舉動；就是海軍部長也批准此舉。南部也發生狂熱。同盟政府銳敏的領袖們覺得大不列顛將因在大海上攔劫她的一隻船而給予她

by *waylaying*<sup>1</sup> one of her vessels on *the high seas*<sup>2</sup>. It they could thus secure Great Britain as their *ally*<sup>3</sup>, victory would be assured. In England the sympathies of the ruling class were with the South. They wanted to see the great republic broken up and destroyed. Many of them would have been glad of any *excuse*<sup>4</sup> for declaring war upon the United States.

President Lincoln was not carried away by the foolish *clamor*<sup>5</sup> and boasting in the North. Captain Wilkes's act, far from being heroic, was both unwise and wrong, and the President did not hesitate to say so. "We fought Great Britain," he said, "for *insisting*<sup>6</sup> on the right to do *precisely*<sup>7</sup> what Captain Wilkes has done. If Great Britain shall now protest against the act, and demand the *release*<sup>8</sup> of Mason and Slidell, we must give them up, *apologize*<sup>9</sup> for the act as a *violation*<sup>10</sup> of our doctrines, and thus forever bind her over to keep the peace in relation to *neutrals*<sup>11</sup>, and so acknowledge that she has been wrong for sixty years."

And the British government did protest. More than this, they demanded that reparation and proper *apologies*<sup>12</sup> should be made within seven days; and they began to get ready for immediate war. Very wisely and without any loss of dignity on the part of our government, the President yielded. He was supported in that course by Secretary Seward, and by a few of the wisest among the leaders of the North. But from the masses of the people there was a great cry of disappointment and Mr. Lincoln and his cabinet were soundly *berated*<sup>13</sup> as cowards unfit to be intrusted with the affairs of the nation. The President

---

1. 攔阻； 2. 大洋，重洋； 3. 聯盟； 4. 口實； 5. 鼓噪； 6. 拘泥，堅執； 7. 不差分毫地； 8. 釋放； 9. 道歉； 10. 違犯； 11. 中立； 12. 道歉； 13. 斥罵，嚴責。

的恥辱將要提出要求。倘使他們能夠取得大不列顛做他們的聯盟，勝利就可保證了。英格蘭的統治階級表同情於南部。他們要看見大共和國分裂而破壞。他們中許多人願意以任何口實向合衆國宣戰。

林肯總統不爲北部愚拙的喧囂和誇大所動。華埃克船長的舉動，遠不能稱爲英雄的，是又不智和錯誤，總統毫不遲慢地這樣說。他說，“我們受大不列顛攻擊，因爲我們堅持去實行華埃克船長已經做的舉動的主權。倘使大不列顛現在要抗議這個舉動，要求釋放曼生和史立特而，我們必須釋放他們并爲違反我們主義的舉動道歉，於是永遠約束她維持和平保守中立，這樣承認她已經錯誤了六十年了。”

不列顛政府提出抗議。比這更甚的，他們要求賠償和適當的道歉并須在七天裏面實行；他們開始準備最近的戰事。很明智地和不失我們政府方面的尊嚴，總統順從了。他在進行上受國務卿修華和受北部最明智的領袖中的少數人贊助着。但是從人民大眾裏面發生大的失望的呼聲；林肯先生和他的閣員，被痛罵爲怯懦者，不配把國事信託。總統不爲輿論囂囂所動。



was unmoved by their clamor. "One war at a time," he said; and he calmly returned to the *manifold*<sup>1</sup> duties of the hour. Once more he had saved the nation from *disaster*<sup>2</sup>.

As soon as the people had taken time for *sober*<sup>3</sup> *second thought*<sup>4</sup>, they understood how wisely, and with what true *statesmanship*<sup>5</sup>, he had acted; and they *shuddered*<sup>6</sup> as they thought of what might have happened had he yielded to their wishes and not stood bravely and firmly by the right.

### XIII. LISTENING TO ADVICE

The weary months came and passed, and still the war went on. Sometimes the Union gained an advantage; sometimes the Confederacy won a victory. There was no telling when or how the dreadful conflict would end. There were calls for more soldiers and more soldiers and more soldiers. In the North, hundreds of thousands of men left *plows*<sup>7</sup>, *looms*<sup>8</sup>, *forges*<sup>9</sup>, *counting-houses*<sup>10</sup>, stores, factories, schools, and cheerfully gave up everything for the sake of a united country. As they marched to the front they sang:—

"We are springing to the call of our brothers gone before,  
Shouting the battle cry of freedom,  
And we'll fill the vacant ranks with a million freemen more,  
Shouting the battle cry of freedom.

"The Union forever, hurrah, boys, hurrah,  
Down with the *traitor*<sup>11</sup> and up with the stars,  
While we *rally*<sup>12</sup> round the flag, boys, rally once again,  
Shouting the battle cry of freedom."

In the South there was a still more general *outpouring*<sup>13</sup>. First all the *able-bodied men*<sup>14</sup>, and finally the boys above

1. 多種; 2. 災; 3. 鎮靜; 4. 熟思後再一想; 5. 政治家風度; 6. 戰慄; 7. 犁; 8. 機杼; 9. 鑄鐵爐; 10. 帳房; 11. 叛徒; 12. 集合; 13. 傾瀉; 14. 壯丁。

“一時一次戰事，”他說；他安閒地回去從事當時繁瑣的公務了。他又一次救國家於危難之中。

民衆們過了相當時期，鎮靜的熟思後再想一想，他們知道他幹得怎麼樣機智，帶着怎麼樣真心的政治風度；他們想起倘使他服從了他們的意見而不堅定勇敢站住正義的立場，所遭遇的要是什麼情形，不禁戰慄了。

### 十三 諦聽忠告

悲痛的月份來往着，戰事依舊進行。有時候合衆軍得利；有時候同盟軍獲勝。沒有人講到可怕的戰事什麼時候或怎麼樣停止。一批兵召集了再一批，再一批。在北部，成千成百的人離開了犁鋤，機杼，熔爐，帳房，商店，工廠，學校，愉快地捐棄一切爲了合衆國家。他們向前出發的時候唱着：——

“我們響起以歷先行的我們的弟兄們的叫喊，  
爲自由戰爭高呼，  
而我們將增加百萬自由健兒填補隊伍空額，  
爲自由戰爭高呼。

“聯邦萬歲，孩子們，萬歲，  
打倒叛逆樹起星旗，  
當我們集合起來環繞國徽時，孩子們，再集合一次，  
爲自由戰爭高呼。”

在南部一般傾瀉熱情的更甚。先是壯丁，最後十六歲以上

sixteen, and the grandfathers, went out to defend their homes and the states of their section against what they believed were the *aggressions*<sup>1</sup> of the North. On the great plantations, once so *prosperous*<sup>2</sup>, few were left save the women and children and slaves. And the Southern soldiers had also their rallying song:—

“Southrons, hear your country coll you!  
 Up, lest worse than death befall you!  
 To arms! to arms! to arms, in Dixie!  
 Lo! all the *beacon fires*<sup>3</sup> are lighted—  
 Let all hearts be now united!  
 To arms! to arms! to arms, in Dixie!  
 “Advance the flag of Dixie!  
 Hurrah! hurrah!  
 For Dixie's land we take our stand,  
 And live or die for Dixie.  
 To arms! to arms!  
 And conquer peace for Dixie!  
 To arms! to arms!  
 And conquer peace for Dixie!”

To President Lincoln, every passing day brought new *perplexities*<sup>4</sup>, every hour added something to the *tremendous burden*<sup>5</sup> which he alone must carry. Generals upon whom he had depended for victory proved *incompetent*<sup>6</sup>; they had to be removed, and abler commanders selected to take their places. Changes were made in the cabinet. Men from whom he should have received sympathy and aid proved to be *stumbling blocks*<sup>7</sup> in his way.

The people became impatient and discontented. They could not understand why the war should continue so long, and yet so little be accomplished. Money was scarce, taxes were burdensome, food and clothing were very

1. 侵略; 2. 繁榮; 3. 烽火; 4. 疑難; 5. 重任; 6. 力不勝任; 7. 使人顛蹶之障礙物。

的孩子，還有祖父們，出去保衛他們的家和本區域中的各州，以防止他們所相信的北部人的侵略。在大塊的殖民地，一度雖曾這樣繁榮過，祇存稀少的人口，除了婦孺和奴隸以外。南部的士兵也有他們合唱的歌：——

“南方人，聽你們的國家號召你們！  
起來，否則比死還壞的惡運將降臨到你們身上！  
武裝起來！武裝起來！武裝起來，在狄克西！  
舉！烽火一齊昇起來了——  
讓人心一齊團結起來！  
武裝起來！武裝起來！武裝起來，在狄克西！”

“推進狄克西的旗幟！  
萬歲！萬歲！  
爲了狄克西的國土我們取得立足地，  
爲狄克西而生死。  
武裝起來！武裝起來！  
爲狄克西克敵以求和平！  
武裝起來！武裝起來！  
爲狄克西克敵以求和平！”

對林肯總統，每過去一天添上新的疑難，每一個鐘點增加他一個人擔當的重任。他所賴以獲取勝利的將領證明才不勝任，他們應當調開，而能力較勝的人應當委任以代他們的位置。內閣有所更迭。應當向他表同情和幫助他的人證明爲他行程中的使人顛蹶之阻礙物。

民衆亦爲不耐和不滿，他們不明白爲什麼戰事要這樣延長而成功這樣少。金錢缺乏，賦稅繁重，衣食所需異常昂貴，工

costly, factories were closed, the distress that always accompanies war was becoming more general every day. And there were those who blamed Abraham Lincoln for everything; there were thousands of men in the North who thought that they themselves were better able to manage the affairs of the nation than was the President. And then there sprang up a peace party, composed of men who wanted to end the war at any price—sympathizers with the South, disappointed politicians, cowards, Northern “*doughfaces*,<sup>1</sup>” and a few *well-meaning*<sup>2</sup>, but short-sighted patriots.

But the President went steadily forward in the course which he believed to be safest and wisest. He listened to the advice of others, even when offered in an unfriendly spirit; he bore patiently with the complaints which came to his ears; he was *lenient*<sup>3</sup> and *forbearing*<sup>4</sup> even with those who abused him openly. The consciousness that he was right gave him strength.

There were men in the North who insisted that the war was being carried on for the purpose of destroying slavery; they called the Union soldiers “*abolition hirelings*,”<sup>5</sup> and “Lincoln’s dogs;” they did all that they could to assist the South. On the other hand, there were Abolitionists who insisted that the war was being delayed for the purpose of befriending the slaveholders; they called the President “a supporter of slavery;” they declared that the war was a failure, and that the Confederate states should be given their independence.

Very gradually, however, a change was taking place in the minds of patriotic men who had hitherto insisted that

1. 軟骨漢, 懦夫(美國); 2. 善意的; 3. 寬恕; 4. 忍耐; 5. 強以制的種族。

廠關閉，常常跟着戰爭來的不幸事件一天天普遍起來了。有些人責備林肯各種措施；成千的北部人以爲他們治理國家可以比總統賢能些。於是和平派產生了，包含願意以任何條件結束戰事的人——與南部表同情的人，失意政客，怯懦者，北部的“懦夫，”還有少數善意的，但是短視的愛國份子。

但是林肯堅毅地遵循着他信爲最安全，最明智的行程前進。他諦聽別人的忠告，雖是出之以不友誼的態度；他耐性地容忍進他耳中的申訴；他就是對公然侮辱他的人也是寬恕而忍耐。認爲他是正當的這個良心給予他力量。

在北方，有人堅信戰爭是以摧毀蓄奴制爲目的而進行的，他們稱聯邦士兵爲“廢止蓄奴制的雇傭，”和“林肯的鷹犬；他們幫助南部人。在另一方面，也有主張廢止蓄奴制者，堅信戰事延長是以照顧蓄奴者爲目的；他們稱大總統爲“蓄奴制的贊助者；”他們宣言戰事是一種失敗，而同盟諸州應當給予獨立。

但是很漸漸地，一種變動發生於向來堅信蓄奴制不應干涉的愛國份子之腦海。沒有人觀察到這個變動比較大總統更

slavery should not be *molested*<sup>1</sup>.— No one observed this change more quickly, or with greater satisfaction, than the President. As fast as he thought the country was ready for it, he moved toward what he had all along believed must come—*emancipation*<sup>2</sup>. First, the “contrabands” were taken care of; then a law was passed to permit these contrabands to enlist in the Union army; then a few black regiments were formed to be commanded by white officers; then Congress adopted a resolution in favor of the gradual emancipation of slaves, their owners to be paid for them out of the United States treasury.

But there were some who thought that the President was not moving fast enough; they insisted that he must put an end to slavery at once, no matter what the *consequences*<sup>3</sup> might be. To these the President made answer in a letter which he sent to Horace Greeley. It was printed in the *New York Tribune*<sup>4</sup>:—

“My *paramount*<sup>5</sup> object,” he wrote, “is to save the Union, and not either to save or destroy slavery:

“If I could save the Union without freeing any slave, I would do it; if I could save it by freeing all the slaves, I would do it; and if I could save it by freeing some and leaving others alone, I would also do that.

“What I do about slavery and the colored race, I do because I believe it helps to save this Union; and what I forbear, I forbear because I do not believe it would help to save the Union.

“I shall do less whenever I shall believe what I am doing hurts the cause; and I shall do more whenever I believe doing more will help the cause.

---

1. 干涉; 2. 解放; 3. 結果; 4. 紐約論壇, 報紙名; 5. 無上的。

快些，更滿意些。他想到國家準備着了，他轉向到他完全認為必要的舉動——解放。初步，“戰事違禁品”受監視着；於是准許這些戰事違禁品編入隊伍的法律通過了；於是少數黑人團組成由白人軍官指揮着；國會通過贊助奴隸逐步解放的決議；他們的主人給予他們工資從合衆國國庫付出。

但是有人以為大總統轉變得不夠快；他們堅執他必須立即取消蓄奴制，無論他的結果會怎樣。對於這些總統書面答復送到好蘭格里連。它刊入紐約講座。

他寫“我無上的目的，是拯救聯邦，而並非要救濟或破壞蓄奴制。

“如果我不給予任何奴隸自由，可以救國，我要那樣做；如果我給予奴隸自由，可以救國，我要那樣做；並且如果我給予幾個自由而獨遺棄其餘的可以救國，我也要那樣做。

“我所行的關於蓄奴制和有色人種的舉措，是因為信爲它能幫助救國而行的；而我所禁的，是因為信爲它不足以救國而禁的。

“無論在什麼時候我信爲足以有損於這主張的，我要少做些；而我信爲足以更加有助於這主張的，我要多做些。



“I shall try to correct errors when shown to be errors, and I shall adopt new views so fast as they shall appear to be true views.

“I have here stated my purpose according to my views of official duty, and I intend no *modification*<sup>1</sup> of my *oft-expressed*<sup>2</sup> personal wish that all men everywhere could be free.”

Some weeks later a number of *clergymen*<sup>3</sup> from Chicago called upon the President and *presented a petition*<sup>4</sup> for the immediate emancipation of all the slaves in the country. Mr. Lincoln answered them in his usual *common-sense*<sup>5</sup> way.

“What good would a *proclamation*<sup>6</sup> of emancipation from me do, especially as we are now situated? . . . Would my word free the slaves, when I cannot even enforce the Constitution in the rebel states? Is there a single court, or *magistrate*<sup>7</sup>, or *individual*<sup>8</sup> that would be influenced by it there? And what reason is there to think it would have any greater effect upon the slaves than the late law of Congress, which I approved, and which offers protection and freedom to the slaves of rebel masters who come within our lines? Yet I cannot learn that the law has caused a single slave to come over to us. . . .

“Do not misunderstand me because I have mentioned these *objections*<sup>9</sup>. They indicate the difficulties that have thus far prevented my action in some such way as you desire.

“I have not decided against a proclamation of liberty to the slaves, but hold the matter under *advisement*<sup>10</sup>. And I can assure you that the subject is on my mind, by day and

---

1. 改變； 2. 屢次發表； 3. 牧師； 4. 遞稟帖； 5. 常識； 6. 佈告； 7. 官長； 8. 個人； 9. 異議； 10. 審慎考慮。

“我有過則改，見善則從。

“我依照我職務上的觀察說明了我的主張，我無意更改我常常發表的凡人在各處應獲自由的個人意見。”

幾個星期以後多數芝加哥來的牧師們訪問大總統呈請立即實行國內奴隸的解放。林肯先生以平凡的有見地的態度答覆他們。

“自我發布解放佈告，能有什麼益處，愈其在目前環境之下？我不能實行這條憲法在反叛的諸州以內，我的話能否給予奴隸自由，有沒有一個法庭，官兵，或是個人能夠在那邊行使權力？有什麼理由可以信為比較最近我批准的以自由給予來到我們界綫裏邊的反叛主人的奴隸的國會法律，有更大的效果？而我沒有聽見過這條法律能使一個奴隸也走到我們這邊來。

“不要爲了我提出異議而誤會我。他們指明出在你們所希望的方法中給我行動以極大阻力的困難。

“我沒有反對予奴隸自由佈告的主張，但是把這幾件事置於審慎考慮之下。而我可以向你們保證此事我夙夜在念，比任

night, more than any other. Whatever shall appear to be God's will, I will do."

The war still *lagged*<sup>1</sup>, and few besides Lincoln could see that any real progress had been made. Congress appointed a Committee on the Conduct of the War which appeared to do nothing but stand in the President's way. The peace party declared that only the worst of *tyrants*<sup>2</sup> would attempt to force eight millions of people to submit to his government. The members of the cabinet could not agree. People became more and more impatient; and some, whom nothing could have satisfied, cried out, "Oh, that we had a *Cromwell*<sup>3</sup> to lead us!"

But President Lincoln, *sublime*<sup>4</sup> and unmoved, pursued the course which his conscience and good judgment told him was right. "Whatever shall appear to be God's will, I will do."

#### XIV. NEARING THE GREAT ISSUE

One day in *midsummer*<sup>5</sup>, the President called a meeting of the cabinet. Not one of the members knew why they had been called. When all were seated, Mr. 1862 Lincoln took up his favorite joke book, "Artemus Ward—His Book." He opened the volume and read to the dignified gentlemen around him a whole chapter of *well-worn*<sup>6</sup> jokes and *droll conceits*<sup>7</sup>. He had read it dozens of time before, but now he read it as though it were entirely new to him. He laughed at every *witty*<sup>8</sup> thought. His *merriment*<sup>9</sup> was so *boyish*<sup>10</sup>, so easily called forth, that his grave listener were more pained than amused. They

1. 遲滯; 2. 暴主; 3. 克林蒙爾, (1599--1658) 英革命時爲共和政府執政, 行中央集權制; 4. 高; 5. 仲夏; 6. 熟習; 7. 滑稽奇想; 8. 詼諧; 9. 笑容; 10. 稚氣。

何人都厲害。凡屬表明爲上帝的意旨，我必遵行。

戰事遲滯如故，林肯以外祇有少數人能看見已經得到實在的進步。議會推定戰事委員會，所表現的祇站在大總統一方面沒有別的事做。和平派宣言霸主中最厲害的纔企圖強迫八百萬人民屈服於他統治之下。閣員不能表同意。民衆越發忍耐不住了；有的人，沒有什麼能滿意他的，喊出，“噢，我們有了一個克林威爾領導着我們！”

但是林肯，卓立而不搖，進行他的良知和果斷昭示爲正義之途。“凡屬表明爲上章的意旨，我必遵行。”

#### 十四 將近偉大的佈告

在仲夏的一天，大總統召集內閣會議。沒有一個閣員知道他們爲什麼召集。衆人就座後，林肯先生拿着他愛讀的笑林，“亞太廢斯華特——他的書。”他翻開書本讀給圍繞他的莊嚴

began to wonder whether the President had not lost his mind.

He finished the chapter. He closed the book and returned it to its place. Then his whole manner, the tone of his voice, the *glance*<sup>1</sup> of his eye, the expression of his



Reading the Proclamation

face, changed in a moment. Every man in the room felt *awed*<sup>2</sup> as in the presence of a superior *intelligence*<sup>3</sup>.

The President then informed the cabinet that he had a very important matter to lay before them. He did not expect to ask their advice, for he had fully made up his mind in regard to it. He was willing, however, to listen to suggestions. "Things have gone on, *from bad to worse*<sup>4</sup>,

1. 閃光, 一瞥; 2. 畏懼; 3. 消息, 新聞; 4. 每况愈下。

的貴人們聽全章熟爛的笑話和滑稽的奇想。他已經讀過幾次，但是現在他讀着好像是新鮮的。他好笑各個談諧的思想。他的笑容這樣稚氣，這樣容易用盡全力，他的莊嚴的諦聽者祇覺慘苦不覺愉悅。他們開始奇異大總統有沒有失去他的意志。

他讀完了這一章。他闔上書本歸到原位。於是他的全副態度，他的音調，他的視線，他的表情，一霎時變了。在屋子裏的各人覺得驚奇，似乎特別的新聞在這裏了。

大總統於是告訴內閣他有一件很緊要的事情放到他們的面前。他不希望得他們的忠告，因為他已經深思熟慮過了。但是他願意諦聽建議。“事情已在進行着，每況愈下，除非等到我感覺我們已經達到，我們已在進行中的計畫的線索的末端。我們必須變換我們策略，否則全局失敗。我現在決定解放政策

until I feel that we have about reached the end of our rope on the plan of *operations*<sup>1</sup> we have been *pursuing*<sup>2</sup>. We must change our *tactics*<sup>3</sup>, or lose the game. I am now determined upon the adoption of the policy of emancipation; and I have prepared the *draft*<sup>4</sup> of a proclamation to which I ask you to listen."

He read the proclamation. The *secretaries*<sup>5</sup> listened in silence. It proclaimed freedom to all the slaves within those parts of the South which were at that time controlled by the Confederate government.

A few slight *alterations*<sup>6</sup> were made. Then Secretary Seward suggested that it would not be wise to issue it just then, when the Union armies appeared to be so pressed; he feared that it would be viewed "as the last measure of an exhausted government, a cry for help;" he dreaded that it would be considered "as our last *shriek*<sup>7</sup> on the *retreat*<sup>8</sup>." Would it not be better to wait until the Union had gained some decisive victory, and then in the moment of success make it known to the world?

The President saw the wisdom of the suggestion. He laid the proclamation aside, and waited.

## XV. ANTIETAM AND EMANCIPATION

Only a few weeks later, General Lee, at the head of the Confederate army of Virginia, crossed the Potomac for the purpose of invading the North. Then it was that President Lincoln resolved fully upon the course he would pursue. He made a solemn *vow*<sup>9</sup> that if Lee should be driven back he would "*crow*<sup>10</sup> the result by the declaration

---

1. 工作; 2. 進行; 3. 策略, 戰術; 4. 草稿; 5. 閣員, 秘書; 6. 修改;  
7. 驚呼; 8. 退却; 9. 誓言; 10. 完成。

的施行；我已經準備了一篇佈告，稿子請你們諦聽。”

他宣讀這篇佈告，閣員們靜聽着。它宣告全部，那時候在  
同盟軍統治下南方各部奴隸的自由，詞句略加修改。於是國務  
卿修華建議在這聯邦軍這樣被壓迫的時候公布是不智的；他  
怕“它將被視為垂危的政府之最後設施，乞救的呼號；”他懼  
“它將認為退卻的最後叫喊。”它要不要等到聯邦得決定的勝  
利，於是成功的一剎那得以為舉世所知？

大總統見到這個建議的明慧。他把佈告放到一邊，等着。

## 十五 安鐵打和解放

祇有幾個星期以後，李將軍，率領味吉尼亞同盟軍，越過  
包脫麥，以侵入北部為目的。於是事實是那樣，林肯大總統完  
全決定他要進行的程序。他立了一個莊嚴的誓，如果李驅逐回



of freedom to the slaves.”

On the 17th of September the great battle of Antietam was fought. The Confederate army was defeated. It was driven back across the Potomac. The intended invasion of the North ended in disaster.

President Lincoln was at the *Soldiers' Home*<sup>1</sup>, near Washington, when he heard the news. He determined to wait no longer. He sat down at once, and with great care wrote a second draft of the proclamation. Here and there he made a correction; here and there he added a necessary word or *erased*<sup>2</sup> one that seemed out of place. When the work was finished, he hastened back to the city and called the cabinet together to listen a second time to what he had written. He alone was the author of the proclamation; he alone would be *responsible*<sup>3</sup> for whatever might be its *outcome*<sup>4</sup>. “I must do the best I can,” he said, “and bear the responsibility of taking the course which I feel I ought to take.”

On Monday, the 22d of September, just five days after the battle of Antietam, the proclamation was published to the world.

“I, Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States of America, and *Commander-in-chief*<sup>5</sup> of the army and navy *thereof*<sup>6</sup>, do *hereby*<sup>7</sup> proclaim and declare that . . . on the first day of January, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-three, all persons held as slaves within any state, or *designated*<sup>8</sup> part of a state, the people *whereof*<sup>9</sup> shall then be in rebellion against the United States, shall be then, *thenceforward*<sup>10</sup>, and forever

1. 強兵院； 2. 刪除； 3. 負責的， 4. 結果； 5. 大元帥； 6. 以此； 7. 因此，由此； 8. 指定的； 9. 關於其人，關於其事； 10. 自今以後。

去以後，他要“以對奴隸的自由宣告完成勝利。”

九月十七日，安鐵打大戰交仗。同盟軍敗績，它被逐過包脫麥後退。北部的侵入企圖以慘敗結束。

林肯大總統聽見這個消息的時候正在華盛頓附近廢兵院中。他決計不再等候了。他立刻坐下，以深切的注意寫出佈告的第二次草稿。他前後作一修改；他前後加以增損。這個工作做完以後，他立即回城召集閣員第二次諦聽他寫的稿件。他一個人是佈告的作者；他一個人負佈告結果的責任。他說，“我必須盡力做去，而擔負我所認為應負的責任。”

星期一，九月二十二日，恰在安鐵打戰事以後，這個佈告公佈於世界。

“我，亞伯拉罕林肯，美利堅合衆國大總統，海陸軍大元帥，今宣告曰……在我主降生一千八百六十有三年元旦，凡任何州內及州內指定地點之人類視為奴隸者，所論及者為向在合衆國家叛逆各地之人民，而今而後，將永久自由。”那

free." That was the *gist*<sup>1</sup> and *substance*<sup>2</sup> of the proclamation. It still left the door open for any of the seceded states to return to the Union and thereby save slavery within its limits.

This proclamation was only a *preliminary*<sup>3</sup> one. The final proclamation was issued on New Year's Day, 1863. Then it was that the great act of emancipation was completed. "By *virtue*<sup>4</sup> of the power in me *vested*<sup>5</sup> as Commander-in-chief . . . in time of actual armed rebellion against the authority and government of the United States, and as a fit and necessary war measure, . . . I do order and declare that all persons held as slaves within" certain designated states and parts of states "are, and henceforward shall be, free; and that the *Executive Government*<sup>6</sup> of the United States, including the military and naval authorities thereof, will recognize and maintain the freedom of said persons."

Had the proclamation been made six months earlier, it is probable that the people would not have approved of it at all. But the best men in the North had, little by little, been brought to the belief that the Union could never be restored until the cause of disunion had been removed. Thousands of persons, also, had become so tired of the war and so tired of supporting an institution which produced only *discord*<sup>7</sup> and disaster, that they were ready to welcome anything that would promise *relief*<sup>8</sup>.

There were *extremists*<sup>9</sup>, however, who cried out against the President, and tried to prove that he had done a very wrong thing. Dissatisfied politicians in the North spoke

---

1. 要點; 2. 梗概; 3. 開端; 4. 權力; 5. 授權, 賦與; 6. 行政政府;  
7. 不諧; 8. 救濟; 9. 極端派。

是佈告的要點和梗概。它依舊開着獨立各州走向聯邦的門而因此解救蓄奴制在它的領域中。

這個佈告祇是一個開端，最後的佈告在 1863 年新年中發表。於是解放的大運動完成。“授權本人爲大元帥……在實際的武裝反抗合衆國政府及其當局，爲適應戰爭計畫，……本人命令并佈告凡州內或指定之州內及州之一部，人類視爲奴隸者，而今而後，將要自由；而合衆國行政政府，海陸軍有司由是，將承認及建立所論及之人類之自由。”

倘使這個佈告發表在六個月以前，人民或者完全不會贊成的。但是北部最良善的人漸漸生出合衆國不能恢復除非等到分離的原因去掉以後的信念。成千萬的人這樣厭倦戰爭和這樣厭倦支撐祇發生不協及不幸的制度，他們準備歡迎任何可以保證救濟的方法。

但是有的極端派，發言反對總統，企圖證明他已經造成極大錯誤。北部不滿意的政治家勇敢地 and 激烈地攻擊這個佈告。

boldly and bitterly against the proclamation.

"The war is no longer a war for the Union," they cried. "It is an abolition war—a war for the niggers!"

On the other hand, there were Abolitionists who were equally dissatisfied and bitter. Nothing that the President had done or could do was pleasing to them.

"He has been forced into this course," said some.

"He is not sincere," said others, who had *persisted*<sup>1</sup> in calling him "the slave hound of Illinois."

"He has not done enough; he is still *truckling*<sup>2</sup> to the slave power," said the extremists.

The *dissatisfaction*<sup>3</sup> was indeed quite general. If a vote had been taken at that time, it is possible that a majority in many of the free states would have cast their ballots against the proclamation. One branch of the Republican party, however, supported the President; the officers and soldiers in the army were enthusiastic in praising his course; Congress *approved*<sup>4</sup> of what he had done. He himself was *conscious*<sup>5</sup> that he had done the right thing, at the right time, and in the right way. What had he to fear?

The proclamation did not promise freedom to all the slaves in the South. In the border states of Delaware, Maryland, West Virginia, Kentucky, and Missouri slavery was not molested by it. There were also several *counties*<sup>6</sup> and towns in some of the seceded states that were loyal to the Union; and all such places were left "precisely as though the proclamation had not been made."

It was the beginning, however, of the end of slavery; and before many months had passed everybody saw clearly that such was the fact. "In the light of history we can

1. 堅持; 2. 獻媚; 3. 不滿論調; 4. 贊成, 批准; 5. 自覺的; 6. 州。

他們喊道，“這個戰事不再是爲聯邦的戰事，它是一個廢止蓄奴戰爭——爲黑奴的戰爭！”

在另一方面，也有主張廢止黑奴者同樣的激烈和不滿。大總統所行的沒有能使他們喜歡的。

“他是被迫而踏進行程的，”有幾個人說。

“他不誠意的，”另外幾個人說，他們堅持稱他爲“伊利諾斯獵奴隸的犬。”

“他沒有做夠哩；他依舊在獻媚於蓄奴權。”極端派說。

這樣的不滿論調實在是很普通的。倘使那時候舉行一次投票，許多自由州的大多數人民要對佈告投反對票。但是共和黨的一部分擁護着大總統；軍官和兵士們熱誠讚美他的方針；議會贊成他所做的行爲。他自己明覺他做的正當行爲，在正當的時間，正當的方法。他怕什麼？

這個佈告並不准許南部全體奴隸自由。在達來華，馬里蘭，西味吉尼亞，墾塔啓，和密蘇里蓄奴制不受干涉。也有幾個在有的獨立州內的縣市服從聯邦的；所有這些地方正確地保留着“好像佈告沒有發佈。”

但它是蓄奴結束的開始；許多月過去以前各人清楚地看

see that by this *edict*<sup>1</sup> Mr. Lincoln gave slavery its *vital thrust*<sup>2</sup>, its *mortal doom*<sup>3</sup>. It was the word of decision, the judgment without appeal, the sentence of doom.”

The end of slavery in the United States came on the last day of January, 1865. On that day Congress adopted the *Thirteenth Amendment*<sup>4</sup> to the Constitution, declaring that “neither slavery nor *involuntary servitude*<sup>5</sup>, except as a punishment for crime, . . . shall exist within the United States, or any place subject their *jurisdiction*<sup>6</sup>.”

More than four millions of bondmen were thus made free.

## XVI. THE TIDE<sup>7</sup> TURNS

To the North the skies began to grow brighter. The Union armies were gaining ground. To-day the might suffer defeat, but to-morrow they would win a victory that would more than make up for the loss. The resources of the Confederate states were beginning to fail.

General Ulysses S. Grant had gained many important victories in the Southwest. Nothing seemed impossible to him. He *besieged*<sup>8</sup> Vicksburg, the last but one of the Confederate *strongholds*<sup>9</sup> on the Mississippi. For nearly five months he tried by every possible expedient to capture the *well-fortified*<sup>10</sup> place. At length, on the 4th of July, the long siege was brought to an end. The Southern soldiers marched out of the city which they had so long defended. They silently *stacked their arms*<sup>11</sup> before the *fortifications*<sup>12</sup>, while the Northern soldiers looked on as silently, and yet *etated*<sup>13</sup> with their *long-delayed*<sup>14</sup> victory.

---

1. 布告； 2. 致命打擊； 3. 道德制裁； 4. 十三條修正案； 5. 勉強服從；  
6. 管轄權，裁判權； 7. 潮流； 8. 圍攻； 9. 砲台； 10. 防禦堅固的； 11. 架  
槍； 12. 壕溝； 13. 使得意； 14. 延長多時。

出這是事實。在歷史的光明中我們能見到由這個佈告林肯先生給予蓄奴制以制命打擊和道德制裁。它是斷定的辭句，無控訴的判決書，定罪的判語。

在合衆國內，蓄奴制的結束在 1865 年正月末日。在那一天國會通過對憲法的第十三條修正案，宣佈“蓄奴制或勉強的服役，除了刑律的懲罰，不得存在於合衆國內或在其管轄權所及之地。”

四百萬以上被綑綁的人們因此而獲得自由。

## 十六 轉機

在北部，天空開始發亮了。聯邦軍逐漸進展。今天他們或許打敗仗，但是明天就會獲勝足以補償損失而有餘。同盟軍的資源開始缺乏了。

俞立先格倫將軍曾在西部得好幾次重要勝利。他似乎無所不能。他圍攻威克斯堡，同盟軍在密士失必河上的最後要塞。他設各種方法以奪取這個防禦堅固的地方。最後，七月四



The Mississippi River, in its entire length, was at last in the possession of the Union. The Confederacy was cut in two.

That same memorable 4th of July found the Confederate army in the East crushed, defeated, and retreating before the forces of the Union. General Lee had made a second attempt to carry the war into the North. He had advanced into Pennsylvania. At Gettysburg the



Ulysses S. Grant

invaders attacked the forces of the Union that were drawn up to repel them. During the first three days in July the battle *raged*<sup>1</sup> fearfully. The *slaughter*<sup>2</sup> was dreadful. More than twenty thousand Union soldiers were killed or wounded. The loss on the side of the Confederates was almost as great—it was even greater, for they

had fewer reserves, and their resources were fast being exhausted. The third day told the tale. The Southerners were beaten, driven back. Those who *survived*<sup>3</sup> retired slowly, making their way *sullenly*<sup>4</sup> back to Virginia. General Meade, commanding the Union army, *followed in their wake*<sup>5</sup>; but the struggle at Gettysburg had been so fearful that he *cautiously refrained*<sup>6</sup> from *provoking*<sup>7</sup> another.

The tide had turned at last. From the day of the

1. 猖獗; 2. 屠殺; 3. 後退者; 4. 悻悻地; 5. 跟蹤; 6. 小心遏制; 7. 惹起。

日，長期的圍攻結束。南部軍士退出久守的城。他們默然在防禦工事前面搭起鎗架，北部軍雖然看着不做聲，但是因得了延遲多時的勝利傲然自得。密士失必河全部最後卒為聯邦軍佔有，同盟軍被截為二。

在同一可紀念的七月四日，看到在東方的同盟軍敗績，潰散，在聯邦軍前頭退卻。李將軍乃作第二次向北部的進攻嘗試。他前進到本薛佛尼亞。在格資堡犯境者遭過來抵擋他們的聯邦軍攻擊。在開始的三天中戰事進行劇烈。二萬以上的聯邦軍士傷亡。同盟軍方面損失幾同樣慘重——而且還大些，因為他們祇有少數殘餘，資源垂盡了。

第三天新聞傳出來。南部軍被戰敗逐回。獲免的殘軍慢慢地後退，悻悻回味吉尼亞。米特將軍，指揮聯邦軍，跟蹤前進；但是因格資堡戰事打得這樣慘烈，使他小心地抑制着惹起另一次戰事。

*repulse*<sup>1</sup> at Gettysburg the cause of the Confederacy was hopeless.

President Lincoln was much disappointed because General Meade did not follow up his victory and deal a still more crushing blow to the Confederates. It would have ended the war, he thought.

"My dear general," he wrote to Meade, "I do not believe you *appreciate*<sup>2</sup> the *magnitude*<sup>3</sup> of the misfortune *involved in*<sup>4</sup> Lee's escape. He was within your easy grasp, and to close upon him would, in connection with your late successes, have ended the war. As it is, the war will be *prolonged indefinitely*<sup>5</sup>."

And it was prolonged, but always *with the odds*<sup>6</sup> against the South.

Ten days after these events, the President issued a proclamation, setting apart the 6th day of August as a day of national *thanksgiving*<sup>7</sup>. He called upon all loyal people everywhere to observe the day and "to *render*<sup>8</sup> the *homage*<sup>9</sup> due to the *Divine majesty*<sup>10</sup> for the wonderful things. He has done in the nation's *behalf*<sup>11</sup>."

In October the President issued another proclamation of similar import, setting apart the last Thursday in November as a day in which all the people of the land should unite in giving thanks to God for all His *mercies*<sup>12</sup>. Thus was instituted the Thanksgiving Day—that national November *festival*<sup>13</sup>—so dear to all Americans. Every year, save one, since that memorable 1863, the President of the United States, following the example of Lincoln, has sent forth a proclamation designating the

---

1. 逐回； 2. 覺察； 3. 重大； 4. 陷於； 5. 無限制延長； 6. 佔優勢； 7. 感恩節； 8. 報答； 9. 敬神之禮； 10. 上帝； 11. 幫助； 12. 仁慈； 13. 節日。

最後戰事轉機。在格資堡遭擊退以後，同盟軍的前進絕望了。

林肯大總統因為米特將軍不緊跟着勝利給予同盟軍更大的痛擊感覺失望。它可以結束戰事，他想。

他寫給米特道，“將軍，我不以為你覺察李氏逃遁所發生的不幸之重大。他已在你的掌握之中，跟蹤追着他，隨了你的成功，可以結束戰事。現在情形，戰事將無限制延長了。”

戰事延長下去，但是南軍每遭不利。（聯邦軍佔優勢）

事後十天，大總統發出佈告，定八月六日為全國感恩節。他召集全體各地人民注意這一日以敬神之禮報答皇天所施於國家的奇蹟。

十月，大總統發表另一張同樣重要的佈告，規定十一月最後的一個星期四國土內的人民應當聯合起來感謝上帝的全恩。從此就定出感恩節日——全國的十一月節日——這樣親切於全體美利堅人士。每年，除一年外，自值得注意的 1863 年以後，合衆國大總統，隨着林肯的榜樣，發出佈告指定十一月最後一個星期四為以感恩和讚美特別紀念上帝慈恩的日子，

last Thursday in November as the day in which God's *bounties*<sup>1</sup> are to be especially remembered with thanksgiving and praise.

\* \* \*

The battlefield of Gettysburg was set apart as a great burying ground, or national *cemetery*<sup>2</sup>, for the soldiers who had lost their lives in the service of their country. On the 19th of November the cemetery was *dedicated*<sup>3</sup> with very solemn and impressive *ceremonies*<sup>4</sup>. The great men of the nation were there. Edward Everett, the most accomplished public speaker of that time, delivered a long and scholarly oration. It was expected that the President would also give an *appropriate*<sup>5</sup> and perhaps lengthy address. He arose at the proper moment and drew from his hat a half-sheet of *foolscap*<sup>6</sup>, on which he had written a *memorandum*<sup>7</sup> of that which he intended to say. The speech was brief:—

“*Fourscore*<sup>8</sup> and seven years ago our fathers brought forth on this *continent*<sup>9</sup> a new nation, *conceived*<sup>10</sup> in liberty, and dedicated to the *proposition*<sup>11</sup> that all men are *created equal*<sup>12</sup>.”

“Now we are engaged in a great civil war, testing whether that nation, or any nation so conceived and so dedicated, can long endure. We are met on a great battlefield of that war. We have come to dedicate a portion of that field as a final resting-place for those who here gave their lives that that nation might live. It is altogether fitting and proper that we should do this.

“But in a larger sense, we cannot dedicate—we cannot *consecrate*<sup>13</sup>—we cannot *hallow*<sup>14</sup>—this ground. The brave

---

1. 大恩；2. 墳地；3. 供奉；4. 禮儀；5. 合式的；6. 寫字紙；7. 備忘錄；8. 八十；9. 大陸；10. 孕育；11. 相稱；12. 造成平等；13. 奉獻；14. 供神用。

格資堡戰場指定作為國殤而死的官兵墳地。十一月十九日，莊嚴和感人的禮儀奉獻於墓前。愛德華挨活來脫，那時候是優美的演說家，發出長篇有意義的演說詞。衆人盼望大總統也發表一篇合式的長篇辭令。他在適當的時候站起來從他帽子裏抽出半張寫着他要說的備忘筆錄的寫字紙。這篇演詞是簡賅的：——

“八十七年以前，我們的祖宗在這塊大陸上造成一個新國家，孕育着自由，和奉獻到一切人民造成平等的地位。

“如今我們正從事於內戰，試驗國家或這樣定義的國家能否忍受下去。我們在戰事的廣場上相遇。我們已經來指定一塊地土作為獻身救國的人之最後歸宿地。我們這樣做總之是應該的。

“但是在較大的意義上講起來，我們不能專致——不能奉獻——這塊地土。在這裏戰鬥的，活着的和已死的勇士已經專供神用了這塊地土，遠在我們微弱可憐的力量所能增減者之

men, living and dead, who struggled here, have consecrated it far above our poor power to add or detract. The world will little note nor long remember what we say here, but it can never forget what they did here. It is for us, the living, rather, to be dedicated here to the unfinished work which they who fought here have thus far so nobly advanced. It is rather for us to be here dedicated to the great task remaining before us,—that from these honored dead we take increased devotion to that cause for which they gave the last full measure of devotion,—that we here highly resolve that these dead shall not have died in vain; that this nation, under God, shall have a new birth of freedom; and that government of the people<sup>1</sup>, by the people<sup>2</sup>, for the people<sup>3</sup>, shall not perish<sup>4</sup> from the earth.”

That was all. The shortness of the speech caused people to think but little of it at the time. The *brilliant effort*<sup>5</sup> of Edward Everett, the orator, was believed to be the event of the day.

“Lincoln’s address was a great disappointment” said Mr. Seward.

Mr. Lincoln himself *regretted*<sup>6</sup> that he had not given more time to it. “I tell you it *won’t scour*<sup>7</sup>,” he said to a friend. “It is a *flat failure*<sup>8</sup>. The people are disappointed.”

But little by little it began to *dawn*<sup>9</sup> upon the minds of men of all classes that the little speech was one of the noblest orations delivered in modern time. The long and *learned discourse*<sup>10</sup> of Edward Everett is now but little thought of; nobody reads it, nobody praises it. But Lincoln’s three-minute speech has taken *rank*<sup>11</sup> among the

1. 民有； 2. 民治； 3. 民享； 4. 滅亡； 5. 動人力量； 6. 懊悔； 7. will not scour 不會洗刷； 8. 全部失敗； 9. 方知； 10. 濫博的演講； 11. 品位。

上。世界上對於我們在這裏說的話不大注意，但是對於他們在這裏所做的事是永不會忘的。我們還是到這裏來指定一種現在留在我們面前的偉大工作，——從這些可敬的已死者身上我們以格外的注意加於他們悉力以赴的工作，——我們在此地應痛加決定使這些已死者不是死而無益；這個國家，在上帝下面的，應有自由的新生；而爲民所有，爲民所治，爲民所享的政府纔不致絕滅於地球。”

那是全詞演詞。演詞的簡短使人民在那時候不十分注意。演說家愛德華挨活來脫的動人力量認爲一天中的重要節目。

“林肯的演說詞是一個大失望，”修華先生說。

林肯先生自己懊悔他沒有用更多的時間於這次演說。他告訴一個朋友說，“我告訴你它不會洗刷了，它是全部失敗，民衆失望了。”

但是逐漸地各階級人民方始明白這篇短辭令在現時是最高貴的演說詞之一。愛德華挨活來脫長而深奧的演講到現在祇有極少人想到它；沒有人讀它，沒有人讚美它。但是林肯的三分鐘演詞已列入世界名著之林；它被人誦讀而頌揚着，它被人讀了再讀而思考着，在英語通行的無論何處，如果其餘在美



*classics*<sup>1</sup> of the world; it is read and admired, it is *reread*<sup>2</sup> and pondered upon, wherever the English language is known. If all else in *prose*<sup>3</sup> that has been written or spoken in America should be forgotten, Lincoln's address at Gettysburg would still be remembered.

### XVII. RENOMINATED

The war still *dragged*<sup>4</sup> slowly along. The Confederacy was near the end of its *resources*<sup>5</sup>. Every day the cause of the seceding states became more hopeless; every day the distress and *destitution*<sup>6</sup> of the Southern people increased.

1864 It was plain that unless some sort of help should come from outside, the South must sooner or later submit. The time was near at hand for another presidential election. The people of the North were still by no means united. If a new President—one pledged to make peace at any cost—could be elected, the South might still have hope. And so, *in the face of*<sup>7</sup> every discouragement, in the face of defeat, of an exhausted treasury, of an *impoverished*<sup>8</sup> country, the Confederate armies still boldly kept the field.

It was known that President Lincoln wished to show every possible *leniency*<sup>9</sup> to the men of the South. Other persons might cherish bitter hatred toward the foes of the Union, but he had no such feeling. Other men desired to punish in the sternest manner, as rebels and traitors, all those who had taken up arms against the government; but his *sole wish*<sup>10</sup> was to restore the Union without causing unnecessary distress, without doing *ought*<sup>11</sup> for revenge. He went so far as to issue a proclamation *granting*<sup>12</sup>

1. 文學名著； 2. 再讀； 3. 散文； 4. 拖延； 5. 資源； 6. 窘乏； 7. 表面  
上顯著； 8. 貧乏的； 9. 寬恕； 10. 唯一願望； 11. 允諾，准許； 12. 任何。

利堅寫的或說的散文會被人忘記，林肯在格資堡的演說還是被記着的。

## 十七 重行推選

戰事依舊慢慢地拖長着。同盟軍資源將近完結了。獨立各州一天天更加絕望；每一天南部人民的痛苦和窘乏增加。這是顯然的除非從外面來幾種幫助，南部人遲早會屈服的。另一次的總統選舉時期近了。北部的人民依舊無法團結。如果新總統——堅立在任何條件之下講和的人——能夠選出，南部依舊可以有希望。因此，雖以垂盡的庫藏，窘乏的國家，顯現一切失望，顯現失敗，同盟軍依舊保持戰場。

人都知道林肯大總統，願意表示各種可能的寬恕於南部人。別人可以懷抱劇烈憤恨於聯邦的敵人，但是他沒有這種感覺。別人意想以最嚴厲的態度去懲罰，如叛徒和奸細，一切武裝反抗政府的人們；但是他的唯一的願望是重建聯邦而不使發生不必要的痛苦，不作任何復仇的舉動。他走到這樣遠的一

*amnesty*<sup>1</sup> to all men of the South, except certain officers and leaders, who would take a simple oath to support the Constitution and the Union. He went even farther, and urged the passage of a law providing that slaveholders should receive pay for their slaves.

He practiced the true Christian principle. To him all men were his brothers. If some had *erred*<sup>2</sup>, the greater was the pity; he cherished no ill-will toward them; he knew no such word as *revenge*.

As we have already learned, however, there were two classes of men in the North who were never satisfied. One was *composed of*<sup>3</sup> that extreme type of Abolitionists who, from opposing slavery, had come to hate the South with unreasoning bitterness. The other was composed of men who wanted peace even though the Union should be destroyed. Mr. Lincoln's kindness toward the South was *misconstrued*<sup>4</sup>; and his *suggestion*<sup>5</sup> that the slaves should be paid for raised a *storm of indignation*<sup>6</sup> even among men who had supported him in all other *measures*<sup>7</sup>. Emerson wrote:—

"Pay *ransom*<sup>8</sup> to the owner,  
Ay, fill it up to the *brim*<sup>9</sup>!  
Who is the owner? The slave is owner,  
And ever was. Pay him."

Certain Republican politicians who wanted a more *vigorous prosecution*<sup>10</sup> of the war, started a movement to prevent Mr. Lincoln's being renominated for the presidency. They said that his policy had been "*imbecile*<sup>11</sup> and *vacillating*<sup>12</sup>," and that a stronger man was needed at the *helm*<sup>13</sup>.

---

1. 恩赦； 2. 犯罪； 3. 組成； 4. 誤會； 5. 意見； 6. 一陣憤慨； 7. 議案；  
8. 贖身金； 9. 口邊； 10. 猛力進行； 11. 懦怯的； 12. 意志不堅的； 13. 樞機。

步像發表佈告准許恩赦南部所有人民，除了某幾個官員和領袖，他們須宣誓贊助憲法和聯邦。他走到還要遠的一步，力勸通過法律規定蓄奴者應爲了他們的奴隸收受償金。

他實行真正的基督教條。對於他人人都是兄弟。如果有人犯了罪，憐憫的心越發厲害；他不懷抱惡意向他們；他不解所謂報仇的字義。

但是如我們早已知道的，北部有兩種人他們永不滿意的。一種人包括主張廢止蓄奴制者的極端派，他們反對蓄奴，以無理由殘酷態度憎恨南部人。另一種人包括主張講和，雖聯邦破壞亦所不惜的人。林肯先生對南部的好感受誤會了。他的主張奴隸應當給與償付的建議雖在向來擁護他的其他議案的人中間也引起公憤。阿美生寫道：——

“償付贖金於奴主，  
暖，斟滿一杯！  
誰是奴主？奴隸就是奴主，  
永遠是的。付給他。”

某幾個希望戰事的更激烈進行的共和黨政治家，發動阻止林肯被重選爲總統的運動。他們說，他的政策是“優柔寡斷，”而需要更強有力的人執掌中樞。好連斯格里連用書面和口頭反對他。溫特而斐立潑宣言林肯的重行當選意思是要聯

Horace Greeley wrote and spoke against him. Wendell Phillips declared that the *reelection*<sup>1</sup> of Lincoln would mean the downfall of the Union, or something worse. General Grant, who had proved himself to be the ablest of all the Union generals in the field, was spoken of as a good man for the presidency.

"If the people think," said Mr. Lincoln, "that General Grant can end the rebellion sooner by being in this place, I shall be very glad to get out of it."

But General Grant would have nothing to do with those dissatisfied people, and declared that Lincoln must be reelected.

A few of the *radicals*<sup>2</sup> finally got together and *nominated*<sup>3</sup> General John Charles Frémont as their candidate for the presidency. When Mr. Lincoln heard of it, and was told that the *convention*<sup>4</sup> was very small, he took up his Bible and read from the First Book of Samuel, "And every one that was in distress, and every one that was in debt, and every one that was discontented, gathered themselves unto him; and he became a captain over them; and there were with him about four hundred men."

In June a national convention of Union men, composed largely of Republicans, but partly also of patriotic Democrats, met in Baltimore and nominated Abraham Lincoln for reelection to the high office which he had filled so long.

Andrew Johnson of Tennessee was nominated for the *vice presidency*<sup>5</sup>. He was a Southern man, having been born in a slave state. He had been a slaveholder. But he had always been a stern defender of the Union and a fierce enemy of *secession*<sup>6</sup>. He had won great confidence

---

1. 重選; 2. 急進黨員; 3. 推舉; 4. 會議; 5. 副總統; 6. 獨立運動。

邦的崩墜，或再壞的意思。格倫特將軍，他證明為戰場上聯邦將領最能幹的一員，稱為大總統資格的適當人物。

林肯說，如果民衆以為格倫特將軍處我的位置能夠早些救平叛亂，我將要很高興地讓出來。

但是格倫特將軍對於那些不滿意的民衆不聞不問，并宣言林肯必須重行當選。

少數急進黨員後來聚攏來推選約翰卻而司佛蘭蒙將軍為總統候選人。林肯聽見了這事，又知道這個集會是很小的，他拿起他的聖經從薩摩爾首卷讀起，“各個受痛苦的人，各個負責的人，各個不滿足的人，聚到他面前來；他成為他們中的首領；在他下面約有四百人。”

六月中聯邦的全國大會，包括大部份共和黨員，也有一部份愛國的民主黨員，在包鐵摩聚會，推舉亞伯拉罕林肯預備重行當選他已經在任這樣長久的高位。

田納西的安及羅約翰生被推為副總統候選人。他是一個南部人，生在蓄奴州裏面。他曾經是奴隸享有者。但是他激烈的擁護聯邦者和獨立運動的勁敵。他取得偉大信仰做他本州

as the military governor of his own state; and his nomination secured the support of many "War Democrats," especially in the border states.

### XVIII. UNION OR DISUNION?

A national convention of Democrats met in Chicago late in the summer, and nominated General George B. McClellan for the presidency. This convention represented only those members of the party who were opposed to the *continuance*<sup>1</sup> of the war; for the so-called War Democrats were for the most part in favor of the re-election of President Lincoln, and would therefore vote with the Union party. "After four years of failure to restore the Union by war," said the members of this convention, "immediate efforts should be made for a *cessation of hostilities*<sup>2</sup>, with a view to an *ultimate*<sup>3</sup> convention of the states, or other practicable means, to the end that peace may be restored on the basis of the *federal*<sup>4</sup> Union of the states."

President Lincoln pursued steadfastly the course which his rare good judgment and his conscience told him was the best for the country. Many persons proposed plans for bringing the war to an end, and every one believed himself to be wiser than the President. But Jefferson Davis declared that no terms of peace would be considered that did not recognize the independence of the South. "The North was mad and blind," he said; "it would not let us govern ourselves; and so the war came; and now it must go on till the last man of this *generation*<sup>5</sup> falls in his *tracks*<sup>6</sup>, and his children seize his musket and

1. 連續; 2. 中止敵對; 3. 最後的; 4. 中央政府的; 5. 一代; 6. 足跡。

的督軍；他的當選得到許多“主戰民主黨員”的擁護，尤其在邊區諸州。

## 十八 團結呢，還是分裂？

夏季民主黨員的全國大會在芝加哥召集，推舉喬治麥克來倫當候選總統的地位。這個大會祇代表反對戰事延長的黨員；稱為主戰派的民主黨員大概贊助林肯大總統重行當選，所以要投聯合黨的票。會衆說，作戰四年未達聯邦重建的目的，自當取斷然力量中止敵對行爲，意在以最後的各州大會，或其他方法完成之，以重建和平於中央政府聯邦基礎之上。

林肯大總統堅決從事於他的罕有的果斷卓識所認爲最有益於國家的步驟。許多人提出結束戰爭的方法，各認自己比大總統爲明智。但是極勿生大衛宣言如果不承認南部獨立，和平條件無所用其考慮。他說，“北部是瘋狂和盲目的；它不讓我們治理我們自己；於是戰爭發生了；戰事將延長下去一直到這一代的最後一人倒了，他的子孫接續上去拿着他的鎗上戰場，



fight our battles, unless you acknowledge our right to *self-government*<sup>1</sup>. We are not fighting for slavery, we are fighting for independence; and that, or *extermination*<sup>2</sup>, we will have.’

“We accepted this war for an object, a worthy object,” said President Lincoln, “and the war will end when that object is attained. Under God, I hope it never will end until that time. Speaking of the present *campaign*<sup>3</sup>, General Grant is reported to have said, ‘I am going through on this line if it takes all summer.’ This war has taken three years; it was begun or accepted upon the line of restoring the national authority over the whole national *domain*<sup>4</sup>, and for the American people, as far as my knowledge *enables*<sup>5</sup> me to speak, I say we are going through on this line if it takes three years more.”

### XIX. ELECTED AGAIN

The last weary summer of the war passed slowly enough. Unmoved by the clamors of his enemies, *undisturbed*<sup>6</sup> by their thousand *adverse criticisms*<sup>7</sup>, the lone 1864 *pilot*<sup>8</sup> of the ship of state stood steadfastly by the helm, confidently hoping that the storm was near its end.

“I see the President almost every day,” wrote Walt Whitman. “He never sleeps at the White House during the hot season, but has *quarters*<sup>9</sup> at a healthy *location*<sup>10</sup>, some three miles north of the city, the Soldier’s Home, a United States military establishment. I saw him this morning about 8.30, coming in to business, riding on Vermont Avenue, near I Street.

“He always has a company of twenty-five or thirty”

---

1. 自治制； 2. 滅絕； 3. 戰役； 4. 領土； 5. 使能； 6. 未受阻止； 7. 敵對的論調； 8. 把舵者； 9. 寓宿； 10. 所在。

除非你們承認我們的自主權才罷休。我們不是爲蓄奴制而戰，我們爲獨立而戰；我們終必得獨立，否則以死繼之。”

林肯大總統說，“我們爲一種目標，一種有價值的目標，而應戰，戰爭將結束於此目標達到以後。在上帝鑒臨之下，我希望這戰爭不會結束，到那個目的達到爲止。照目前的戰事形勢講，格倫特將軍報告說，‘我正在打下去如果戰事須費整個的夏季。’此次戰爭已及三年；爲重建全國和美利堅人民之統一而開始而應戰，依我的見解所及，我指陳我們將繼續從事戰場如果戰事須再延長三年。”

## 十九 再當選

戰事最後的疲憊的夏季過得夠慢了。不爲敵人喧囂所動，不爲敵對的評論所搖，國政的指揮牢握於中樞，深信暴風雨卽將結束。華爾脫揮脫門寫着，“我差不多每天看見大總統，盛夏中他總不在白宮睡覺，而寓於健身的區域，城北三英里，殘廢兵院，美利堅的軍事建築。我今天早晨八點三十分看見他辦公，乘騎過浮蒙脫路，近一號街。

*cavalry*<sup>1</sup>, with *sabers*<sup>2</sup> drawn, and held upright over their shoulders. The party makes no great show in *uniforms*<sup>3</sup> or horses. Mr. Lincoln, on the *saddle*<sup>4</sup>, generally rides a *good-sized*<sup>5</sup>, *easy-going*<sup>6</sup> gray horse, is dressed in plain black, somewhat rusty and dusty, wears a black *stiff*<sup>7</sup> hat, and looks as ordinary in *attire*<sup>8</sup>, *etc.*<sup>9</sup>, as the commonest man. A *lieutenant*<sup>10</sup>, with yellow *straps*<sup>11</sup>, rides at his left, and following behind, two by two, come the cavalrymen in their *yellow-striped jackets*<sup>12</sup>.

“They are generally going at a slow *trot*<sup>13</sup>, as that is the pace set them by the one they wait upon. The sabers and *accouterments clank*<sup>14</sup>, and the entirely *unornamental cortège*<sup>15</sup>, as it trots toward Lafayette Square, arouses no sensation, only some curious stranger stops and gazes. I see very plainly Abraham Lincoln’s dark brown face, with the deepest lines, the eyes, *etc.*, always to me with a *latent sadness*<sup>16</sup> in the expression. . . .

“Earlier in the summer I occasionally saw the President and his wife, toward the latter part of the afternoon, out in a *barouche*<sup>17</sup>, on a pleasure ride through the city. Mrs. Lincoln was dressed in complete black, with a long *craps veil*<sup>18</sup>. The *equi-page*<sup>19</sup> of the plainest kind, only two horses, and they nothing extra.

“They passed me once very close, and I saw the President in the face fully, as they were moving slow, and his look, though *abstracted*<sup>20</sup>, happened to be directed steadily in my eye. He bowed and smiled, but far beneath his

---

1. 騎兵隊； 2. 軍刀； 3. 制服； 4. 鞍； 5. 形式美觀； 6. 滿瀟的； 7. 硬的； 8. 服飾； 9. 等等，是 *et cetera* 的縮寫； 10. 副官； 11. 肩章； 12. 黃邊短衫； 13. 跑步； 14. 軍具鏗鏘聲； 15. 樸素的從者； 16. 隱憂； 17. 四輪車； 18. 縐紗面幕； 19. 馬車； 20. 心不在焉的。

“他常有二十五個或三十個騎兵隊隨着，一個個拖着軍刀，筆直舉在肩上。這隊兵在制服和乘騎方面沒有顯明的標識。林肯先生，跨在鞍上，平常騎一匹，樣子好看，馴良的灰色馬，穿着樸素的黑衣，略沾塵污，戴一頂黑而硬的帽，穿着平常的裝束，諸如此類，如最平凡的人。一個副官，佩着黃的肩章，跨騎在左，後面跟着一對對的黃邊短服的騎士。

“他們平常用慢慢的跑步走着，好似使他們侍候一個人的足步。佩刀和軍器的鏗鏘聲，全然樸素的從者，馳向辣斐德駐屯所，不起震駭，祇有幾個好奇的旅客駐足而觀。我很清楚地看見亞伯拉罕林肯的深褐色的臉，帶着深刻的皺紋，一雙眼睛等等，我看起來，常有一種隱憂在容貌之間。

“夏季中我早已時時看見大總統和他的夫人，將近薄暮，駕四輪車款款經城市。林肯夫人衣全黑之服，戴着長的絨紗面幕。簡單的馬車，祇有二匹馬，他們此外沒有別的了。

“他們有一次很近的走過我身旁，我看見大總統臉的全部，他的視線，雖然是心不在焉的，恰巧直接觸到我的眼裏。他點頭微笑，但是遠在他的笑容之下我注意好我所暗指的容顏。

smile I noticed well the expression I have *alluded*<sup>1</sup> to. None of the artists or pictures have caught the *subtle*<sup>2</sup> and indirect expression of this man's face. One of the great painters of two or three centuries ago is needed."

The election came in November. Of the states that voted on that day Abraham Lincoln carried every one but three. Of the electoral votes he received 212, while only 21 were cast for McClellan. There was no longer any doubt as to how the President was *regarded*<sup>3</sup> by the country *at large*<sup>4</sup>. His enemies and *detractors*<sup>5</sup> were much weaker than they had supposed themselves to be. What could they do now but keep silent, and permit the man of the people to pursue his own course to the end.

## XX. "LET US STRIVE ON TO FINISH THE WORK"

The end was surely drawing *nigh*<sup>6</sup>. Nearly the whole of the South was under the control of the Union forces. General Sherman, at the head of a victorious army, was marching to the sea through Georgia. Charleston was taken, and the American flag was again floating over Fort Sumter. In Tennessee, the Confederate army under General Hood was routed and almost destroyed. In Virginia, General Grant was besieging Petersburg and threatening Richmond, the capital of the Confederacy. General Robert E. Lee, with all that was left of his once splendid army, was making the last *desperate*<sup>7</sup> stand in defense of the Southern cause.

On the 4th of March President Lincoln delivered his second inaugural address. Like his address at Gettysburg,

---

1. 暗指; 2. 敏銳的; 3. 尊敬; 4. 全, 一般; 5. 反對派; 6. 近了; 7. 決死戰。

沒有一個美術家或圖畫家能夠攫取這個人臉上的銳敏的和間接的表情。二三個世紀以前的一個大畫家是需要的。”

十一月選舉期到了。那一天在投票的各州中除了三個以外，亞伯拉罕林肯都獲得一個個的成功。在選舉票中他得到 212 票而祇有 21 張投麥克克來倫的票。如何總統受全國人民的愛戴已不再有什麼疑問了。他的仇敵和反對派的力量比較他們所想像到的弱得多了。他們現在所能的祇有默不作聲，讓民衆所擁護的人自己幹他的工作一直到底。

## 二〇 讓我們努力完成工作

戰事將近結束了。南部幾乎全入聯邦軍統治。休門將軍，統領着勝利軍隊，經喬治亞向海岸出發。卻爾斯登已取得了，美利堅國旗又飄揚於生姆脫砲臺。在田納西，好特將軍指揮下的同盟軍潰敗不成軍。在味吉尼亞，格倫特將軍圍攻彼得堡并威脅同盟政府國都里却蒙。洛勃脫李帶着曾經一度表示英勇的殘軍保衛南部作最後頑抗。

三月四日林肯大總統發表他的第二次就職演詞。像在格

1865 it was very brief, nobly worded, *compact*<sup>1</sup> with thought, full of *tenderness*<sup>2</sup>, breathing the very *gospel*<sup>3</sup> of the *brotherhood*<sup>4</sup> of man. Not a word did it contain of boasting over victories or of rejoicing over the triumph of his cause—much less of *exulting*<sup>5</sup> over the defeat of the South. “It had all the *solemnity*<sup>6</sup> of a father’s last *admonition*<sup>7</sup> and blessing to his children before he lay down to die,” says one who listened to it.

The address will be remembered and repeated in ages to come as among the noblest *utterances*<sup>8</sup> of modern times. You may read it many times, and at each reading you may discover some new beauty or some deep thought worthy of being remembered and pondered upon.

“Fellow countrymen: At this second appearing to take the oath of the presidential office there is less occasion for an extended address than there was at the first. Then a statement, somewhat in detail, of a course to be pursued, seemed fitting and proper. Now, at the *expiration*<sup>9</sup> of four years, during which public declarations have been constantly called forth on every point and *phase*<sup>10</sup> of the great *contest*<sup>11</sup> which still *absorbs the attention*<sup>12</sup> and *engrosses the energies*<sup>13</sup> of the nation, little that is new could be presented.

“The progress of our arms, upon which all else chiefly depends, is as well known to the public as to myself; and it is, I trust, reasonably satisfactory and encouraging to all. With high hope for the future, no *prediction*<sup>14</sup> in

---

1. 使結實； 2. 慈愛； 3. 福音； 4. 同志； 5. 得勝； 6. 莊重，儀式； 7. 勸諭； 8. 言詞； 9. 滿期； 10. 形勢； 11. 鬥爭； 12. 貫注全神； 13. 專注全力； 14. 斷言。

鐵斯堡的演說詞一樣，它很簡短，句語名貴，意義精賅，富於同情心，吐出人類同胞的福音。沒有一句誇耀勝利或慶祝奏凱——多少對南部的戰敗表示得意——的話。“它有一個父親致最後忠告和祝福於他的孩子的莊重在他將死以前，”有一個旁聽的人說。

這演說詞可以在後來的時期中使人牢記和背誦為近代最名貴的。你可以讀好幾遍，每讀一次你可以發現些有記憶和考慮價值的新的優點或奧義。

“同胞們：在這第二次宣誓就任大總統位中，作擴大演說的機會比較第一次為少。於是進行步驟的詳細說明似乎是合適的。現在，正是四年終了的時候，在此時期中常以公開的宣言喚起大眾於仍為集中輿論注意和專致國家力量的大鬭爭之各種現象上，可以陳述的新的話語祇有少數幾句。

“我們軍事的進展，其他一切事業大致依賴着的，像我自己一樣，已為人民所熟悉。我信為能使大眾滿意和鼓舞的。對



regard to it is ventured.

“On the occasion *corresponding*<sup>1</sup> to this, four years ago, all thoughts were anxiously directed to an *impending*<sup>2</sup> civil war. All dreaded it—all sought to *avert*<sup>3</sup> it. While the inaugural address was being delivered from this place, devoted altogether to saving the Union without war, *insurgent agents*<sup>4</sup> were in the city seeking to destroy it without war—seeking to dissolve the Union and divide effects, by *negotiation*<sup>5</sup>.

“Both parties *deprecate*<sup>6</sup> war; but one of them would make war rather than let the nation *survive*<sup>7</sup>; and the other would accept war rather than let it perish. And the war came.

“One eighth of the whole population were colored slaves, not distributed generally over the Union, but localized in the Southern part of it. These slaves constituted a peculiar and powerful *interest*<sup>8</sup>. All knew that this interest was, *somehow*<sup>9</sup>, the cause of the war. To strengthen, *perpetuate*<sup>10</sup>, and extend this interest was the object for which the insurgents would rend the Union, even by war; while the Government claimed no right to do more than to restrict the territorial enlargement of it.

“Neither party expected for the war the *magnitude*<sup>11</sup> or the *duration*<sup>12</sup> which it has already attained. Neither *anticipated*<sup>13</sup> that the cause of the conflict might cease with, or even before, the conflict itself should cease. Each looked for an easier triumph, and a result less *fundamental*<sup>14</sup> and astounding. Both read the same Bible,

1. 符合; 2. 臨頭; 3. 避; 4. 叛黨; 5. 協商; 6. 不贊成; 7. 滅亡;  
8. 集團; 9. 多少; 10. 持久; 11. 程度; 12. 時期; 13. 預料; 14. 主要的。

於前途的偉大希望尚未敢預言。

“與此時相符合的機遇，四年以前，所有的思想都集中於臨頭的內戰。衆人都畏懼它——都設法避免它。當其時就職宣言在這個地方發表，專一於和平救國，叛黨在城中企圖以協議割裂國家，分散實力。

“雙方都反對戰爭；但是一方面寧發動戰爭不惜使國家滅亡；而另一方面寧應戰以免國家滅亡。而戰爭就來了。

“全民的八分之一，是有色的奴隸種，並不普遍分配於全國，但限於它的南部。這些奴隸構成特色而有力的業團。人都知道這種業團多少是戰爭的因素。加強，持久，擴充這一種業團是叛黨不惜舉國家於戰爭以成就它的目的；而在政府則宣言無權不限制其領域的擴展。

“那一方面，都不希望戰事及於現在所已經達到的限度和時期。那一方面都不能預料到戰爭的動機可否與戰爭本身同時或先期停止。每個人尋求容易些的勝利，不主要些和不驚人些的結果。雙方讀同樣的聖經，禱告同一的上帝；每一方懇求

and pray to the same God; and each *invokes*<sup>1</sup> His aid against the other. It may seem strange that any men should dare to ask a just God's assistance in *wringing*<sup>2</sup> their bread from the sweat of other men's faces; but let us judge not, that we be not judged. The prayers of both could not be answered—that of neither has been answered fully. The Almighty has His own purposes. 'Woe'<sup>3</sup> unto the world because of *offenses*<sup>4</sup>! for it must needs be that offenses come; but woe to that man by whom the offense *cometh*<sup>5</sup>!

"If we shall suppose that American slavery is one of those offenses which, in the providence of God, must needs come, but which, having continued through His appointed time, He now wills to remove, and that He gives to both North and South this terrible war as the woe due to those by whom the offense came, shall we *discern*<sup>6</sup> therein any departure from those *divine*<sup>7</sup> *attributes*<sup>8</sup> which the believers in a living God always *ascribe*<sup>9</sup> to Him?"

"Fondly do we hope—*ferrently*<sup>10</sup> do we pray—that this mighty *scourge*<sup>11</sup> of war may speedily pass away. Yet, if God wills that it continue until all the wealth piled by the bondman's two hundred and fifty years of *unrequited*<sup>12</sup> toil shall be *sunk*<sup>13</sup>, and until every drop of blood drawn with the *lash*<sup>14</sup> shall be paid by another drawn with the sword, as was said three thousand years ago, so still it must be said, "The judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether."

"With *malice*<sup>15</sup> toward none; with *charity*<sup>16</sup> for all; with

---

1. 懇求；2. 絞取；3. 禍；4. 罪；5. 來臨；6. 辨別；7. 神的；8. 品性；9. 歸於；10. 熱誠；11. 災；12. 未受報償；13. 淹滅；14. 鞭；15. 惡意；16. 仁慈。

他援助自己反對另一方。這似乎是奇異的，倘使任何人求上帝幫助他從別人臉上流的汗中絞取麵包；我們不要判斷別人，如果我們不受人判斷。雙方的祈禱不能受到答復——那一方面都不能受到滿意的答復。萬能的上帝有他自己的目的。‘災禍跟着罪惡到世上！因為罪惡來時他是必須的，但是災禍加於犯罪的人！’

“如果我們假定美利堅蓄奴制是一種罪惡，天意教它來的，但是經過他指定的時期，他現在願意除去了，他以可怕的戰爭給予南北部人作為犯罪者應受的災禍，信奉上帝的人以一切歸諸於神，神所創造的局面，我們要不要在其中辨別出來？

“我們親切地希望——我們熱誠地禱告——戰爭的重大災難可以加速地過去。然而，如果上帝願意它繼續下去一直等到奴隸的二百五十年來未受報償的勞力所積累的財富淪滅，又一直等到用鞭撻抽出來的血，報之以另外一種用刀劍的抽，如我們三千年前所說的，現在還要說着，‘主的判斷都是真實而正當的。’

“不要用惡意對待任何人；用仁慈對待一切的人；以堅定

firmness in the right; as God gives us to see the right, let us strive on to finish the work we are in; to bind up the nation's wounds; to care for him who shall have borne the battle, and for his widow, and his orphan<sup>1</sup>—to do all which may *achieve and cherish*<sup>2</sup> a just and lasting peace among ourselves, and with all nations."

No other inaugural address was ever so brief as this; but it will endure in the hearts and memories of the people long after all others are forgotten. "America never had another President who found such words in the depth of his heart."

## XXI. IN RICHMOND

On the 3d of April General Grant entered Petersburg, which had been *abandoned*<sup>3</sup> by the Confederates, and at about the same time General Lee, with his broken and discouraged army, marched out of Richmond. The President, who had been waiting for some time at City Point, hastened to join General Grant and with him walked through the deserted streets of Petersburg. On the following morning he *embarked*<sup>4</sup> on a government *gunboat*<sup>5</sup>, and, with no companion but his son Tad, went up to Richmond, of which General Weitzel had just taken possession.

Silently and without any triumphal display he entered the fallen capital of the Confederacy. The city was full of confusion; angry and *drunken*<sup>6</sup> men were filling the air with threats and *curses*<sup>7</sup>; houses were burning; the negroes, turned loose upon the world, were wild with their

1. 孤兒; 2. 造成和懷抱; 3. 放棄; 4. 登船; 5. 兵船; 6. 酒醉; 7. 仇恨。

行之於正義，如上帝給予我們看見的正義，讓我們努力完成我們已在進行的工作；裹住我們民族的傷痕；照顧支持戰事的人，和他的寡婦，他的孤兒——凡可以在我人中和對各民族造成公平持久的和平之一切，我們應當要做的。”

沒有別的就職宣言曾經有像這樣簡要的，但是它將要在人類的心懷和追憶中持久下去一直在其他的文字爲人忘記以後。“美利堅從來沒有別的總統，他的心坎深處找得出這種字句。”

## 二一 在里却蒙

四月三日格倫脫將軍進同盟軍放棄的彼得堡，在差不多相同的時候，李將軍，帶領着他殘敗和頹喪的軍隊，開出里却蒙。大總統，正在包因脫城等待了多少時候，急行與格倫脫將軍會合，同着他走過彼得堡淒涼的街道。第二天他登上政府的兵船，祇帶着他的兒子塔特做伴當，到里却蒙，它是惠實爾將軍剛奪獲的地方。

靜悄悄地而沒有任何勝利表示之下他走進這個同盟軍的已陷落的都城。這城滿佈紊亂，憤怒酒醉的人，使空氣充滿威

*new-found*<sup>1</sup> freedom. Yet the President without one thought for his own safety walked through the streets



in Richmond

*unattended*<sup>2</sup>. The day was warm, and his great mind was filled with many conflicting emotions.<sup>3</sup> He was “*perplexed*<sup>4</sup> and suffering.” In one hand he carried his hat with which he was trying to fan himself. The *perspiration*<sup>5</sup> rose in drops upon his heated, *careworn*<sup>6</sup> face. In his eyes was that old-time, far-away expression, as though he

were seeing *visions*<sup>7</sup> of another world.

But, as he walked, the fact soon became known and was repeated among the blacks that the tall, homely stranger was “President Linkum.” Their enthusiasm at seeing him knew no bounds. They crowded around him, they followed him with blessings. Hats and handkerchiefs were tossed into the air; the young danced and shouted, and the old wept tears of joy. Cries of “Glory! “*Hallelujah*<sup>8</sup>!” were heard on every hand.

One old *Aunty*<sup>9</sup> had a sick white child in her arms, who was alarmed at the *surrounding riot*<sup>10</sup>, and was crying

1. 新得的; 2. 不留意地; 3. 情緒, 感動; 4. 迷惑; 5. 汗; 6. 勞瘁的;  
7. 景色; 8. 讚美上帝; 9. 年長之黑婦; 10. 四圍的騷動。

脅和仇恨；房屋正延燒着；黑人，放鬆了束縛在世界上，新得了自由而野性難馴。但是大總統，一些不顧及於他本人的安全，不留神地走過街道。天氣正暖，他的偉大的腦筋裝滿了戰爭的感觸。他是“迷惑而苦累了。”他一雙手裏拿着帽子來搨自己。汗珠在他的受熱而勞瘁的臉上淌着。在他的眼眶中還是帶着舊時的遠視的表情，好像他正看到另一個世界的景色。

但是，他走過去的時候，事實被黑人羣中知道和重述着就是這個高高而質樸的來賓就是“林肯姆大總統。”看到他以後他們的熱誠不顧一切束縛了。他們繞着他，他們以祝禱跟隨他。帽子和手巾揮蕩於空中；年輕的跳舞歡呼，年老的流愉悅的淚。“光榮！感謝上帝！”的喊聲在各方面聽見着。

一個年老的黑婦人抱着一個有病的白種孩子，他爲周圍的騷動所驚，哭着要回家；但是良善的黑婦人設法使這孩子望望大總統，她也害怕着不敢看，她把孩子的頭轉到那個方向，



to go home; but the good *negress*<sup>1</sup> kept trying to get the child to gaze at the President, which she was afraid to do, and she would try to turn the child's head in that direction, and would turn around herself, in order to accomplish the same object. "See *yeah*<sup>2</sup>, honey," she would *urge*<sup>3</sup>, "look at de Savior, an' you'll git well. Touch the *hem*<sup>4</sup> of his garment, an' yo' pain'll be done gone."

Another black woman, crazed with delight, could do nothing but jump up and down, clapping her hands and shouting, "Bless de Lord! Bless de Lord! Bless de Lord!"

On every side young and old were springing into the air, *spinning*<sup>5</sup> around in circles, *knocking*<sup>6</sup> their heads together, shouting in each other's ears:—

"God bress Massa Linkum!"

"He's de Messiah, suah!"

"Oh, dis am de judgment day!"

"I'se on de mount of rejoicin'!"

"Come, Lord, I'se ready to go!"

"I see de *chariot*<sup>7</sup> of fire!"

"My *tribulations*<sup>8</sup> all done gone!"

"*Jerusalem*<sup>9</sup>, my happy home!"

"Dere'll be no more sighin' dar!"

"May de good Lord bress you, President Linkum!"

The President, *embarrassed*<sup>10</sup> and painfully *disconcerted*<sup>11</sup>, bowed silently to his humble friends and moved slowly on. But soon the street became so *packed*<sup>12</sup> with the wild multitude that a body of soldiers was sent to clear the

1. 黑婦; 2. 喊聲; 3. 強逼; 4. 衣邊; 5. 拉長; 6. 碰撞; 7. 二輪馬車, 昔戰爭凱旋時所用; 8. 災難; 9. 耶路撒冷; 10. 攪擾; 11. 困擾; 12. 擁擠。

要轉到鄰近她這邊來，完成同樣的目的。她強迫着道，“你看，甜蜜的，看這個救主，你將病好了。碰碰他的大腿的邊，你的痛苦就去了。”

另一個黑婦人，歡喜如狂，做不出別的祇跳上跳下，拍手歡呼，“祝福主！祝福主！祝福主！”

在每一邊年輕的和年老的都跳躍到空中，拉着圈子轉，頭碰頭，喊到各人的耳朵裏：——

“上帝保佑媽薩林肯！”

“他是邁西亞！”

“噢，今天是判斷的日子！”

“我見到歡樂的月份！”

“來，主，我準備去！”

“我看見火的二輪馬車！”

“我的災難都去了！”

“耶路撒冷，我的快樂的家！”

“再沒有嘆息的日子了！”

“上帝可否保佑你，林肯大總統！”

大總統，受窘和被痛苦地困擾着，默然向他的卑賤的朋友們點首。但是不久街道上聚集着大批軍隊派來清道。總統被護

way. The President was *escorted*<sup>1</sup> to the house in which General Weitzel had his *headquarters*<sup>2</sup>. He did not know, or if he knew he took no thought of the fact, that it was the very house which Jefferson Davis had occupied as President of the Southern Confederacy, and from which he had hastily fled only two days before. *Overcome with the strain*<sup>3</sup> of the last few hours, he *sank into*<sup>4</sup> the first chair that was offered him. It was the chair which the Confederate *chieftain*<sup>5</sup> had used at his writing desk.

## XXII. FRIDAY, THE FOURTEENTH OF APRIL

On the 9th of April, at Appomattox Courthouse, General Lee surrendered to General Grant. The half-starved Confederate soldiers were supplied with rations by their victors, and each officer was permitted to retain his side arms, his *baggage*<sup>6</sup>, and his horse. Three days later the *remnant*<sup>7</sup> of the army which had so long and so bravely *withstood*<sup>8</sup> the superior forces of the Union had *dispersed*<sup>9</sup> in every direction. The terrible war which for four years had *desolated*<sup>10</sup> the country was at an end.

The Union was saved, and Abraham Lincoln's work was done.

The 14th of April was *Good Friday*<sup>11</sup>, the day which the Christian world observes as the *anniversary*<sup>12</sup> of the *crucifixion of the Saviour*<sup>13</sup>. In the afternoon the President, feeling relieved in a measure from the great burden which he had borne so long, went driving with Mrs. Lincoln. He was in fine spirits, and talked and laughed

---

1. 護送；2. 司令部；3. 爲勞苦力盡；4. 倒在；5. 首領；6. 行李；7. 餘民；8. 抵禦；9. 解散；10. 蹂躪；11. 耶穌受難日；12. 忌日；13. 教主釘十字架之刑。

送到惠賓爾的司令部。他不知道，或者知道而不注意這個事實，它就是極勿生大衛佔作南部同盟政府大總統所居，而從這地方他匆促逃遁祇在兩天以前。爲了前幾小時的勞苦乏力，他倒在給他預備的第一把椅子裏。那是同盟政府首領在他寫字桌旁用的。

## 二二 星期五，四月十四日

四月九日，在阿包麥托克斯法庭，李將軍向格倫特將軍投降。半饑餓的同盟軍兵士由勝利者餉以口糧，每一個軍官准許保存他的腰間佩的武器，他的行李，他的馬。三天以後這麼長久而勇敢地抵抗優勝的聯邦政府軍隊的殘餘軍士分道解散。蹂躪國家四年的可怕的戰爭結束了。

聯邦得救了，而亞伯拉罕林肯的工作已經做成了。

四月十四日是耶穌受難日，基督世界視爲救主受難紀念日。下午，大總統感覺解脫他擔負這麼長久的重任，帶着林肯夫人駕車出門，他精神清爽，以幾年沒有表現過的愉快態度且

with a cheerfulness of manner which he had not shown for years. His wife did not understand it, she grew uneasy. "I have seen you thus only once before," she said *half reproachfully*<sup>1</sup>, "and that was just before our dear Willie died."

That every President Lincoln with his wife and a few friends attended the theater. At a few minutes past ten o'clock an *assassin*<sup>2</sup>, whose name may well be forgotten, entered the *box*<sup>3</sup> in which the *presidential party*<sup>4</sup> sat. All were intent upon the play; and no one saw him enter. He pointed a pistol at the back of the President's head and fired. He leaped down upon the *stage*<sup>5</sup>, shouting: "Sic semper tyrannis! The South is *avenged*<sup>6</sup>!" Then he ran behind the *scenes*<sup>7</sup> and out by the stage door.

The President fell forward. His eyes closed. He neither saw, nor heard, nor felt anything that was taking place. Kind arms carried him to a private house not far away. But there was no hope.

At twenty minutes past seven o'clock the next morning the watchers at his bedside *announced*<sup>8</sup> that he was dead.

The whole nation wept for him. In the South as well as in the North the people bowed themselves in grief. Those who had been his enemies and detractors suddenly began to *realize*<sup>9</sup> how wonderful a man he was—how great his intellect, how tender his heart, how true in all his acts. In every part of the world there was sincere mourning; and in every civilized land *tributes*<sup>10</sup> of sorrow and *appreciation*<sup>11</sup> and love were paid to his memory.

---

1. 半責備地； 2. 刺客； 3. 包廂； 4. 總統同人團； 5. 舞臺； 6. 報仇；  
7. 劇場； 8. 宣告； 9. 覺察； 10. 貢獻； 11. 贊揚。

談且笑。他的夫人不明白，倒覺得不安起來。她半責備地說，“我從前看見你這樣祇有一次，那是剛在我們親愛的惠利死前。”

那個晚上林肯大總統同着他的夫人和幾個朋友在戲園裏觀戲。十點過後幾分鐘，一個刺客，他的名字很可忘記的，走進總統同人坐的包廂。所有的人都注視着戲劇，沒有一個看見他進來。他把手鎗瞄準大總統頭顱後面開放。他跳下去到舞臺上，高呼：“*Sic Semper tyrannis!* 已爲南部人報了仇了。”於是他跑到戲臺後面從劇場門走出。

大總向前跌倒。他的眼睛闔上了。他看不見，聽不見，也覺不出所遇到的任何事件。溫存的臂膀昇他到不遠的私人住宅。但是絕望了。

第二天早晨七點二十分，在他牀前的守護者宣告他已經長逝了。

全國爲他哀泣。在南部同在北部一樣，人民俯首於悲哀中。那些曾爲他的仇敵和毀謗者突然開始承認他是怎樣奇異的一個人——他的智慧多麼偉大，他的心腸多麼仁慈，他的行爲多麼真實。在世界的各處都有真誠的痛悼；在各個文明的地方，哀思的貢獻，及贊揚和親愛都付給於他的紀念。

His body was taken to Springfield, where it rests in a tomb built by the people of the country which he saved from *dismemberment*<sup>1</sup> and ruin. When the *monument*<sup>2</sup> that stands over his tomb was *dedicated*<sup>3</sup>, General Grant spoke truly the conviction of every patriotic heart, "In his death the nation lost its greatest hero; in his death the South lost its most just friend."

### XXIII. ELEGY<sup>4</sup>

Walt Whitman, the "*good gray poet*<sup>5</sup>" who had so often, during the battle summers, watched the President riding through the streets of Washington, has left us the following noble tribute to the Captain who so bravely *steered*<sup>6</sup> the ship of state through the storm and *stress*<sup>7</sup> of civil war:—

"O Captain! my Captain! our fearful trip is done,  
The ship has weather'd every rack, the prize we sought is won,  
The port is near, the bells I hear, the people all *exulting*<sup>8</sup>,  
While follow eyes the steady *keel*<sup>9</sup>, the vessel *grim*<sup>10</sup> and daring;  
    But O heart! heart! heart!  
    O the bleeding drops of red,  
    Where on the deck my Captain lies,  
    Fallen cold and dead.

"O Captain! my Captain! rise up and hear the bells;  
Rise up—for you the flag is flung—for you the *bugle trills*<sup>11</sup>,  
For you *bouquets and ribbon'd wreaths*<sup>12</sup>—for you the shores  
    *a-crowding*<sup>13</sup>,  
For you they call, the swaying mass, their eager faces turning;  
    Here, Captain! dear father!  
    This arm beneath your head!  
    It is some dream—that on the deck,  
    You've fallen cold and dead.

---

1. 分裂; 2. 石碑; 3. 奉題; 4. 輓歌; 5. 良善老詩人; 6. 指導; 7. 壓力;  
8. 歡躍; 9. 船; 10. 猛; 11. 號角奏時頗動聲; 12. 花球綵帶圍繞; 13. 在擁擠。

他的屍體抬到斯潑林斐爾特，在那邊它長眠於他從分裂和紊亂中救出來的國家之人民所建築的墳墓裏面。樹立在他墓前的石碑奉題後，克倫特將軍真實地說出每個愛國的心胸所深信的話，“他的死使國家喪失它的最大的豪傑；他的死使南部喪失它的最公正的友人。”

## 二三 輓歌

華而脫揮脫門，良善的老詩人，他曾常常在戰事的夏季中看着大總統乘騎過華盛頓街道，對於這樣勇敢地執掌國政經過狂風暴雨和內戰壓力的首領，留給我們下面的一首名貴的貢獻：——

“嘎，首領！我的首領！我們的可危的行程達到了，

船在萬難中遞行，我們尋求的勝利得到了，

港岸近了，鐘聲我聽見了，人民歡躍若狂，

堅固的船迎着視線，勇猛的前進；

但是嘎心阿！心阿！心阿！

嘎鮮紅的流血，

那裏躺着我的首領，

冰冷而死的倒着。

“嘎首領！我的首領！起來聽鐘聲：

起來——國旗為你而飄揚着——號角為你而響着，

花球和錦帶為你而圍繞，岸上的人在為你而擁擠着，

揮舞的翠衆，他們為你而呼喊，而他們的急切的臉轉向着；

這裏，首領！親愛的國父！

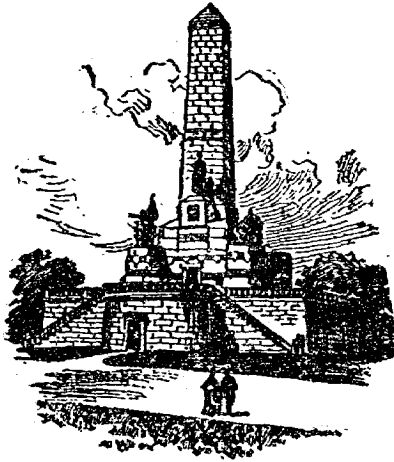
這個臂膊在你的頭顱下面！

它是夢境——在船板上

冰冷而死的你倒着。



"My Captain does not answer, his lips are pale and still,  
 My father does not feel my arm, he has no pulse<sup>1</sup> nor will,  
 The ship is *anchor'd*<sup>2</sup> safe and sound, its *oyage*<sup>3</sup> closed and done,  
 From fearful *trip*<sup>4</sup> the victor ship comes in with object won;  
 Exult, O shores! and ring, O bells!  
 But I, with *mournful tread*<sup>5</sup>,  
 Walk the deck my Captain lies,  
 Fallen cold and dead."



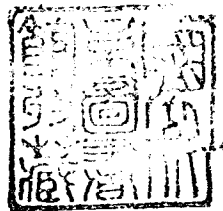
The Lincoln Monument, Springfield

1. 脈搏； 2. 靠岸； 3. 航程； 4. 旅行； 5. 悲悼腳步。

“我的船長不答，他的嘴唇灰白而靜止，  
我的國父覺不出我的肩膀，他沒有脈搏和意志，  
這隻船靠岸平安和堅固，航程結束和完成了，  
從可危的行程中這隻船達目的進來了；

獻罷，嘆海岸！敲，嘆鐘！

但是我，帶着悲悼的脚步，  
走到我的船長躺的甲板上，  
冰冷和死的倒着。”



此書有著作權翻印必究  
中華民國二十九年六月內政部註冊

華英對照  
原文

林 肯 傳

譯 文 註 釋

述 者 徐 植 仁  
註 釋 者 吳 繼 銓  
版 者 春 江 書 局  
行 者 上海法租界呂班路  
三民圖書公司  
滿和坊第四十七號

價  
華英對照紙面精印 【平裝本】 一元六角  
華英對照布脊硬面 【普及本】 兩元四角  
華英對照布面金字 【精裝本】 定價三元  
原文註釋教科適用 【註釋本】 定價一元

外埠酌加運費匯費

民國二十九年六月

再版 民國三十 年 月

*All Rights Reserved*

ABRAHAM LINCOLN

With

Notes and Translations

By

J. R. Shyu

Published by: SAN MIN BOOK Co.

Avenue Dubail, Shanghai

1st ed., June, 1940

2nd ed., ., 1941



編譯者徐植仁

呂班路蒲柏坊  
上海春江書局

定價 \$3.00

三民圖書公司

發行者吳極寰

二十九年六月初版

版權所有翻印必究